



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

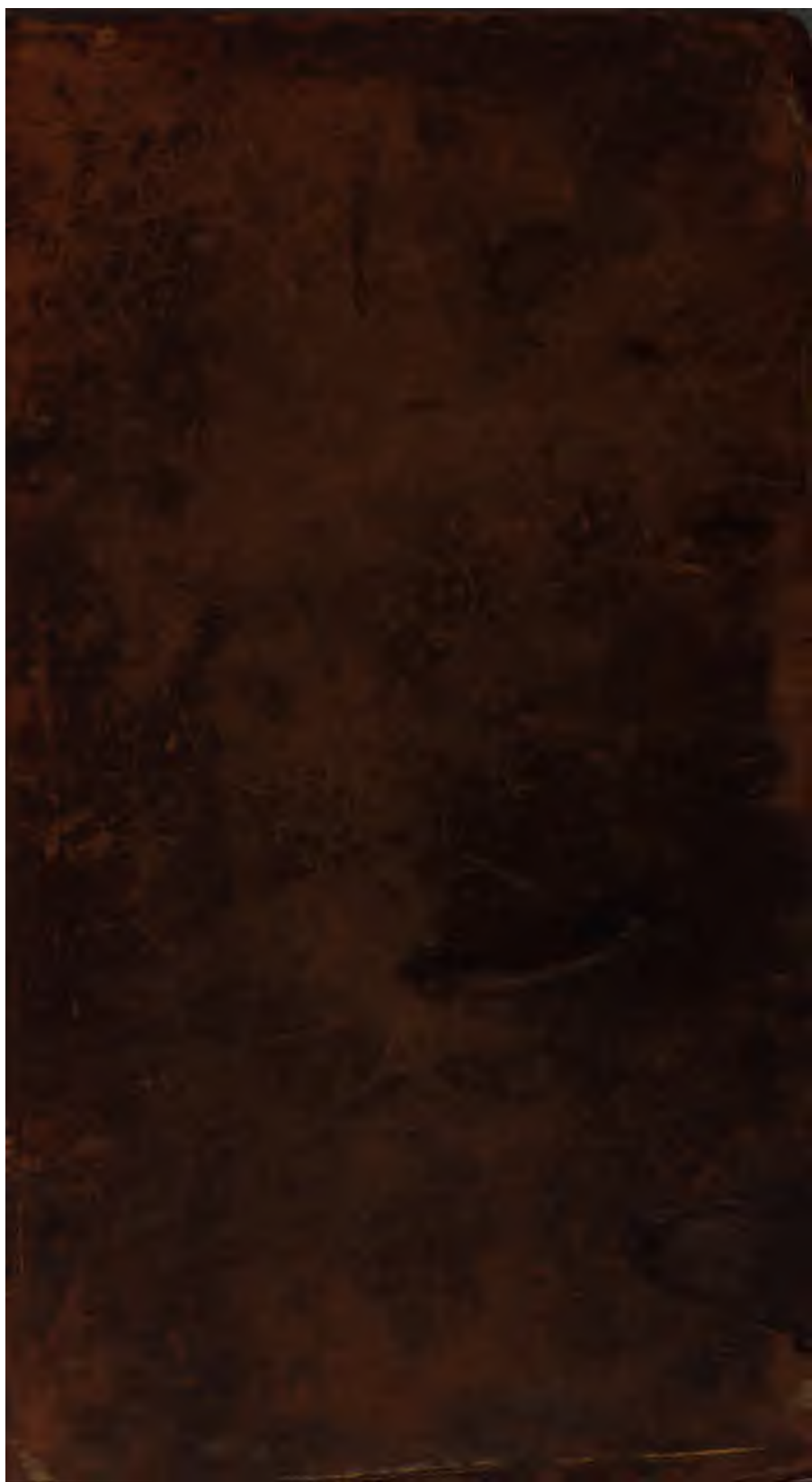
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

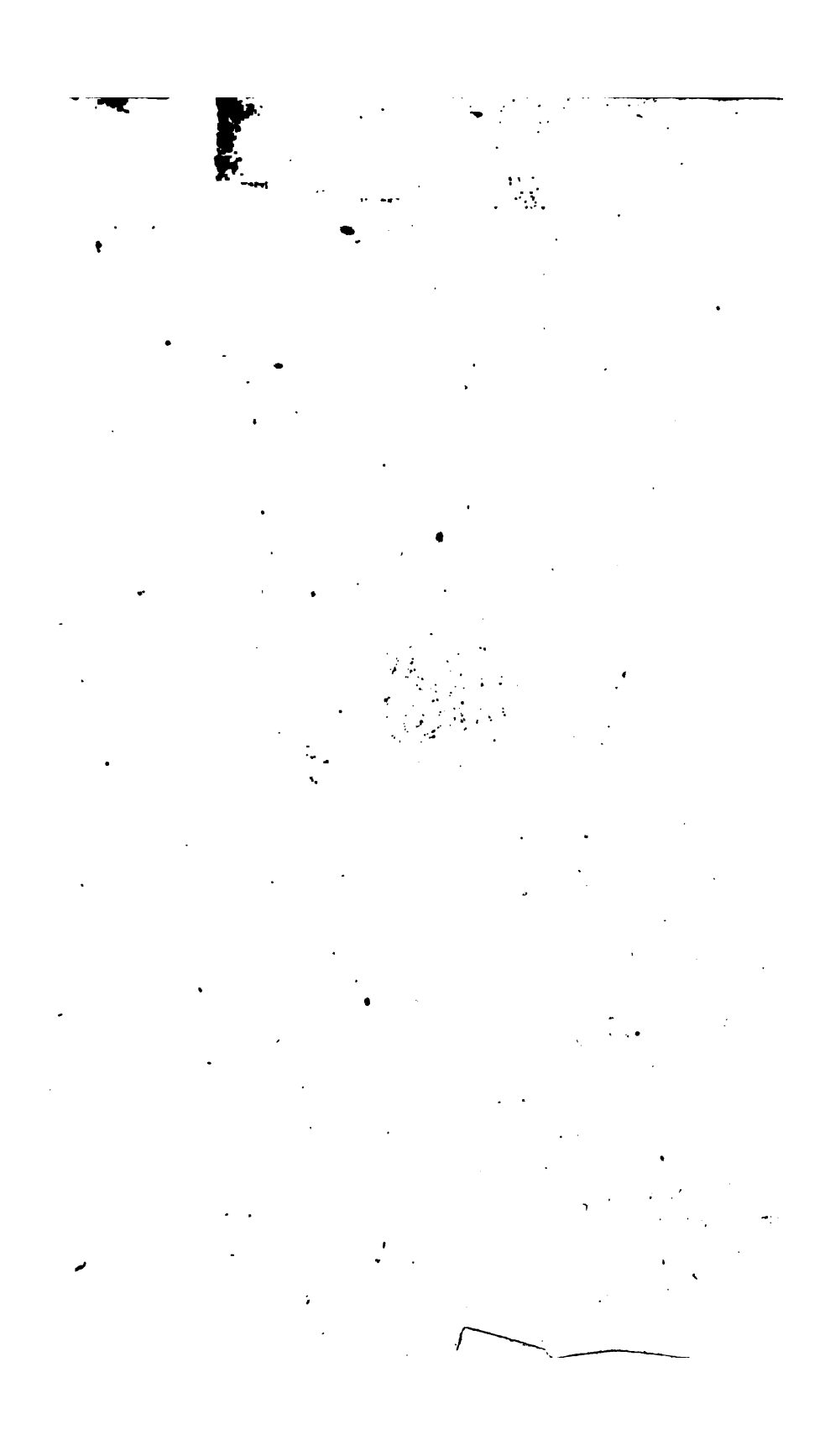
About Google Book Search

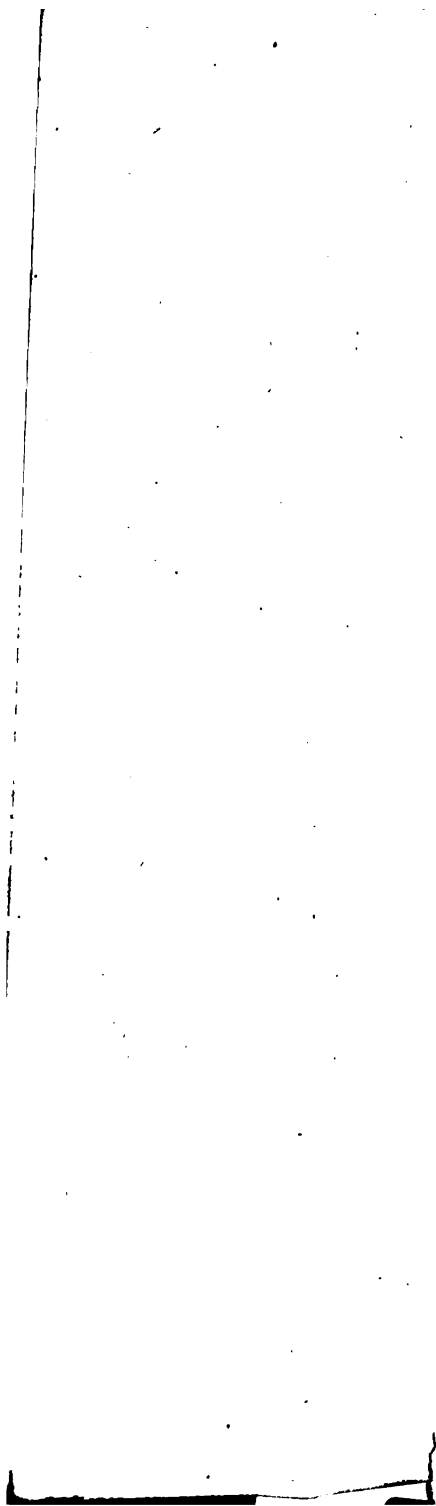
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



Many Curious States







1911



MR. JOHN BUNYAN.

THE
PILGRIM'S PROGRESS:
FROM
This WORLD, to That
Which is to COME:

Delivered under the SIMILITUDE of a

D R E A M.

Wherein is Discovered,

- I. The MANNER of his Setting Out.
- II. His **D**angerous JOURNEY; and,
- III. His **A**rrival at the Desired
COUNTRY.

Compleat in Two PARTS.

Written by JOHN BUNYAN.

I have used SIMILITUDES, Hosea xii. 10.

The TWENTY NINTH EDITION.
Adorned with curious Sculptures, engraven
by J. STURT.

L O N D O N:

Printed for W. JOHNSTON, at the *Golden-Ball*
in *St. Paul's Church-Yard*. M.DCC.LVII.

141. J. 105.



P R E F A C E.

By the EDITOR of this IMPRESSION.

THE many Editions this WORK has gone through, most evidently demonstrate how acceptable it hath been to the World. This Manner of Allegorical Writing, by way of Parable, hath been ever esteemed by Men of the brightest and most refined Genius in all Ages, as the most useful and instructive, because the most engaging and agreeable, not only to Youth, but even those of riper Years, and Men.

The Divine PLATO and SOCRATES, the latter of whom the *Oracle* pronounced the *Wiseſt of Men*, particularly recommended it amongst those of the *Heathens World*. But what need we have Recourse to *Paganism*, when the Inspired Writers delivered down Truths the most Excellent and Important to Mankind under *Shade* and *Figure*? and with good Reason, since downright Truths, in themselves

A 2

naked

iv *The* EDITOR'S *PREFACE.*

naked and plain, would not so strongly have insinuated themselves into the Minds of Men. *Nathan* was very sensible of this, when he denounced the Terrors of an Offended GOD to DAVID, who had received so many signal Favours at his Hands, and had been so ungrateful as to affront him, by committing Two Sins, the most frightful and enormous, *Adultery* and *Murder!* Had the good Prophet reprov'd the Royal Delinquent in open Terms, it probably might have provoked his Resentment and Indignation; for Great Men cannot bear being told of their Errors: He therefore address'd him in a *Parable*, which had its happy Effect, and drew from the weeping and repenting Monarch a thorough Sorrow and Contrition. And a greater than *Nathan*, or all the Prophets of the World, who best knew the Hearts and Affections of Men, spoke to those whom he loved to instruct, after this very Manner.

Mr. *Bunyan* has been very Happy in his Idea of the *Pilgrim*: It is a delicate and familiar Topick, and wonderfully natural to represent, in all its Degrees and Circumstances,

The EDITOR'S PREFACE. v

cumstances, the Life of every Man, who is a *Stranger and Sojourner, and a Pilgrim, as all his Fathers have been*: And he hath so happily executed his Design, that no Performance yet of this Kind hath ever come up to it.

The Story of *Balaam and Jehosaphat*, written by *S. John Damascene*, a Greek Father, hath been sufficiently applauded; and indeed it has its peculiar Beauties and Excellencies. *Dr. Patrick*, Bishop of *Ely*, has wrote a much more voluminous Work under the Title of the PILGRIM, but the Colouring is very faint, and it wants all that simple Plainness which so pathetically strikes the Heart: Such tedious Pieces as they, are wholly void of Life and Spirit, so are they very unapt to stir up those warm Affections and Religious Fires, which the Nature of so eminent and important a Subject essentially requires.

It fares otherwise with our Author, thro' whom there reigns a wonderful Simplicity of Diction, attended with Sentiments the most surprizingly Touching. The *Allegory* is admirably well continued and interwoven, the Transitions easy
and

vi *The* EDITOR'S *PREFACE.*

and natural, and all the Images are lively, strong and nervous; mixed with such a Spirit of true Piety, as hath not its Equal, but in the Holy Scriptures; which our Author here plainly discovers himself, to have thoroughly studied, having almost every where expressed himself in their Style and Language. And consequently, as in them, the Simple and Illiterate learn Improvement and Instruction, and even the Learned finds Matter wherewith to employ his Speculation. And one Thing particularly is observable in this Work, that a Man can scarce take it into his Hand, but he is tempted to go through with it, it so agreeably engages the Attention by its Narration, which in some Places contains such moving Circumstances of Human Misery and Distress, in its plain Garb, as we no where find in the finest Pieces of Art, however set off with all the Pomp and Glitter of accurate Phrase and Rhetoric: And I believe no one in the World, of what Sect, Party or Profession soever he be, can read several of the Episodes especially the *Passing of the River*, in the Conclusion, with-

The EDITOR'S PREFACE. vii

without some sort of Religious Emotion and Affection.

All these Things considered, Is it not wonderful that a plain, simple Man, and unlearned, as Mr. *Bunyan* was, should notwithstanding, have composed so useful and admirable a Treatise? But alas! from the *Mouths of Babes and Sucklings* God is sometimes pleased wonderfully to manifest his Glory; and the Poor and Unlearned gain Heaven, while (to use *S. Augustin's* Expressions) *the Great Ones of this World, with all their mighty Stock and Boast of Learning, sink into Perdition.* So true is it, that the Spirit of God is unconfined: And he ordereth its *Salutary Influence where he listeth.*

The Universal Good, which this incomparable Treatise hath done to Mankind, and the Desire of its farther public Benefit, is the Occasion of this present Edition; for the former Impressions being, on Account of the Poorer Sort, published at so *cheap a Rate*, it was out of their Power to purchase a *Better*; so that a great many worthy Christians, thro' Age or other Infirmities, were unhappily de-

A 4

prived

viii *The* EDITOR'S *PREFACE.*

prived of the Benefit of it, which some Persons of Distinction and Piety duly weighing, in order to remedy that Inconvenience, very generously and highly becoming their Character and good Intentions, proposed that it might be sent into the World, in the handsome Manner it now appears. Great Care has been taken, not only in the Correct Printing, but in the Engraving of the several Copper-Plates, which adorn it; so that it is not in the least doubted, but the Whole will give such entire Satisfaction to the Public in general, as well as to those Worthy Gentlemen in particular who have so handsomely and generously contributed to this beautiful Edition, by their large Subscriptions, as will fully answer their Expectation.

We shall conclude this PREFACE, with a merry but just Observation made by Dr. *Radcliffe*, who used to say, that *Banyan's* PILGRIM was a CHRISTIAN; and *Patrick's* PILGRIM a wretched PEDLAR, *who sold damaged Commodities*; alluding to the Legendary Tales therein related.

LEGE & FRUERE.

THE

THE
Author's A P O L O G Y
FOR HIS
B O O K.

WHEN *at the first I took my Pen in Hand,*
Thus for to write, I did not understand
That I at all should make a little Book
In such a Mode: Nay, I had undertook
To make another; which, when almost done,
Before I was aware, I this begun.

And thus it was: I writing of the Way
And Race of Saints in this our Gospel-Day,
Fell suddenly into an Allegory
About their Journey, and the Way to Glory,
In more than Twenty Things, which I set down;
This done, I Twenty more had in my Crown;
And they again began to multiply,
Like Sparks that from the Coals of Fire do fly.
Nay, then, thought I, if that you breed so fast,
I'll put you by yourselves, lest you at last
Should prove ad infinitum, and eat out
The Book that I already am about.
Well, so I did; but yet I did not think
To shew to all the World my Pen and Ink
In such a Mode; I only thought to make
I knew not what: Nor did I undertake

Thereby

x **The Author's APOLOGY.**

*Thereby to please my Neighbour; no not I,
I did it my ownself to gratify.*

*Neither did I but vacant Seasons spend
In this my Scribble; nor did I intend
But to divert myself in doing this,
From worse Thoughts which make me do amiss.
Thus I set Pen to Paper with Delight,
And quickly had my Thoughts in Black and White.
For having now my Method by the End,
Still as I pull'd, it came; and so I pent'd
It down; until it came at last to be
For Length and Breadth, the Bigness which you see.*

*Well, when I had thus put my Ends together,
I shew'd them others, that I might see whether
They would condemn them, or them justify:
And some said, let them live; some, let them die;
Some said, John, print it; others said, Not so.
Some said it might do Good, others said, No.*

*Now I was in a Streight, and did not see
Which was the best Thing to be done by me;
At last I thought, since ye are thus divided,
I print it with; and so the Case decided.*

*For, thought I, some I see would have it done,
Tho' others in that Channel do not run:
To prove them who advised for the best,
Thus I thought fit to put it to the Test.*

*I farther thought, if now I did deny
Those that would have it, thus to gratify;
I did not know, but hinder them I might
Of that which would to them be great Delight:
For those which were not for its coming forth,
I said to them, Offend you, I am loth:*

Yet

The Author's APOLOGY

xi

*Yet since your Brethren pleased with it be,
Forbear to judge, till you do farther see.*

*If that thou wilt not read, let it alone;
Some love the Meat, some love to pick a Bone.
Yea, that I might them better moderate,
I did too with them thus expostulate.*

*May I not write in such a Style as this?
In such a Method too, and yet not miss
My End, thy Good? Why may it not be done?
Dark Clouds bring Waters, when the bright bring none.
Yea, dark or bright, if they their Silver Drops
Cause to descend, the Earth, by yielding Crops,
Gives Praise to both, and carpeeth not at either,
But treasures up the Fruit they yield together,
Yea, so commixes both, that in their Fruit
None can distinguish this from that, they suit
Her well when hungry: But if she be full,
She spews out both, and makes their Blessing null.*

*You see the Ways the Fisherman doth take
To catch the Fish; what Engines doth he make?
Behold! How he engageth all his Wits;
Also his Snares, Lines, Angles, Hooks and Nets:
Yet Fish there be, that neither Hook nor Line,
Nor Snare, nor Net, nor Engine can make thine:
They must be grop'd for, and be tickled too,
Or they will not be catch'd, what'er you do.*

*How does the Fowler seek to catch the Game
By divers Means? All which one cannot name:
His Gun, his Nets, his Lime-twigs, Light and Bell:
He creeps, he goes, he stands; yea, who can tell
Of all his Postures? Yet, there's none of these
Will make him Master of what Fowls he please.*

Yea,

xii The Author's APOLOGY.

*Yea, he must pipe and whistle, to catch this,
Yet if he does so, that Bird he will miss.
If that a Pearl may in a Toad's Head dwell,
And may be found too in an Oyster-shell;
If Things that promise nothing, do contain
What better is than Gold; who will disdain,
That have an Inking of it, there to look,
That they may find it? Now my little Book,
(Tho' void of all these Paintings that may make
It with this or the other Man to take)
Is not without those Things that do excel
What do in brave, but empty Notions dwell.*

*Well, yet I am not fully satisfy'd,
That this your Book will stand, when soundly try'd.*

*Why, what's the Matter? It is dark: What tho' ?
But it is feigned: What of that? I tro
Some Men by feigned Words, as dark as mine,
Make Truth to spangle, and Rays to shine!
But they want Solidness: Speak, Man, thy Mind:
They drown the Weak, Metaphors make us blind.*

*Solidity, indeed, becomes the Pen
Of him that writeth Things Divine to Men:
But must I needs want Solidness, because
By Metaphors I speak? Were not God's Laws,
His Gospel Laws, in older Times held forth
By Types, Shadows and Metaphors? Yet loth
Will any sober Man be to find Fault
With them, lest he be found for to assault
The biggest Wisdom: No, he rather stoops,
And seeks to find out by what Pins and Loops,
By Calves and Sheep, by Heifers and by Rams,
By Birds and Herbs, and by the Blood of Lambs,*

God.

The Author's APOLOGY.

xiii

*God speaketh to him; and happy is he
That finds the Light and Grace that in them be.*

*Be not too forward therefore to conclude
That I want Solidness; that I am rude:
All Things solid in Shew, not solid be;
All Things in Parables despise not we,
Lest Things most hurtful, lightly we receive;
And Things that good are, of our Souls bereave.*

*My dark and cloudy Words they do but hold
The Truth, as Cabinets inclose the Gold.*

*The Prophets used much by Metaphors
To set forth Truth: Yea, who so considers
Christ, his Apostles too, shall plainly see,
That Truths to this Day in such Mantles be.*

*Am I afraid to say, That Holy Writ
Which for its Style and Phrase puts down all Wit,
Is every where so full of all these Things,
(Dark Figures, Allegories) yet there springs
From that same Book, that Lustre, and those Rays
Of Light, that turn our darkest Nights to Days.*

*Come, let my Carper to his Life now look,
And find there darker Lines than in my Book
He findeth any: Yea, and let him know,
That in his best Things there are worse Lines too.*

*May we but stand before impartial Men,
To his poor One I dare adventure Ten,
That they will take my Meaning in these Lines
Far better than his Lyes in Silver Shrines.
Come, Truth, altho' in Swaddling Clouts, I find,
Informs the Judgment, rectifies the Mind;*

Pleases

xiv **The Author's APOLOGY.**

*Pleases the Understanding, makes the Will
Submit, the Memory too it doth fill
With what doth our Imagination please;
Likewise it tends our Troubles to appease.*

*Sound Words, I know, Timothy is to use,
And Old Wives Fables he is to refuse,
But yet grave Paul him no where did forbid
The Use of Parables, in which lay hid
That Gold, those Pearls, and precious Stones that were
Worth digging for, and that with greatest Care.*

*Let me add one Word more. O Man of God,
Art thou offended? Dost thou with I had
Put forth my Master in another Dress?
Or, that I had in Things been more express?
To those that are my Betters, as is fit,
Three Things let me propound, then I submit.*

1. *I find not that I am deny'd the Use
Of this my Method, so I no Abuse
Put on the Words, Things, Reasons, or be rude
In handling Figure or Similitude,
In Application; but all that I may,
Seek the Advance of Truth this or that Way:
Denied, did I say? Nay, I have Leave,
(Examples too, and that from them that have
God better pleas'd by their Words or Ways,
That any Man that breathes now a-days)
Thus to express my Mind, thus to declare
Things unto thee that excellentest are.*

2. *I find that Men (as high as Trees) will write
Dialogue-wise; yet no Man doth them slight,
For writing so: Indeed if they abuse
Truth, cursed be they, and the Craft they use
To that Intent; but yet let Truth be free
To make her Sallies upon thee and me,*

Which

The Author's APOLOGY:

XV

*Which way it pleases God: For who knows how,
Better than he that taught us first to plow,
To guide our Minds and Pens for his Design?
And he makes base Things ylber in Divins.*

3. *I find that Holy-Writ in many Places
Hath Semblance with this Method, where the Cases
Do call for one Thing to set forth another;
Use it I may then, and yet nothing smother
Truth's golden Beams: Nay, by this Method may
Make it cast forth its Rays as light as Day.*

*And now, before I do put up my Pen,
I'll shew the Profit of my Book, and then
Commit both thee and it unto that Hand
That pulls the strong down, and makes weak ones stand.*

*This Book it chalketh out before thine Eyes
The Man that seeks the Everlasting Prize:
It shews you whence he comes, whither he goes;
What he leaves undone; also what he does;
It also shews you how he runs, and runs,
'Till he unto the Gate of Glory comes.*

*It shews too, who set out for Life amain,
As if the lasting Crown they would obtain:
Here also you may see the Reason why
They lose their Labour, and like Fools do die.*

*This Book will make a Traveller of Thee,
If by its Counsel thou wilt ruled be;
It will direct thee to the Holy Land,
If thou wilt its Directions understand:
Yea, it will make the Slothful active be;
The Blind also delightful Things to see.*

Art

*Art thou for something rare and profitable?
 Wouldest thou see a Truth within a Fable?
 Art thou forgetful? Wouldest thou remember
 From New-Year's-Day to the last of December?
 Then read my Fancies, they will stick like Burs,
 And may be to the Helpleſs, Comforters.*

*This Book is wrote in ſuch a Dialect,
 As may the Minds of liſtleſs Men affect:
 It ſeems a Novelty, and yet contains
 Nothing but ſound and honeſt Goſpel-Strains.*

*Wou'd'ſt thou divert thyſelf from Melancholy?
 Wou'd'ſt thou be pleaſant, yet be far from Folky?
 Wou'd'ſt thou read Riddles and their Explanation?
 Or elſe be drowned in thy Contemplation?
 Doſt thou love picking Meat? Or wou'd'ſt thou ſee,
 A Man i' th' Clouds, and hear him ſpeak to thee?
 Wou'd'ſt thou be in a Dream, and yet not ſleep?
 Or, wou'd'ſt thou in a Moment laugh and weep?
 Or, wou'd'ſt thou loſe thyſelf, and catch no Harm?
 And find thyſelf again without a Charm?
 Wou'd'ſt thou read thyſelf; and read thou know'ſt not what,
 And yet know whether thou art bleſt or not,
 By reading the ſame Lines? O then come hither,
 And lay my Book, thy Head and Heart together.*

JOHN BUNYAN.




T H E

Pilgrim's Progress:

In the SIMILITUDE of a

D R E A M.


 S I walked thro' the Wilderness of this World, I lighted on a certain Place, where was a * * *The Jail* Den, and laid me down in *that* Place to sleep: And as I slept, I dreamed a Dream. I dreamed, and behold, I saw a † *Man clothed with Rags*, † *Isa. 64. 6.* *standing in a certain Place, with his Face* *Luke 14. 33.* *from his own House, a Book in his Hand, and* *Psal. 38. 4.* *a great Burden upon his Back.* I looked, and *Heb. 2. 2.* *Acts 16. 31.* saw him open the Book, and read therein; and as he read, he wept and trembled; and not being able longer to contain, he brake out with a lamentable Cry, saying, † *What † His Outcry.* *Acts 2. 37.* *shall I do?*

B

In

The Pilgrim's Progress.

In this Plight therefore he went Home, and refrained himself as long as he could, that his Wife and Children should not perceive his Distress; but he could not be silent long, because that his Trouble increased: Wherefore at length he brake his Mind to his Wife and Children; and thus he began to talk to them: *O my dear Wife, said he, and you the Children of my Bowels, I your dear Friend am in myself undone, by reason of a Burden that lieth hard upon me: Moreover, I am certainly informed,*

** This World. that * this our City will be burned with Fire from Heaven: In which fearful Overthrow, both myself, with thee my Wife, and you my sweet Babes, shall miserably come to Ruin,*

† He knew no except (the which † yet I see not) some Way of Way of Escape may be found, whereby we may be as yet. delivered.

At this his Relations were sore amazed; not for that they believed that what he had said to them was true, but because they thought some Frenzy Distemper had got into his Head; therefore it drawing towards Night, and they hoping that Sleep might settle his Brains, with all Hast they got him to Bed: But the Night was* as troublesome to him as the Day; wherefore, instead of Sleeping, he spent it in Sighs and Tears. So when the Morning was come, they would know how he did; he told them *worse and worse*; he also set to talking to them again, but they began to be harden'd. * They also

** Carnal Physick for a Sick Soul.*

thought to drive away his Distemper by harsh and surly Carriage to him: Sometimes they would deride, sometimes they would chide, and sometimes they would quite

quite neglect him. Wherefore he began to retire himself to his Chamber, to pray for and pity them; and also to condole his own Misery: He would also walk solitarily in the Fields, sometimes Reading, and sometimes Praying; and thus for some Days he spent his Time.

Now I saw, upon a Time, when he was walking in the Fields, that he was (as he was wont) reading in his Book, and greatly distressed in his Mind; and as he read, he burst out, as he had done before, crying,

* *What shall I do to be saved?*

* Acts 16.

I saw also that he looked *this* Way, and ^{30,} ^{31.} *that* Way, as if he would run; yet he stood still, because (as I perceived) he could not tell which Way to go. I looked then, and saw a Man named *Evangelist* coming to him, and asked, *Wherefore dost thou cry?*

He answer'd, Sir, I perceive by the Book in my Hand, that I am condemned to † die, and after that to come to Judgment; and I find that I am * not willing to do the first, nor † able to do the Second.

† Heb. 9. 27.

* Job. 16. 21.

22.

† Ezek. 22.

14

Then said *Evangelist*, Why not willing to die, since this Life is attended with so many Evils? The Man answer'd, Because, I fear that this Burden that is upon my Back, will sink me lower than the Grave; and I shall fall into * *Tophet*. And, Sir, * if I be not fit to go to Prison, I am not fit to go to Judgment, and from thence to Execution; and the Thoughts of these Things make me cry.

* Isa. 30. 33.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Then said *Evangelist*, If this be thy Condition, Why standest thou still : He answered, Because I know not whither to go. Then he gave him a † *Parchment Roll*, and there was written within, * *Fly from the Wrath to come.*

† *Conviction of the Necessity of Flying.*

* *Matth. 3. 7.*

The Man therefore, read it, and looking upon *Evangelist* very carefully, said, Whither must I fly ? Then said *Evangelist*, pointing with his Finger over a very wide

* *Mat. 7. 13.* Field, Do you see yonder * *Wicket-Gate* ?

14. The Man said, No : Then, said the other, Do you see yonder † *Shining Light* ?

† *Psal. 119.* He said, I think I do. Then said *Evangelist*,

2 *Pet. 1. 19.* Keep that Light in your Eye, and go up directly thereto, so shalt thou see

the Gate ; at which, when thou knockest, it shall be told thee what thou shalt do. So I saw in my Dream that the Man began to run : Now he had not run far from his own Door, but his Wife and Children perceiving it, began to cry after him to return ; * but the Man put his Fingers in his Ears, and ran on crying, *Life ! Life ! Eternal Life !* So he looked not behind him,

* *Luke. 14. 26.*

† but fled towards the Middle of the Plain.

† *Gen. 19. 17.*

* *Jer. 20. 10.* The Neighbours also came out to * see him run, and as he ran some mocked, others threatened, and some cried after him to return ; and among those that did so,

† *They that fly from the Wrath to come are a Gazing stock to the World.*

*Christian no sooner leaves the World, but meets
Evangelist, who lovingly him greets
With Tidings of another : And doth shew
Him how to mount to that from this below.*



Christian leaves the City of Destruction, and meets Evangelist,



so, there were two that were resolved to fetch him back by Force. * The Name of the one was *Obstinate*, and the Name of the other *Pliable*. Now by this Time the Man was got a good Distance from them; but however they were resolved to pursue him, which they did, and in a little Time they overtook him. Then said the Man, Neighbours, *Wherefore are ye come?* They said, To persuade you to go back with us; but he said, That can by no Means be: You dwell (said he) in the City of *Destruction*, (the Place also where I was born) I see it to be so: And dying there, sooner or later, you will sink lower than the Grave, into a Place that burns with Fire and Brimstone: Be content, good Neighbours, and go along with me.

* What, said *Obstinate*, and leave our Friends and our Comforts behind us! * Obstinate.

* Yes, said *Christian* (for that was his Name) because that *All which you shall forsake*, is not * worthy to be compared with a little of that, that I am seeking to enjoy; and if you will go along with me, *and hold it*, you shall fare as I myself; for there where I go, is * enough and to spare; come away, and prove my Words. * Christian.
* Cor. 4. 18.
* Luke 15. 17.

Obst. What are the Things you seek, since you leave all the World to find them?

Cbr. I seek an * *Inheritance incorruptible*, * *undefiled*, and that *fadeth not away*: And it is laid up in Heaven, † and safe there, to † be bestow'd, at the Time appointed, on * 1 Pet. 1. 4.
† Heb. 11. 16.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

them that diligently seek it. Read it so, if you will, in my Book.

Obst. Tush, said *Obstinate*, away with your Book: Will you go back with us, or no?

Chr. No, not I said the other; because I have laid my Hand to the * Plough,

Obst. Come then, Neighbour *Pliable*, let us turn again, and go home without him: There is a Company of these crazy-headed Coxcombs, that when they take a Fancy by the end, are wiser in their own Eyes than seven Men that can render a Reason.

Pli. Then said *Pliable*, don't revile; if what the good *Christian* says is true, the Thing he looks after are better than ours; my Heart inclines to go with my Neighbour.

Obst. What! more Fools still? Be ruled by me, and go back; who knows whither such a Brain-sick Fellow will lead you? Go back, go back and be wise.

Chr. Nay, but do thou † come with thy Neighbour *Pliable*; there are such Things to be had which I spoke of, and many more Glories besides; if you believe not me, read here in this Book, and for the Truth of what is express'd therein, behold

* Heb. 9. 17. all is confirmed by the * Blood of him † 18, 19, 20, 21. that made it.

† *Pliable* consented to go with *Christian*. *Pli.* † Well, Neighbour *Obstinate*, (saith *Pliable*) I begin to come to a Point, I intend to go along with this good Man, and to cast in my Lot with him; but, my good Companion, do you know the Way to this desired Place?

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

7

Cbr. I am directed by a Man whose Name is *Evangelist*, to speed me to a little Gate that is before us, where we shall receive Instructions about the Way.

Pli. Come then, good Neighbour, let us be going; then they went both together.

Obst. And I will go back to my Place, said *Obstinate*: * I will be no Companion * *Obstinate* of such misled fantastical Fellows. goes railing back.

Now I saw in my Dream, that when *Obstinate* was gone back, *Christian* and *Pliable* went † talking over the Plain; and thus they began their Discourse. † Talk between Christian and Pliable.

Cbr. Come, Neighbour *Pliable*, how do you do? I am glad you are persuaded to go along with me; had even *Obstinate* himself but felt what I have felt of the Powers and Terrors of what is yet unseen, he would not thus lightly have given us the Back.

Pli. Come, Neighbour *Christian*, since there are none but us two here, tell me now farther, what the Things are? and how to be enjoyed, whither we are going?

Cbr. I can * better conceive of them * *God's things* with my Mind, than to speak of them with *unspeakable.* my Tongue: But yet since you are desirous to know, I will read of them in my Book.

Pli. And do you think that the Words of your Book are certainly true?

Cbr. Yes verily, for it was made by him that † cannot lye. † Tit. 1. 2.

Pli. Well said, what Things are they?

Cbr. There is an * endless Kingdom to * *Ira.* 45. 17. be inhabited, and everlasting Life to be *John* 10. 27, given us, that we may inhabit that King-^{28, 29} dom for ever.

The Pilgrim's Progress,

Pli. *Well said; and what else?*

Cbr. There are Crowns of Glory to be given us; * and Garments that will make us shine like the Sun in the Firmament of Heaven.

Pli. *This is very pleasant; and what else?*

Cbr. There shall be no more Crying, † nor Sorrow; for he that is Owner of the Place will wipe all Tears from our Eyes.

Pli. *And what Company shall we have there?*

Cbr. There we shall be with *Scrappims*, * and *Cberubims*, Creatures that will dazzle your Eyes to look on them: There also you shall meet with thousands and ten thousands that have gone before us to that

Place; none of them are hurtful, but loving and holy, every one walking in the Sight of God, and standing in the Presence with Acceptance for ever: In a word, there we shall see the † Elders with their golden Crowns: There we shall

see the Holy * Virgins with their golden Harps: There we shall see † Men, that by the World were cut in Pieces, burnt in Flames, eaten of Beasts, drowned in the Seas, for the Love that they bare to the Lord of the Place; all well, and cloathed with * Immortality, as with a Garment.

Pli. *The Hearing of this is enough to ravish one's Heart; but are these Things to be enjoy'd? How shall we get to be Shareers thereof?*

Cbr. The Lord the Governor of the Country, hath recorded that † in this Book, the Substance of which is, if we

be

The Pilgrim's Progress.

9

be truly willing to have it, he will bestow it upon us freely,

Pli. *Well, my good Companion, glad am I to bear of these Things; come on, let us mend our Pace.*

Cbr. I cannot go so fast as I would, by reason of this Burden that is on my Back.

Now I saw in my Dream, that just as they had ended this Talk, they drew nigh to a very * *Miry Slough* that was in the * *The Slough* Midst of the Plain, and they being heed-^{of} *Despond.* less, did both fall suddenly into the Bog. The Name of the Slough was *Despond.* Here therefore they wallow'd for a Time; being grievously bedaubed with Dirt; and *Christian*, because of the Burden that was on his Back, began to sink in the Mire.

Pli. *Then said Pliable, Ab! Neighbour Christian, where are you now?*

Cbr. Truly, said *Christian*, I do not know.

Pli. At this *Pliable* began to be offended, and angrily said to his Fellow, Is this the Happiness you have told me all this while of? If we have such ill Speed at our first setting out, what may we expect 'twixt this and our Journey's End? † May † *It is not enough to be Pliable.* I get out again with my Life, you shall possess the brave Country alone for me.

And with that he gave a desperate Struggle or two, and got out of the Mire on that Side of the Slough which was next his own House; so away he went, and *Christian* saw him no more.

Wherefore *Christian* was left to tumble in the Slough of *Despond* alone; but still he

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* Christian
in Trouble
seeks still to
get farther
from his own
House.

he endeavoured to struggle to that Side of the Slough that was farthest * from his own House, and next to the Wicket-Gate; the which he did, but could not get out because of the Burden that was upon his Back: But I beheld in my Dream, that a Man came to him, whose Name was *Help*, and asked him, *What he did there?*

Chr. Sir, said *Christian*, I was bid to go this Way, by a Man called *Evangelist*, who directed me also to yonder Gate, that I might escape the Wrath to come. And as I was going thither, I fell in here.

Help. But why did you not look for the
† Steps?

† The Pro-
mises.

Chr. Fear followed me so hard, that I fled the next Way, and fell in.

* Help lifts
him out.
† Psalm 40. 2.

Help. Then, said he, * give me thy Hand, so he gave him his Hand, and † he drew him out, and set him upon sound Ground, and bid him go on his Way.

† What makes
the Slough of
Despond.

Then I stepped to him that plucked him out, and said, Sir, wherefore, since over this Place is the Way from the City of *Destruction* to yonder Gate, is it, that this Plat is not mended, that poor Travellers might go thither with more Security? And he said unto me, This *Miry Slough* is such a Place as cannot be mended: It is the Descent whither the † Scum and Filth that attends Conviction for Sin doth continually run, and therefore is it called the *Slough of Despond*; for still as the Sinner is awakened about his lost Condition, there arise in his Soul many Fears and Doubts, and discouraging Apprehensions, which all of them get together,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

ther, and settle in this Place? And this is the Reason of the Badness of this Ground.

It is not the * Pleasure of the King that * Isa. 35, 3, 4. this Place should remain so bad; his Labourers also have, by the Directions of his Majesty's Surveyors, been for above this sixteen hundred Years employ'd about *this Patch* of Ground, if perhaps it might have been mended: Yea, and to my Knowledge, said he, here have been swallowed up at least twenty Thousand Cart Loads; yea, Millions of wholesome Instructions, that have at all Seasons been brought from all Places of the King's Dominions (and they that can tell, say, They are the best Materials to make good Ground of the Place) if so be it might have been mended; but it is the *Slough of Despond* still; and so will be when they have done what they can.

True, there are, by the Direction of the Law-giver, certain good and substantial * Steps, placed even thro' the very Midst * *The Promises of Forgiveness and Acceptance is Life by Faith in Christ.* of this *Slough*; but at such Time as this Place doth much spue out its Filth, as it doth against Change of Weather, these Steps are hardly seen, or if they be, Men, thro' the Dizziness of their Heads, step besides; and then they are *bemired to purpose*, notwithstanding the Steps be there; † 1 Sam. 12. but the Ground is † good when they are once got in at the Gate. * *Pliable is gone home, and is visited by his Neighbours.*

Now I saw in my Dream, that by this Time * *Pliable* was got home to his House. † So his Neighbours came to visit him; † *His Entertainment by them at his coming Return.* and some of them called him *wise Man* for

The Pilgrim's Progress.

coming back ; and some called him *Fool* for hazarding himself with *Christian*; others again did mock at his *Cowardlinefs*; saying, *Surely, since you began to venture, I would not have been so base to have given out for a few Difficulties*: So *Pliable* sat sneaking among them. But at last he got more Confidence, and then they all turned their Tales, and began to deride poor *Christian* behind his Back. And thus much concerning *Pliable*.

Now as *Christian* was walking solitarily by himself, he spied one afar off, crossing over the Field * to meet him, and their Hap was to meet just as they were crossing the Way to each other. The Gentleman's Name that met him, was Mr. *Worldly Wiseman*, he dwelt in the Town of *Carnal Policy*, a very great Town, and also hard-by from whence *Christian* came. This Man then, meeting with *Christian*, and having some Knowledge of him (for *Christian*'s setting forth from the City of *Defftruction*, was much noised abroad, not only in the Town where he dwelt, but also it began to be the *Town-talk* in some other Places) Mr. *Worldly Wiseman* therefore having some Guess of him, by beholding his laborious going, by observing his Sighs and Groans, and the like; began thus to enter into some Talk with *Christian*.

Talk between Mr. Worldly Wiseman and Christian.

World. How now, good Fellow, whither away after this burdened Manner?

Chr. A burdened Manner indeed, as ever, I think, poor Creature had! And whereas you ask me, *Whither away?* I tell you, Sir, I am going to yonder Wicket

The Pilgrims Progress.

ket Gate before me; for there, as I am informed, I shall be put in a Way to be rid of my heavy Burden.

World. *Hast thou a Wife and Children?*

Cbr. Yes; but I am so laden with this Burden, that I cannot take that Pleasure in them as formerly: Methinks I am as if * I had none.

* 1 Cor. 7. 29.

World. *Wilt thou hearken to me if I give thee Counsel?*

Cbr. If it be good I will; for I stand in Need of good Counsel.

World. † *I would advise thee then, that thou with all Speed get thyself rid of thy Burden; for thou wilt never be settled in thy Mind till then: Nor canst thou enjoy the Benefits of the Blessings which God hath bestowed upon thee, till then.*

† Mr. World-ly Wiseman's Counsel to Christian.

Cbr. That is that which I seek for, even to be rid of this heavy Burden; but get it off myself, I cannot: Nor is there a Man in our own Country, that can take it off my Shoulders; therefore am I going this Way, as I told you, that I may be rid of my Burden.

World. *Who bid thee go this Way to be rid of thy Burden?*

Cbr. A Man that appeared to me to be a very great and honourable Person; his Name, as I remember, is *Evangelist*.

World. * *Beshrew him for his Counsel, there is not a more dangerous and troublesome Way in the World, than is that unto which he hath directed thee; and that thou shalt find, if thou wilt be ruled by his Counsel. Thou hast met with something (as I perceive already;) I see the Dirt of the Slough of Despond*

* Mr. World-ly Wiseman's Evangelist's Counsel.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Despond is upon thee; but that Slough is the Beginning of the Sorrows that do attend those that go on in that Way: Hear me, I am older than thou; thou art like to meet with, on the Way which thou goest, Wearisomness, Painfulness, Hunger, Perils, Nakedness, Sword, Lions, Dragons, Darknes, and in a word, Death, and what not? These Things are certainly true, having been confirmed by many Testimonies. And why should a Man so carelessly cast away himself, by giving heed to a Stranger?

Cbr. Why, Sir, this Burden upon my Back is more terrible to me, than are all these Things which you have mentioned:

* *The Frame of the Heart of a young Christian.*

* Nay, methinks I care not what I meet with in my Way, if so be I can also meet with Deliverance from my Burden.

World. How camest thou by the Burden at first?

Cbr. By reading this Book in my Hand.

† *Mr. Worldly Wiseman does not like that Man should be serious in reading the Bible.*

World. † I thought so; and it has happened unto thee as to other weak Men, who, meddling with Things too high for them, do suddenly fall into thy Distractions; which Distractions do not only unman Men (as thine I perceive have done thee) but they run them upon desperate Ventures, to obtain they know not what.

Chr. I know what I would obtain; it is Ease for my heavy Burden.

World. But why wilt thou seek for Ease this Way; seeing so many Dangers attend it? especially, since (hadst thou but Patience to hear me) I could direct thee to the obtaining of what thou desirest, without the Dangers that thou in this Way wilt run

The Pilgrim's Progress.

15

run thyself into. Yea, and the Remedy is at Hand. Besides, I will add, that instead of these Dangers, thou shalt meet with much Safety, Friendship, and Content.

Chr. *Pray Sir, open this Secret to me?*

World. Why in yonder Villiage (the *Mr. Wordly* Villiage is named *Morality*) there dwells a *prefers Morality before the* Gentleman, whose Name is *Legality*, a very *Strait Gate.* judicious Man (and a Man of very good Name) that has Skill to help Men off with such Burdens as thine is, from their Shoulders; yea, to my Knowledge, he hath done a great deal of good this Way: And besides, he hath Skill to cure those that are somewhat crazed in their Wits with their Burden. To him, as I said, thou may'st go, and be helped presently. His House is not quite a Mile from this Place; and if he should not be at home himself, he hath a pretty young Man to his Son, whose Name is *Civility*, that can do it (to speak on) as well as the old Gentleman himself: There, I say, thou may'st be eased of thy Burden, and if thou art not minded to go back to thy former Habitation, as indeed I would not wish thee; thou may'st send for thy Wife and Children to thee to this Villiage, where there are Houses now stand empty, one of which thou may'st have at a reasonable Rate: Provision is there also cheap and good, and that which will make thy Life more happy is, to be sure there thou shalt live by honest Neighbours, in Credit, and good Fashion. * *Christian*

* Now was *Christian* somewhat at a *snared by Mr.* stand; but presently he concluded, If *Wordly* *Wifeman's* this *Words.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

this be true which this Gentleman hath said, my wisest Course is to take his Advice; and with that he thus farther spake.

Cbr. Sir, which is my Way to this honest Man's House?

† *Mount Sinai.*

World. Do you see yonder † high Hill?

Cbr. Yes, very well.

World. By that Hill you must go, and the first House you come at is his.

So *Christian* turned out of his Way, to go to Mr. *Legality's* House for Help: But behold when he was got now hard-by the Hill, it seemed so high, and also that Side of it that was next the Way-Side, did hang so much over, that *Christian* was afraid to venture farther, lest the Hill should fall on his Head; wherefore there he stood still, and knew not what to do. Also his Burden now seemed heavier to him than while he was in his Way. * There

* *Christian* afraid that *Mount Sinai* would fall on his Head.

Exod. 19. 18.
* Ver. 16.

† Heb. 12. 21.

came also Flashes of Fire out of the Hill, that made † *Christian* afraid that he should be burned: Here therefore he sweat and did quake for Fear. And now he began to be sorry that he had taken Mr. *Worldly Wiseman's* Counsel; and with that he saw * *Evangelist* coming to meet him; at the Sight also of whom he began to blush for Shame. So *Evangelist* drew nearer and nearer; and coming up to him, he looked upon him with a severe and dreadful Countenance, and thus began to reason with *Christian*.

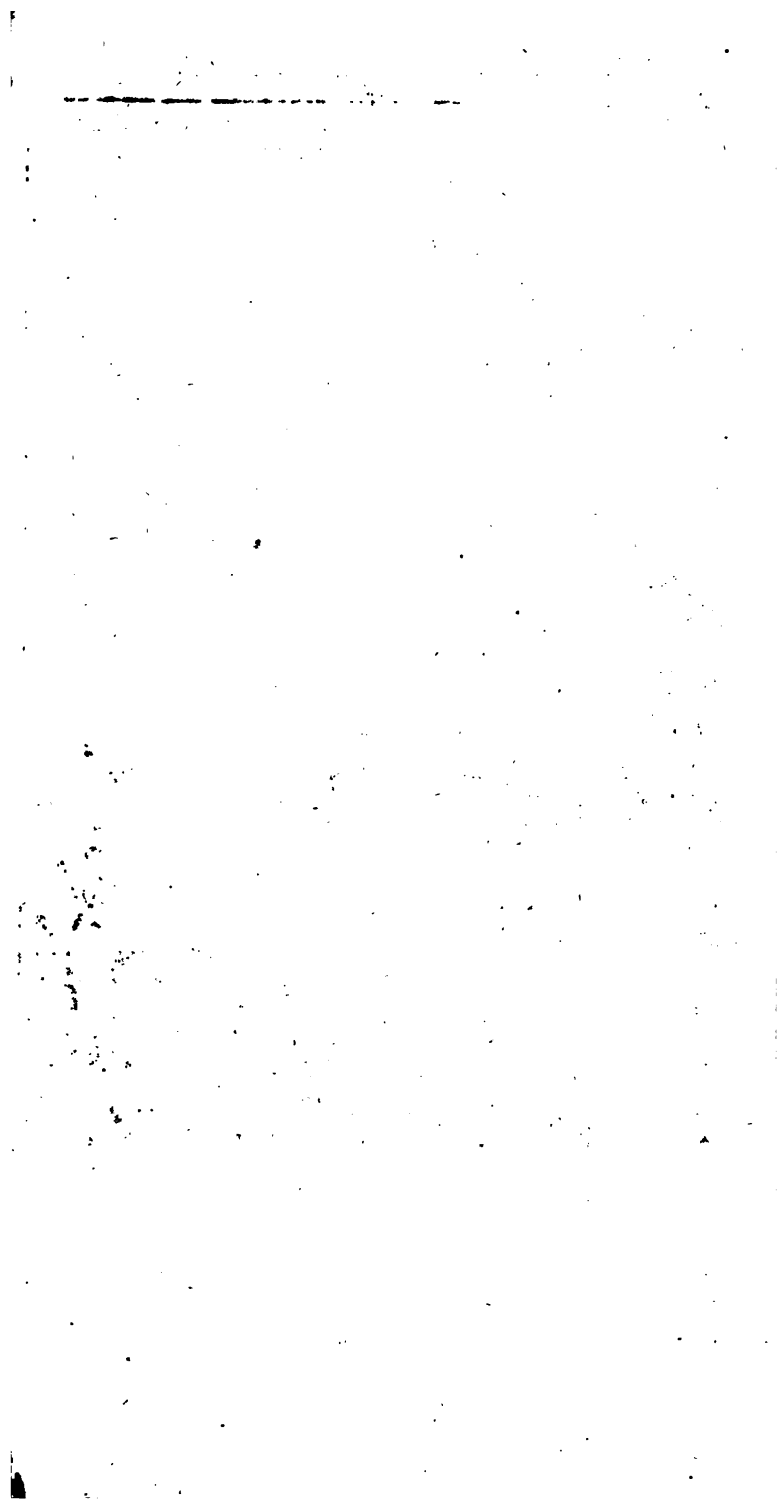
* *Evangelist* findeth *Christian* under *Mount Sinai*, and looketh severely upon him.

† *Evangelist* reasons afresh with *Christian*.

Evan. † What dost thou here, *Christian*? said he: At which Words, *Christian* knew not what to answer; wherefore at present he



Christian lost his way and meets Evangelist a second time.



he stood speechless before him. Then said *Evangelist* farther, Art not thou the Man that I found crying without the Walls of the City of *Destruction*?

Cbr. Yes, dear Sir, I am the Man.

Evan. Did not I direct thee the Way to the little Wicket-Gate?

Cbr. Yes, dear Sir, said *Christian*.

Evan. How is it then that thou art so quickly turned aside? For thou art now out of the Way.

Cbr. I met with a Gentleman so soon as I had got over the *Slough of Despond*, who persuaded me, that I might, in the *Village* before me, find a Man that could take off my Burden.

Evan. What was he?

Cbr. He looked like a Gentleman, and talked much to me, and got me at last to yield; so I came hither: But when I beheld this Hill, and how it hangs over the Way, I suddenly made a Stand, lest it should fall on my Head.

Evan. What said that Gentleman to you?

Cbr. Why, He asked me whither I was going? And I told him.

Evan. And what said he then?

Cbr. He asked me if I had a Family? And I told him: But, said I, I am so loaden with the Burden that is on my Back, that I cannot take Pleasure in them as formerly.

Evan. And what said he then?

Cbr. He bid me with Speed get rid of my Burden; and I told him it was Ease that I sought: And, said I, I am therefore going to yonder Gate, to receive farther Direction how I might get to the Place of

C

Deliver-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Deliverance. So he said that he would shew me a better Way, and short, not so attended with Difficulties, as the Way Sir, that you set me in; which Way, said he, will direct you to a Gentleman's House that has Skill to take off these Burdens: So I believed him, and turned out of *that* Way into *this*, if haply I might be soon eased of my Burden. But when I came to this Place, and beheld Things as they are I stopped for fear (as I said) of Danger. But I now know not what to do.

Evangelist. Then (said *Evangelist*) stand still a little, that I may shew thee the Word of God. So he stood trembling. Then

*Heb. 12. 25. said *Evangelist*, * See that you refuse no him that speaketh; for if they escape not, who refused him that spake on Earth

† *Evangelist* convinces Christian of his Error.
* Chap. 10. 38.

† much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from Heaven. He said moreover, * Now thou shalt live by Faith; but if any Man draws back, my Soul shall have no Pleasure in him. He also did thus apply them: Thou art the Man that art running into this Misery: Thou hast begun to reject the Counsel of the Most High, and to draw back thy Foot from the Way of Peace even almost to the hazarding of thy Perdition.

Then *Christian* fell down at his Feet as dead, crying, *Who is me, for I am undone.*

A.

*When Christians unto Carnal Men give Ear,
Out of their Way they go, and pay for't dear.
For Master Worldly Wiseman can but show
A Saint the Way to Bondage and to We.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

19

At the Sight of which, *Evangelist* caught him by the Right Hand, saying, All manner of Sin and Blasphemies shall be forgiven unto Men; be not faithless, but believing: Then did *Christian* again a little revive, and stood up trembling, as at first, before *Evangelist*:

Then *Evangelist* proceeded, saying; Give more earnest Heed to the Things that I shall tell thee of. I will now shew thee who it was that deluded thee, and who it was also to whom he sent thee. † The Man that met thee, is one *Worldly Wiseman*, and rightly he is so called; partly, * because he savoureth only of the Doctrine of this World; (therefore he always goes to the Town of *Mortality* to Church) and partly, † because he loveth that Doctrine best; for it saveth him from the Cross; and because he is of this Carnal Temper, therefore he seeketh to prevent my Ways, tho' right. * Now there are three Things in this Man's Counsel, that thou must utterly abhor.

† Mr. Worldly Wiseman described by *Evangelist*.

* 1 Joh. 4. 5.

† Col. 6. 12.

* *Evangelist* discovers the Deceit of Mr. Worldly Wiseman.

1. His turning thee out of the Way.
2. His labouring to render the Cross odious to thee.
3. And his setting thy Feet in that Way that leadeth unto the Administration of Death.

First, Thou must abhor his turning thee out of the Way; yea, and thine own consenting thereto; because this is to reject the Counsel of God for the Sake of the Counsel of a *Worldly Wiseman*. The Lord says, † Strive to enter in at the Strait Gate, † Luke 13. 24.

The Pilgrm's Progress.

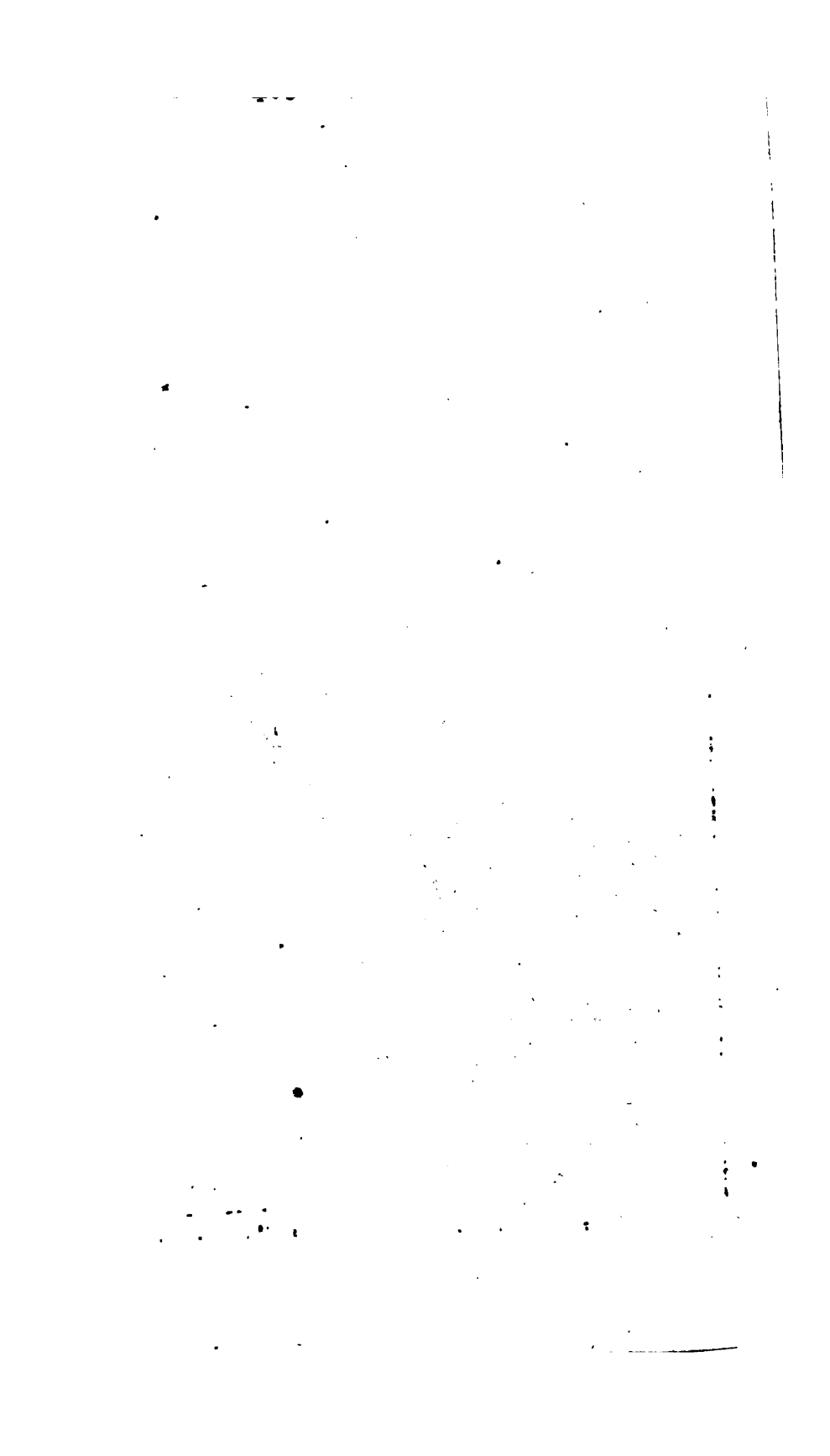
* Mat. 7. 13, the Gate to which I send thee; * for strait is the Gate that leadeth unto Life, and few there be that find it. From this little Wicket-Gate, and from the Way thereto, hath this wicked Man turned thee, to the bringing of thee almost to Destruction: Hate, therefore, his turning thee out of the Way, and abhor thyself for hearkening to him.

Secondly, Thou must abhor his labouring to render the Cross odious unto thee; for thou art to † *prefer it before the Treasures in Egypt*: Besides, the King of Glory hath told thee, * *That he that will save his Life shall lose it*: And, *he that comes after him, and hates not his Father and Mother, and Wife, and Children, and Brethren, and Sisters, yea and his own Life also, he cannot be my Disciple*. I say therefore, for a Man to labour to persuade thee that That shall be thy Death, without which, the Truth hath said, thou can't not have Eternal Life: This Doctrine thou must abhor.

Thirdly, Thou must hate his setting of thy Feet in the Way that leadeth to the Ministration of Death. And for this thou must consider to whom he sent thee, and also how unable that Person was to deliver thee from thy Burden.

He to whom thou wast sent for Ease, being by Name *Legality*, is the Son of the * *Bond-woman* which now is, and is in a Bondage with her Children, and is in a Mystery this Mount † *Sinai*, which thou hast feared will fall on thy Head. Now if she with her Children are in Bondage,
How

* Gal. 4. 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27.
† *The Bond Woman.*





Christiana and her Children enter the Wicket Gate

How canst thou expect by them to be made Free? This *Legality*, therefore, is not able to set thee free from thy Burden. No Man was as yet ever rid of his Burden by him; no, nor ever is like to be: Ye cannot be justified by the Works of the Law; for by the Deeds of the Law no Man living can be rid of his Burden: Therefore Mr. *Worldly Wiseman* is an Alien, and Mr. *Legality* a Cheat: As for his Son *Civility*, notwithstanding his *simpering* Looks, he is but a Hypocrite, and cannot help thee. Believe me, there is nothing in all this Noise, that thou hast heard of these sottish Men, but a Design to beguile thee of thy Salvation, by turning thee from the Way in which I had set thee. After this, *Evangelist* called aloud to the Heavens for Confirmation of what he had said; and with that there came Words and Fire out of the Mountain under which poor *Christian* stood, that made the Hair of his Flesh stand up: The Words were thus pronounced, *As many as are of Gal. 3. 10. the Works of the Law are under the Curse; for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things which are written in the Book of the Law to do them.*

Now *Christian* looked for nothing but Death, and began to cry out lamentably; even cursing the Time in which he met with Mr. *Worldly Wiseman*; still calling himself a thousand Fools for hearkening to his Counsel: He also was greatly ashamed to think that this Gentleman's Arguments, flowing only from the Flesh, should have the Prevalency with him as to cause him to for-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

take the right Way. This done, he applied himself again to *Evangelist* in Words and Sense as follows :

* Christian enquires if he may yet be Happy.

Chr. Sir, * What think you ? Is there Hopes ? May I now go back, and go up to the *Wicket-Gate* ? Shall I not be abandoned for this, and sent back from thence ashamed ? I am sorry I have hearkened to this Man's Counsel ; but may my Sin be forgiven ?

† *Evangelist* comforts him.

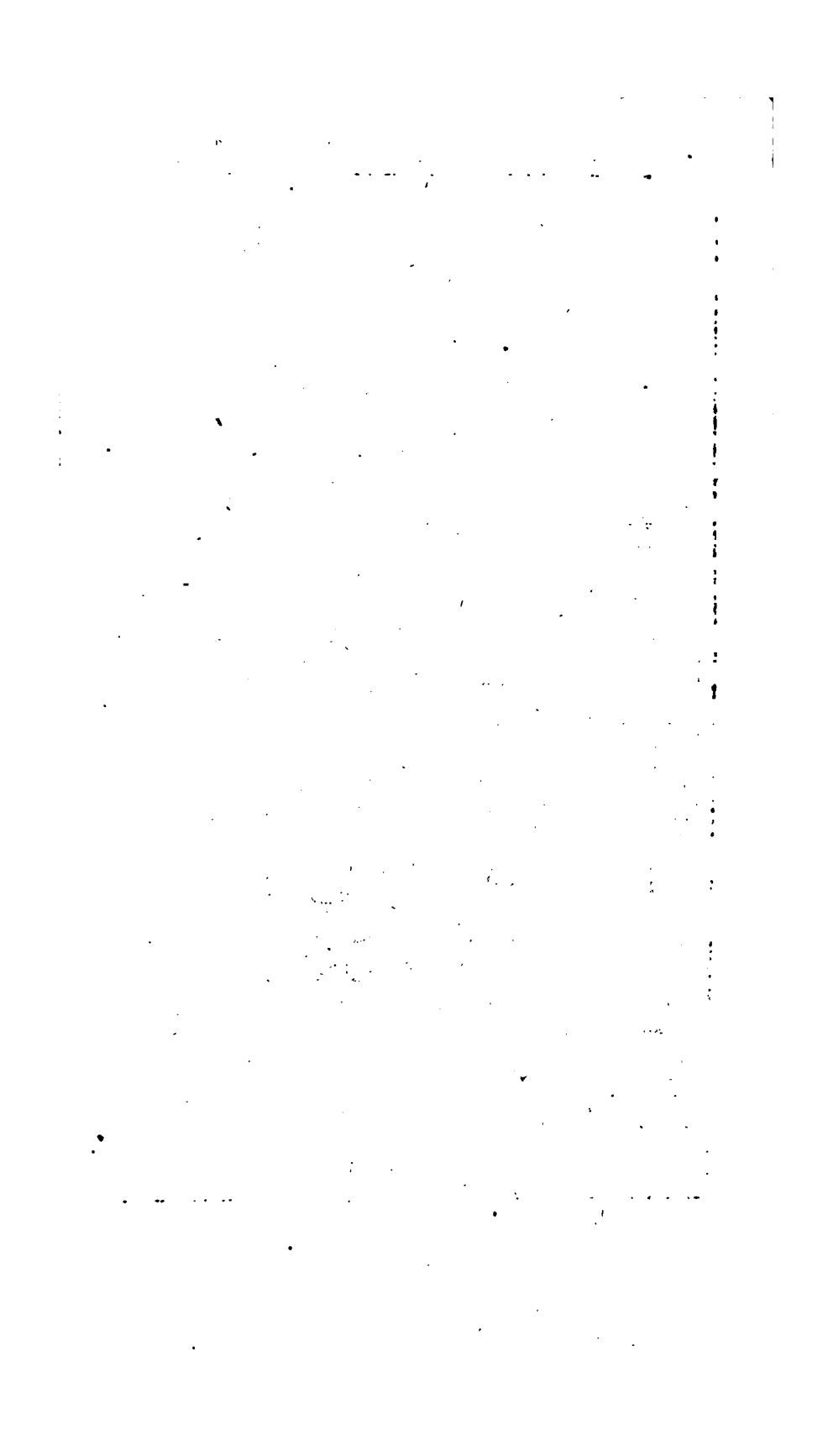
* *Pfalm 2. last Verse.*

Evan. Then said *Evangelist* to him, Thy Sin is very great, for by it thou hast committed two Evils ; thou hast forsaken the Way that is good, to tread in forbidden Paths ; † yet will the Man at the Gate receive thee, for he has *Good will* for Men ; only, said he, take heed that thou turn not aside again, lest thou perish from the Way, when his Wrath is * kindled but a little. Then did *Christian* address himself to go back ; and *Evangelist*, after he had kiss'd him, gave him one Smile, and bid him God speed : So he went on with Haste, neither spake he to any Man by the Way ; nor if any asked him, would he vouchsafe them an Answer. He went like one that was all the While treading on forbidden Ground, and could by no Means think himself safe, till again he was got into the Way which he left to follow Mr. *Worldly Wiseman's* Counsel : So in Proceſs of Time, *Christian* got up to the Gate. Now over the Gate there was

* *Matt. 7. 8.*

written, * *Knock, and it shall be opened unto you.*

He





Christian enters the Wicket Gate .

The Pilgrim's Progress.

23

He knocked therefore more than once
or twice, saying,

*May I now enter here? Will he within
Open to sorry me, though I have been
An undeserving Rebel? Then shall I
Not fail to sing his lasting Praise on high.*

At last there came a grave Person to the
Gate, named *Good-will*, who asked, Who
was there? and whence he came, and what
he would have?

Chr. Here is a poor burdened Sinner. I
come from the City of *Destruction*, but am
going to *Mount Zion*, that I may be de-
livered from the Wrath to come; I would
therefore, Sir, since I am informed that
by this Gate is the Way thither, know if
you are willing to let me in.

Good. * I am willing with all my Heart, * *The Gate*
said he; and with that he opened the *will be opened*
Gate. *to broken-*
hearted Sin-
ners.

So when *Christian* was stepping in, the
other gave him a Pull: Then said *Christian*,
what means that? The other told him, A
little Distance from this Gate, there is
erected a strong Castle, of which † *Belzebub* † *Satan en-*
is the Captain; from thence both he, and *vies those that*
them that are with him, shoot Arrows at *enter the*
those that come up to this Gate, if hap- *Strait Gate.*
py they may die before they can enter
C 4 in.

*He that would enter in, must first without,
Stand knocking at the Gate, nor need he doubt
That is a Knocker, but to enter in,
For God can love him and forgive his Sin.*

† Christian
entered the
Gate with
Joy and Trem-
bling.

* Talk be-
tween Good-
will and
Christian.

Then said *Christian*, † I rejoice and tremble. So when he was got in, the Man of the Gate asked him who directed him thither?

Cbr. Evangelist * bid me come hither and knock, (as I did) and he said, that you, Sir, would tell me what I must do.

Goodwill. An open Door is before thee, and no Man can shut it.

Cbr. Now I began to reap the Benefits of my Hazards.

Goodwill. But how is it that you came alone?

Cbr. Because none of my Neighbours saw their Danger, as I saw mine.

Goodw. Did any of them know of your coming?

Cbr. Yes, my Wife and Children saw me at the first, and called after me to turn again: Also some of my Neighbours stood crying and calling after me to return; but I put my Fingers in my Ears, and so came on my Way.

Goodw. But did none of them follow you to persuade you to go back?

Cbr. Yes, both *Obstinate* and *Pliable*: But when they saw that they could not prevail, *Obstinate* went railing back, but *Pliable* came with me a little Way.

Goodw. But why did he not come through?

Cbr. We indeed came both together until we came to the *Slough of Despond*, into the which we also suddenly fell. And then was my Neighbour *Pliable* discouraged, and would not adventure farther.

ther. * Wherefore, getting out again on ^{* A Man} *that Side* next to his own House, he told ^{may have} me, I should possess the brave Country ^{Company} alone for him: So he went *bis Way*, and ^{when he sets} I came *mine*. He after *Obstinate*, and I to ^{out for Hea-} this Gate. ^{ven, and yet} ^{go thither} ^{alone.}

Goodw. Then said *Goodwill*, Alas, poor Man, is the Coelestial Glory of so small Esteem with him, that he counteth it not worth running the Hazard of a few Difficulties to obtain it?

Cbr. Truly, said *Christian*, I have said the Truth of *Pliable*, and if I should also say all the Truth of myself, it will appear there is † no Difference betwixt him and † ^{Christian} myself. 'Tis true, he went back to his ^{accuseth him-} own House, but I also turned aside to go ^{self before the} in the Way of Death, being persuaded ^{Man at the} thereto by the Carnal Argument of one ^{Gate.} Mr. *Worldly Wiseman*.

Goodwill. Oh! did he light upon you? What, he would have had you fought for Ease at the Hands of Mr. *Legality*; they are both of them very Cheats; but did you take his Counsel?

Cbr. Yes, as far as I durst; I went to find out Mr. *Legality*, until I thought that the Mountain that stands by his House would have fallen upon my Head; wherefore there I was forced to stop.

Goodwill. That Mountain has been the Death of many, and will be the Death of many more: 'Tis well you escaped being dashed in Pieces by it.

Cbr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Chr. Why truly I do not know what had become of me there, had not *Evangelist* happily met me again as I was musing in the Midst of my *Dumps*: But it was God's Mercy, that he came to me again, for else I had never come hither. But now I am come, such a one as I am, more fit indeed for Death by that Mountain, than thus to stand talking with my Lord: But, oh! what a Favour is this to me, that yet I am admitted Entrance here?

* Christian is comforted again.

† John 6. 37.

* Christian directed yet on his Way.

* Christian afraid of losing his Way.

† Mat. 7. 14.

* Christian weary of his Burden.

Goodwill. * We make no Objections against any, notwithstanding all that they have done before they came hither.

† They in no wise are cast out; and therefore, good *Christian*, come a little Way with me, and I will teach thee about the Way thou must go. * Look before thee; dost thou see this narrow Way? *THAT* is the Way thou must go. It was cast up by the Patriarchs, Prophets, Christ and his Apostles, and it is as strait as a Rule can make it: This is the Way thou must go.

Chr. But, said *Christian*, * are there no Turnings nor Windings, by which a Stranger may lose his Way?

Goodwill. Yes, there are many Ways *BUFF* down upon this; and they are crooked and wide: But *thus* thou may'st distinguish the right from the wrong, *the* right only being † strait and narrow.

Then I saw in my Dream, * That *Christian* asked him farther, If he could not help him off with the Burden that was upon his Back? For as yet he had not

not get rid thereof, nor could he by any Means get it off without Help.

He told him, as to thy Burden, be content to bear it, until thou comest to the Place of † Deliverance; for there it will fall from thy Back of itself.

Then *Christian* began to girt up his Loins, and to address himself to his Journey. So the other told him, That by that he was gone some Distance from the Gate, he would come at the House of the *Interpreter*, at whose Door he should knock, and he would shew him excellent Things. Then *Christian* took his Leave of his Friend, and he again bid him God speed.

Then he went on till he came at the House of the * *Interpreter*, where he knocked over and over; at last one came to the Door, and asked, Who was there?

Chr. Sir, here is a Traveller, who was bid by an Acquaintance of the good Man of this House, to call here for my Profit; I would therefore speak with the Master of the House: So he called for the Master of the House; who after a little Time came to *Christian*, and asked him what he would have?

Chr. Sir, said *Christian*, I am a Man that am come from the City of *Destruction*, and am going to the Mount *Zion*; and I was told by the Man that stands at the Gate, at the Head of this Way, that if I called here, you would shew me excellent Things, such as would be a Help to me in my Journey.

Inter.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* He is entertain'd.

† Illumination.

* Christian sees a brave Picture.

† The Fashion of the Picture.

† The Meaning of the Picture.

* Why he shew'd him the Picture first.

Inter. Then said the *Interpreter*, * Come in; I will shew thee that which will be profitable to thee. So he commanded his Man † to light the Candle, and bid *Christian* follow him: So he had him into a private Room, and bid his Man open a Door; the which when he had done, * *Christian* saw the Picture of a very grave Person hang up against the Wall; and this was the Fashion of it, † It had Eyes lifted up to Heaven, the best of Books in his Hand, the Law of Truth was written upon his Lips, the World was behind his Back; it stood as if it pleaded with Men, and a Crown of Gold did hang over its Head.

Cbr. Then said *Christian*, what meaneth this?

Inter. The Man whose Picture this is, * *1 Cor.* 4. 15. is one of a Thousand; he * can beget Children, † *Gal.* 4. 19. † travel in Birth with Children, and nurse them himself when they are born. And whereas thou seest him with his Eyes lift up to Heaven, the best of Books in his Hand, and the Law of Truth written on his Lips; it is to shew thee, that his Work is to know and unfold dark Things to Sinners; even as also thou † seest him stand as if he pleaded with Men; and whereas thou seest the World as cast behind him, and that a Crown hangs over his Head; that is to shew thee, that slighting and despising the Things that are present, for the Love that he hath to his Master's Service, he is sure in the World that comes next, to have Glory for his Reward. Now, said, the *Interpreter*, I have shewed thee this Picture first, * because the Man whose

whose Picture this is, is the only Man whom the Lord of the Place whither thou art going, hath authorized to be thy Guide in all difficult Places thou may'st meet with in the Way : Wherefore take good heed to what I have shewed thee, and bear well in thy Mind what thou hast seen ; left in thy Journey thou meet with some that pretend to lead thee right, but their Way goes down to Death.

Then he took him by the Hand, and led him into a very large *Parlour* that was full of Dust, because never swept ; the which after he had reviewed a little while, the *Interpreter* called for a Man to sweep : Now, when he began to sweep, the Dust began abundantly to fly about, that *Christian* had almost therewith been choaked. Then said the *Interpreter* to a *Damsel* that stood by, bring hither the Water, and sprinkle the Room ; the which when she had done, it was swept and cleansed with Pleasure.

Cbr. Then said Christian, What means this ?

Int. The *Interpreter* answered, This *Parlour* is the Heart of a Man that was never sanctified by the sweet Grace of the Gospel : The *Dust* is his Original Sin, and Inward Corruptions that have defiled the whole Man. He that began to sweep at first is the *Law* ; but she that brought Water, and did sprinkle it, is the *Gospel*. Now whereas thou sawest that as soon as the first began to sweep, the Dust did so fly about, that the Room, by him, could not be cleansed, but that thou wast almost choaked

The Pilgrim's Progress.

choaked therewith; this is to shew thee, that the Law, instead of gleasing the Heart

• Rom. 7. 6. (by its working) from Sin, * doth revive,
 † 1 Cor. 15. put † Strength into, and * increase it in
 56. the Soul, even as it doth discover and forbid it,
 • Rom. 5. 20. for it doth not give Power to subdue it.

Again, as thou sawest the *Damsel* sprinkle the Room with Water, upon which it was cleansed with Pleasure; this is to shew thee, that when the Gospel comes in the sweet and precious Influences thereof to the Heart, then, I say, even as thou sawest the *Damsel* lay the Dust by sprinkling the Floor with Water, so is Sin vanquished and subdued, and the Soul made clean, through the Faith of it, and consequently

† John 15. 3. † fit for the King of Glory to inhabit.
 Ephes 5. 26. I saw, moreover, in my Dream, That
 Acts 15. 9. the *Interpreter* took him by the Hand,
 Rom. 16. 25, and had him into a little Room, where sat
 26. John 15. two little Children, each one in his Chair.
 13.

* He shewed * The Name of the eldest was *Passion*, and
 him *Passion* and the Name of the other *Patience*. *Passion*
 and *Patience*. seemed to be much discontented, but *Pa-*
Passion will *tience* was very quiet. Then *Christian* asked,
have it now. What is the Reason of the Discontent of
Passion? The *Interpreter* answered, the Go-
 vernor of them would have him stay for his
 best Things, 'till the Beginning of the next
 Year; but he will have all now: * But
Patience is willing to wait.

• *Patience*
 for waiting.

† *Passion*
 hath his De-
 fire.

Then I saw that one came to † *Passion* and brought him a Bag of Treasure, and poured it down at his Feet; the which he took up and rejoiced therein, and withal laughed

The Pilgrim's Progress.

31

laughed *Patience* to scorn. But I beheld but a While, and he had *lavish'd all away, * *And quickly lavish'd all away.* and had nothing left him but Rags.

Chr. Then said *Christian* to the *Interpreter*, † Expound this Matter more fully to me. † *The Matter expounded.*

Inter. So he said, These two Lads are Figures; *Passion* of the Men of this World, and *Patience* of the Men of that which is to come: For as here thou seest, *Passion* will have all now, this Year; that is to say, in this World; so are the Men of this World: They must have all their good Things now, the cannot stay till next Year, that is, until the next World, for their Portion of Good. That Proverb, * *A Bird in the Hand is worth two in the Bush*, is of more *The World-ly Man for a* Authority with them, than are all the *Bird in the Hand.* vine Testimonies of the Good of the World to come. But as thou sawest, that he had quickly lavished all away, and had presently left him nothing but Rags; so will it be with all such Men at the End of this World.

Chr. Then said *Christian*, Now I see that *Patience* has the best † Wisdom, and † *Patience had the best* that upon many Accounts. 1. Because he *Wisdom.* stays for the best Things. 2. And also because he will have the Glory of his, when the other has nothing but Rags.

Int. Nay, you may add another, to-wit, the Glory of the *next* World will never wear out; but these are suddenly gone. Therefore *Passion* had not so much Reason to laugh at *Patience*, because he had his good Things first, as *Patience* will have

to

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* *Things that are first must give Place, but Things that are last are lasting.* to laugh at *Passion*, * because he had his best Things *last*; for *first* must give Place to *last*, because *last* must have its Time to come; but *last* gives Place to nothing; for there is not another to succeed: He therefore that hath his Portion *first*, must needs have a Time to spend it; but he that has his Portion *last*, must have it lastingly:

* Luke 16. *Dives had time thou receivedst thy good Things, and likewise Lazarus evil Things; but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.*

Cbr. Then I perceive it is not best to covet Things that are now, but to wait for Things to come.

* Cor. 4. 18. *The first Things are but Temporal.* *Int.* You say Truth: * *For the Things that are seen are Temporal; but the Things that are not seen, are Eternal:* But tho' this be so, yet since Things present, and our fleshly Appetite are such near Neighbours one to another; and again, because Things to come, and Carnal Sense, are such Strangers one to another: Therefore it is, that the first of these so suddenly fall into *Amity*, and that *Distance* is so continually between the second.

Then I saw in my Dream, that the *Interpreter* took *Christian* by the Hand, and led him into a Place where was a Fire burning against a Wall, and one standing by it, always casting much Water upon it, to quench it; yet did the Fire burn higher and hotter.

Then said *Christian*, What means this?
The *Interpreter* answered; This Fire is the Work of Grace that is wrought in the Heart; he that casts Water upon it, to extinguish

tinguish and put it out, is the *Devil*: But in that thou seest the Fire notwithstanding burn higher and hotter, thou shalt also see the Reason of that. So he had him about to the Backside of the Wall, where he saw a Man with a Vessel of Oil in his Hand, of the which he did also continually cast (but secretly) into the Fire.

Then said *Christian*, What means this ?

The *Interpreter* answered, This is *Christ*, who continually with the Oil of his Grace maintains the Work already begun in the Heart: By the Means of which, notwithstanding what the Devil can do, the Souls of his People prove gracious still. Cor. 12. 9.
And in that thou sawest, that the Man stood behind the Wall to maintain the Fire; this is to teach thee, That it is hard for the Tempted to see how this Work of Grace is maintained in the Soul.

I saw also, that the *Interpreter* took him again by the Hand, and lead him into a pleasant Place, where was built a stately Palace, beautiful to behold; at the Sight of which *Christian* was greatly delighted; he saw also upon the Top thereof certain Persons walking, who were cloathed all in Gold.

Then said *Christian*, May we go in thither ?

Then the *Interpreter* took him and led him up toward the Door of the Palace; and behold, at the Door stood a great Company of Men, as desirous to go in, but durst not. There also sat a Man at a little Distance from the Door, at a Table Side with a Book, and his Inkhorn before him, to take the Name of him that
D should

The Pilgrim's Progress.

should enter therein: He saw also, that in the Door-way stood many Men in Armour to keep it, being resolved to do to the Men that would enter, what Hurt and Mischief they could. Now was *Christian* somewhat in Amaze: At last, when every Man started back for fear of the armed Men, *Christian* saw a Man of a very stout Countenance, come up to the Man that sat there to write, saying, * *Set down my Name, Sir*; the which when he had done, he saw the Man draw his Sword, and put an Helmet upon his Head, and rush toward the Door upon the armed Men, who laid upon him with deadly Force: But the Man, not at all discouraged, fell to cutting and hacking most fiercely. So after he had † received, and given many Wounds to those that attempted to keep him out, he cut his Way through them all, and pressed forward into the Palace; at which there was a pleasant Voite heard from those that were within, even of those that walked upon the Top of the Palace, saying,

* *The Valiant Man.*

† Acts 14.
22.

*Come in, come in;
Eternal Glory thou shalt win.*

So he went in, and was clothed with such Garments as they. Then *Christian* smiled, and said, I think verily I know the Meaning of this.

Now, said *Christian*, let me go hence. Nay, stay (said the *Interpreter*) till I have shewed thee a little more, and after that thou shalt go on thy Way. So he took him

him by the Hand again, and led him into a very dark Room, where there sat a Man in an * Iron Cage. * Despair like an Iron Cage.

Now the Man, to look on, seemed very sad; he sat with his Eyes looking down to the Ground, his Hands folded together, and he sighed as if he would break his Heart. Then said *Christian*, What means this? At which the *Interpreter* bid him talk with the Man.

Then said *Christian* to the Man, What art thou? The Man answered, I am what I was not once.

Chr. What wast thou once?

Man. The *Man* said, I was once a fair * and flourishing Professor, both in mine * Luke 8. 13. own Eyes, and also in the Eyes of others: I once was, as I thought, fair for the Cœlestial City, and had then even Joy at the Thoughts that I should get thither.

Chr. Well, but what art thou now?

Man. I am now a Man of *Despair*, and am shut up in it, as in *this* Iron Cage. I cannot get out; O now I cannot.

Chr. But how camest thou in this Condition?

Man. I left off to watch, and be sober; I laid the Reins upon the Neck of my Lusts; I sinned against the Light of the Word, and the Goodness of God: I have grieved the Spirit, and he is gone; I tempted the Devil, and he is come to me; I have provoked God to Anger, and he has left me; I have so hardened my Heart that I cannot repent.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Then said *Christian* to the *Interpreter*, But is there no Hopes for such a Man as this? Ask him, said the *Interpreter*.

Cbr. Then said *Christian*, Is there no Hope, but you must be kept in the Iron Cage of Despair?

Man. No, none at all.

Cbr. Why? The Son of the Blessed is very pitiful.

* Heb. 6. 6. *Man.* I have * crucified him to myself
 † Luke 19. 14. afresh; I have despised his † Person, I have despised his Righteousness, I have counted his Blood an unholy Thing, I have done
 * Heb. 10. * Despite to the Spirit of Grace: There-
 28, 29. fore I shut myself out of all the Promises, and there now remains to me nothing but Threatnings, dreadful Threatnings, fearful Threatnings of certain Judgment and fiery Indignation, which shall devour me as an Adversary.

Cbr. For what did you bring yourself into this Condition?

Man. For the Lusts, Pleasures, and Profits of this World; in the Enjoyment of which, I did then promise myself much Delight: But now every one of those Things also bite me, and gnaw me, like a burning Worm.

Cbr. But canst thou not now repent and turn?

Man. God hath denied me Repentance. His Word gives me no Encouragement to believe; yea, himself hath shut me up in this Iron Cage: Nor can all the Men in the World let me out. O Eternity! Eternity! How shall I grapple with the Misery that I must meet with in Eternity?

Int.

Int. Then said the *Interpreter* to *Christian*, Let this Man's Misery be remembered by thee, and be an everlasting Caution to thee.

Cbr. Well, said *Christian*, this is fearful ! God help me to watch and be sober, and to pray that I may shun the Cause of this Man's Misery. Sir, is it not Time for me to go on my Way now ?

Int. Tarry 'till I shall shew thee one Thing more, and then thou shalt go on thy Way.

So he took *Christian* by the Hand again, and led him into a Chamber, where there was one rising out of Bed ; and as he put on his Raiment, he shook and trembled. Then, said *Christian*, Why doth this Man thus tremble ? The *Interpreter* then bid him to tell *Christian* the Reasons of his so doing : So he began and said, This Night as I was in my Sleep, I dreamed, and behold the Heavens grew exceeding black : Also it thundred and lightned in most fearful wise, that it put me into an Agony. So I looked up in my Dream, and saw the Clouds racked at an unusual Rate ; upon which I heard a great Sound of a Trumpet, and saw also a Man sit upon a Cloud, at-^{1 Cor. 15.} tended with the Thousands of Heaven :^{1 Theff. 4.} They were all in flaming Fire, also the^{Jude 15.} Heavens were in a burning Flame. I heard^{John 5. 28.} then a Voice, saying, Arise ye Dead,^{2 Theff. 1. 8.} and come to Judgment ; and with that the^{Rev. 20. 11,} Rocks rent, the Graves opened, and the^{12, 13, 14.} Dead, that were therein, came forth ; some^{Isa. 26. 21.} of them were exceeding glad, and looked^{Mich. 7. 16,} upward ; and some sought to hide them-^{17.} selves^{Pfalm 5. 1,} 2, 3.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

selves under the Mountains: Then I saw
 the Man that sat upon the Cloud, open the
 Book, and bid the World draw near. Yet
 there was, by reason of a fierce Flame
 which issued out and came before him, a
 convenient Distance betwixt him and them,
 as betwixt the Judge and the Prisoners at
 the Bar. I heard it also proclaimed to
 them that attended on the Man that sat
 on the Cloud, * *Gather together the Tares,*
 † *the Chaff and Stubble, and cast them into the*
 † *burning Lake*; and with that the bottom-
 less Pit opened, just whereabout I stood:
 Out of the Mouth of which there came,
 in an abundant Manner, Smoak, and
 Coals of Fire, with hideous Noises. It
 was also said to the same Persons, † *Gather*
 † *my Wheat into the Garner*. And with
 that I saw many catch'd up * and carried
 away into the Clouds, but I was left be-
 hind. I also sought to hide myself, but I
 could not, for the Man that sat upon the
 Cloud still kept his Eye upon me: My
 Sins also came into my Mind; and my Con-
 science did accuse me on every Side. Up-
 on this I awaked from my Sleep.

Chr. But what was it that made you so afraid of this Sight?

Man. Why, I thought that the Day of Judgment was come, and that I was not ready for it: But this frightened me the most, that the Angels gathered up several, and left me behind; also the Pit of Hell opened her Mouth just where I stood. My Conscience too afflicted me; and, as I thought, the Judge had always his Eye up-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

39

on me, shewing Indignation in his Countenance.

Then said the *Interpreter* to *Christian*,
Hast thou considered all these Things ?

Chr. Yes, and they put me in *Hope* and
Fear.

Int. Well, keep all Things so in thy
Mind, that they may be as a *Goad* in thy
Sides, to prick thee forward in the Way
thou must go. Then *Christian* began to
gird up his Loins, and to address himself
to his Journey. Then said the *Interpreter*,
The *Comforter* be always with thee, good
Christian, to guide thee in the Way that
leads to the City. So *Christian* went on his
Way, saying,

*Here I have seen Things rare and profitable,
Things pleasant, dreadful, Things to make
me stable*

*In what I have begun to take in Hand ;
Then let me think on them, and understand
Wherefore they shew'd me were, and let me be
Thankful, O good Interpreter to thee.*

Now I saw in my Dream, That the
Highway up which *Christian* was to go, was
fenced on either Side with a Wall, and
that Wall was called * *Salvation*. Up this * Isa. 26. 1.
Way therefore did burdened *Christian* run,
but not without great Difficulty, because
of the Load on his Back.

He ran thus till he came at a Place some-
what ascending, and upon that Place stood
a *Cross*, and a little below, in the Bottom,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

a Sepulchre. So I saw in my Dream, That just as *Christian* came up with the *Cross*, his Burden loosed from off his Shoulders, and fell from off his Back, and began to tumble, and so continued to do, till it came to the Mouth of the Sepulchre, where it fell in, and I saw it no more.

When God releases us of our Guilt and Burden, we are as those that leap for Joy.

Then was *Christian* glad and lightfome, and said with a merry Heart, *He hath given me Rest by his Sorrow, and Life by his Death.* Then he stood still a while to look and wonder; for it was very surprizing to him, that the Sight of the *Cross* should thus ease him of his Burden. He looked therefore, and looked again, even till the Springs that were in his Head sent the † *Zech. 12. 10.* † Waters down his Cheeks. Now, as he stood looking and weeping, behold three Shining Ones came to him and saluted him, with *Peace be to thee*; so the first said to him, * *Mar. 2. 2.* * *Thy Sins be forgiven thee*; the second † *Zech. 3. 4.* † *stript him of his Rags*, and † cloathed him with Change of Raiment; the third also † *Ephes. 1. 13.* † *set a * Mark on his Forehead*, and gave him a Roll, with a Seal upon it, which he bid him look on as he ran, and that he should give it in at the *Cœlestial Gate*; so they went their Way. Then *Christian* gave three Leaps for Joy, and went on Singing:

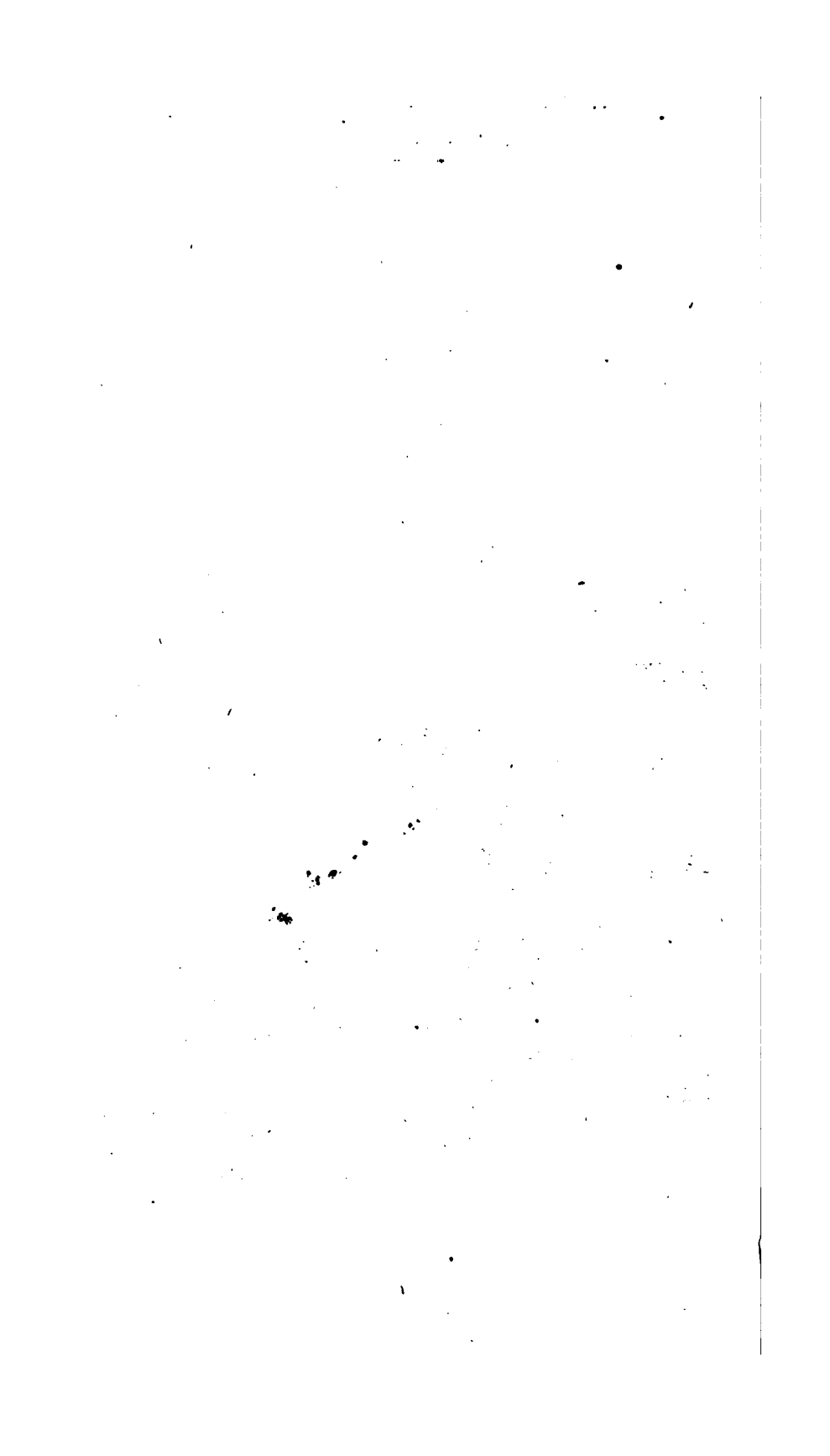
A Christian can sing, tho' alone, when God doth give him the Joy of his Heart.

*Thus far did I come laden with my Sin;
Nor could Ought ease the Grief that I was in,
'Till I came hither: What a Place is this!
Must here be the Beginning of my Bliss?*

Must



Christian comes to the Cross, and is eased of his Burden.



The Pilgrim's Progress.

41

*Must here the Burden fall from off my Back ?
Must here the Strings that bind it to me crack ?
Blest Cross! blest Sepulchre! blest rather be
The Man that there was put to Shame for me!*

I saw then in my Dream, that he went on *thus*, even until he came at the Bottom, where he saw, a little out of the Way, three Men fast asleep, with Fetters upon their Heels. The Name of the one was * *Simple*, another *Sloth*, and the thrid *Pre-*
sumption.

* *Simple,
Sloth, and
Presumption.*

Christian then seeing them lie in this Case, went to them, if peradventure he might awake them; and cried, You are like them that sleep on the Top of a † *Mast*, for the Dead Sea is under you, † *Prov. 23. 24.* a Gulph that hath no Bottom: Awake, therefore, and come away; be willing also, and I will help you off with your Irons. He also told them, If he that goeth about like * *a roaring Lion*, comes by, * *1 Pet. 5. 8.* you will certainly become a Prey to his Teeth. With that they looked upon him, and began to reply in this Sort: † *Simple* † *There is* said, *I see no Danger*: *Sloth* said, *Yet a little no Persuasion*
more Sleep: And *Presumption* said, *Every will do, if*
Tub must stand upon his own Bottom. And *God openeth*
so they lay down to sleep again, and *Christian* went on his Way. *not the Eyes.*

Yet

*Who's this? The Pilgrim. How! 'Tis very true.
Old Things are pass'd away; All's become New.
Strange! He's another Man, upon my Word;
They be fine Feathers, that make a fine Bird.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Yet was he troubled to think, that Men in that Danger should so little esteem the Kindness of him that so freely offered to help them, both by the awakening of them, counselling of them, and proffering to help them off with their Irons. And as he was troubled thereabout, he espied two Men come tumbling over the Wall, on the Left Hand of the narrow Way; and they made up apace to him. The Name of the one was *Formalist*, and the Name of the other *Hypocrisy*. So, as I said, they drew up unto him, who thus enter'd with them into Discourse.

* Christian.
salketh with
them.

Chr. * Gentlemen, Whence came you, and whither go you ?

Form. and Hyp. We were born in the Land of *Vain-Glory*, and are going for Praise to Mount *Sion*.

Chr. Why came you not in at the Gate which standeth at the Beginning of the Way ? Know you not that it is written,

* John 10. 1. * That he that cometh not in by the Door, but climbeth up some other Way, the same is a Thief and a Robber.

Form. and Hyp. They said, That to go to the Gate for Entrance, was by all their Countrymen counted too far about; and therefore their usual Way was to make a short Cut of it, and to climb over the Wall, as they had done.

Chr. But will it not be counted a Trespas against the Lord of the City, whether we are bound, thus to violate his revealed Will ?

Form.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

43

Form. and *Hyp.* They told him, * That * *They that* as for that, he needed not to trouble his *come into the* Head thereabout; for what they did, they *Way, but not* had *Custom* for, and could produce, if need *by the Door,* were, Testimony that would witness it, for *can say some-* more than a thousand Years. *thing in Vin-*

Chr. But, said *Christian*, will **your Prac-** *dication of* tice stand a Trial at Law? *their own* *Practice.*

Form. and *Hyp.* They told him, That *Custom,* it being of so long standing as above a Thousand Years, would doubtless now be admitted as a Thing legal by an impartial Judge: And besides, *say they,* if we get into the Way, what's Matter which Way we get in? If we are in, we are in: Thou art but in the Way, who, as we perceive, came in at the Gate; and we are also in the Way, that come tumbling over the Wall: Wherein now is thy Condition better than ours?

Chr. I walk by the *Rule* of my Master, you walk by the rude working of your Fancies. You are counted Thieves already by the Lord of the Way, therefore I doubt you will not be found true Men at the End of the Way. You come in by yourselves without his Direction; and shall go out by yourselves, without his Mercy.

To this they made him but little Answer; only they bid him look to himself. Then I saw that they went on every Man in his Way, without much Conference one with another; save that these two Men told *Christian*, That as to *Laws* and *Ordinances*, they doubted not but they should as conscientiously do them as he. Therefore, said they, we see not wherein thou

The Pilgrim's Progress.

thou differest from us, but by the *Coat* that is on thy Back, which was, as we trow, given thee by some of thy Neighbours to hide the Shame of thy Nakedness.

- * Gal. 1. 16. *Chr.* By * Laws and Ordinances you will not be saved, since you came not in by the *Dobr.* And as for this *Coat* that is on my Back, it was given me by the Lord of the Place whither I go; and that, as you say, to cover my Nakedness with. And I take it as a Token of Kindness to me; for I had nothing but Rags before; and besides, * thus I comfort myself as I go: Surely, think I, when I come to the Gate of the City, the Lord thereof will know me for good, since I have his *Coat* on my Back! a *Coat* that he gave me freely in the Day that he stript me of my Rags. I have moreover a Mark in my Forehead, of which perhaps you have taken no Notice, which one of my Lord's most intimate Associates fixed there in the Day that my Burden fell off my Shoulders. I will tell you, moreover, that I had then given me a Roll sealed, to comfort me by reading, as I go on the Way; I was also bid to give it in at the *Cœlestial Gate*, in Token of my certain going in after it; all which Things I doubt you want, and want them, because you came not in at the Gate.

* Christian has got his Lord's Coat on his Back, and is comforted therewith: He is comforted also with his Mark and his Roll.

To these Things they gave him no Answer, only they looked upon each other, and *laughed*. Then I saw that they went on all, save that *Christian* kept before, who had no more Talk but † with himself, and that sometimes sighingly, and sometimes

† Christian has Talk with himself.





Mistrust and Timorous Leave- Christian.

times comfortably: Also he would be often reading in the Roll, that one of the Shining Ones gave him, by which he was refreshed.

I beheld then, that they all went on 'till they came to the Foot of the Hill † *Difficulty*, at the Bottom of which was a Spring. There were also in the same Place two other Ways besides that which came strait from the Gate; one turned to the Left Hand, and the other to the Right, at the Bottom of the Hill, but the narrow Way lay right up the Hill, and the Name of the going up the Side of the Hill, is called *Difficulty*. *Christian* now went to the * Spring, and drank thereof to refresh himself, and then began to go up the Hill, saying:

† *He comes to the Hill Difficulty.*

* *Ia. 49. 10.*

*The Hill, tho' high, I covet to ascend,
The Difficulty will not me offend.
For I perceive the Way to Life lies here:
Come pluck up Heart, let's neither faint
nor fear;
Better, tho' difficult, the Right Way to go,
Than Wrong, tho' easy, where the End is
Wo.*

The other two also came to the Foot of the Hill; but when they saw that the Hill was

was

*Difficulty is behind, Fear is before,
Tho' he's got on the Hill, the Lions roar.
A Christian Man is never long at Ease;
When one Fright's gon:, another doth him seize.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

was steep and high; and that there were two other Ways to go; and supposing also that these two Ways might meet again with that up which *Christian* went, on the other Side of the Hill: Therefore they were resolved to go in those Ways. Now the Name of one of those Ways was *Danger*. and the Name of the other *De-*

* *The Danger of turning out of the Way.*

struction. So the * one took the Way which is called *Danger*, which led him into a great Wood, and the other took directly up the Way to *Destruction*, which led him into a wide Field, full of dark Mountains, where he stumbled and fell, and rose no more.

I looked then after *Christian*, to see him go up the Hill, where I perceived he fell from running to going, and from going to clambering upon his Hands and his Knees, because of the Steepness of the Place. Now about the Midway to the Top of the Hill, was a pleasant † *Arbour*, made by the Lord of the Hill, for the refreshing of weary Travellers; thither therefore *Christian* got, where also he sat down to rest him: Then he pulled his Roll out of his Bosom, and read therein to his Comfort; he also now began afresh to take a Review of the Coat or Garment that was given him as he stood by the Cross. Thus pleasing himself a-while, he at last fell into a Slumber, and thence into a fast Sleep, which detained him in that Place until it was almost Night; and in his Sleep * his Roll fell out of his Hand. Now as he was sleeping, there came one to him, and awaked him, saying, † *Go to the Ant than Sluggard;*

† *A Word of Grace.*

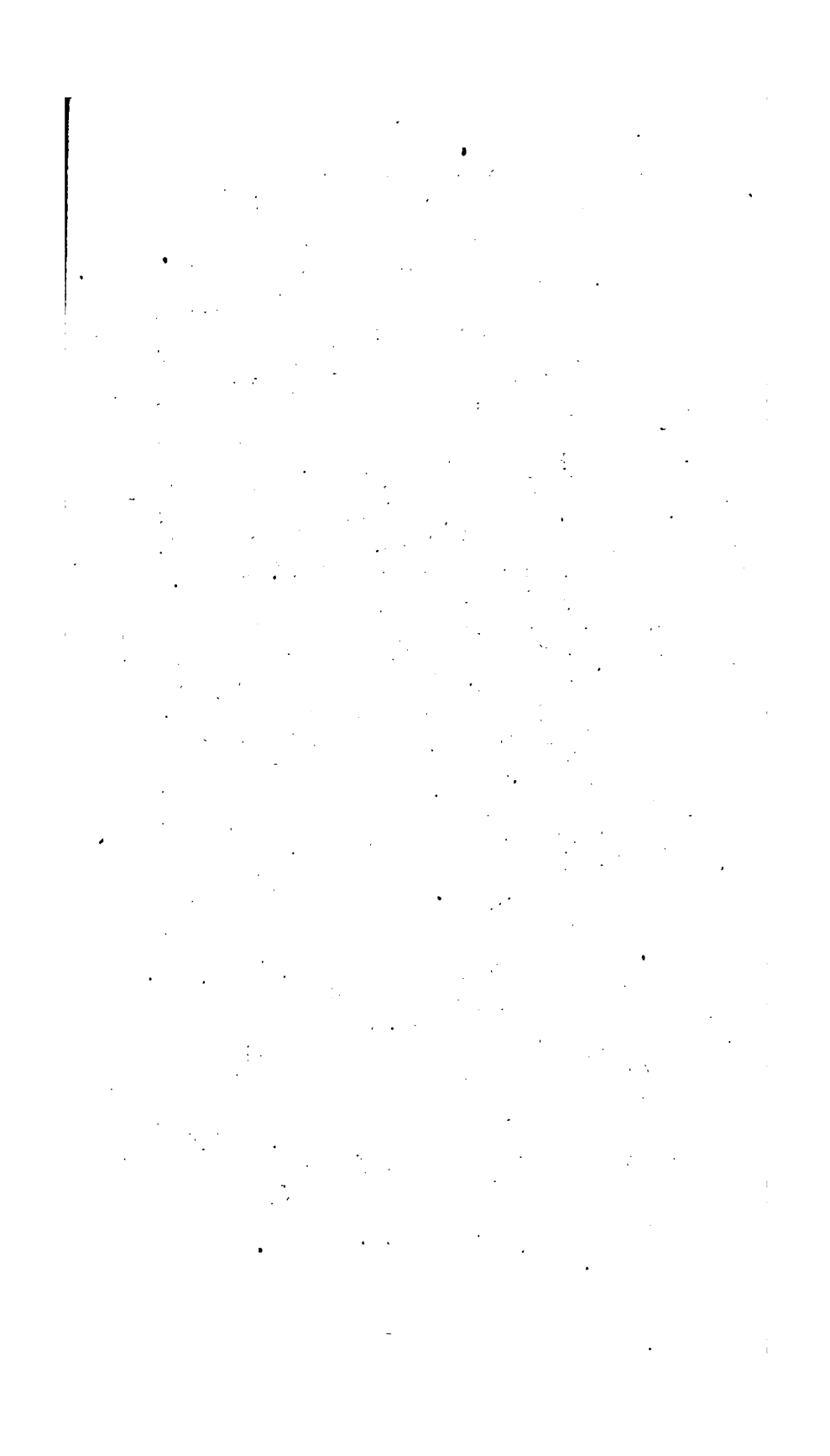
* *He that sleep is a Loser.*

† *Prov. 6. 6.*

Here Christian slept & dropt his robe



Christian ascends the hill Difficulty.



gard; consider her Ways and be wise: And with that *Christian* suddenly started up, and sped him on his Way, and went apace till he came to the Top of the Hill.

Now when he was got up to the Top of the Hill, there came two Men running to meet him again; the Name of the one was * *Timorous*, and of the other *Mistrust*: To whom *Christian* said, Sirs, What's the Matter you run the wrong Way? *Timorous* answer'd, That they were going to the City of *Zion*, and had got up that difficult Place: But, said he, the farther we go, the more Danger we meet with; wherefore we turned, and are going back again.

* *Christian* meets with *Mistrust* and *Timorous*.

Yes, said, *Mistrust*, for just before us lies a Couple of Lions in the Way; (whether sleeping or waking we know not) and we could not think, if we came within Reach, but they would presently pull us in Pieces.

Chr. Then said *Christian*, You make me afraid: But whither shall I flee to be safe? If I go back to my own Country, that is prepared for Fire and Brimstone, and I shall certainly perish there: If I can get to the *Coelestial* City, I am sure to be in Safety there: I must venture; to go back, is nothing but Death; to go forward, is Fear of Death, and Life everlasting beyond it: I will yet go forward. So *Mistrust* and *Timorous* ran down the Hill, and *Christian* went on his Way. But thinking again of what he had heard from the Men, he felt in his Bosom for his Roll, that he might read therein, and

* *Christian* shakes off Fear.

be

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* Christian
*misi'd his Roll
 wherein he
 used to take
 Comfort.*

† He is per-
 plexed for his
 Roll.

be comforted ; but he felt, and found * it not. Then was *Christian* in great Distress, and knew not what to do ; for he wanted that which used to relieve him ; and that which should have been his Pass into the Coelestial City. Here therefore he began to be much † perplex'd, and knew not what to do ; at last he bethought himself that he had slept in the Arbour that is on the Side of the Hill ; and falling down upon his Knees, he asked God Forgiveness for that his foolish Fact, and then went back to look for his Roll. But all the Way he went back, who can sufficiently set forth the Sorrow of *Christian's* Heart ? Sometimes he sigh'd, sometimes he wept, and oftentimes he chid himself for being so foolish to fall asleep in that Place which was erected only for a little Refreshment for his Weariness. Thus therefore he went back, carefully looking on this Side and on that all the Way as he went, if happily he might find the Roll that had been his Comfort so many times in his Journey. He went thus 'till he came again in Sight of the Arbour where he sat and slept ; but that Sight renewed his * Sorrow the more, by bringing again, even afresh, his Evil of Sleeping into his Mind. Thus therefore he now went on bewailing his sinful Sleep, saying, *O wretched Man that I am !* that I should sleep in the Day-time ! that I should sleep in the Midst of Difficulty ! that I should so indulge the Flesh, as to use that Rest for Ease to my Flesh, which the LORD of the Hill hath erected only for the Relief.

* Christian
*bewails his
 foolish Sleep-
 ing. Rev. 2.
 2. 2 Theff. 5.
 7, 8.*

lief of the Spirits of Pilgrims! How many Steps have I took in vain! (Thus it happen'd to *Israel*, for their Sin they were sent back again by the Way of the Red Sea) and I am made to tread those Steps with Sorrow, which I might have trod with Delight, had it not been for this sinful Sleep. How far might I have been on my Way by this Time! I am made to tread those Steps thrice over, which I needed not to have trod but once: Yea, now also I am like to be benighted, for the Day is almost spent: O that I had not slept! Now by this Time he was come to the *Arbour* again, where for a while he sat down and wept; but at last (as Providence would have it) looking sorrowfully down under the Settle, there he * espied his Roll; the which he with * Christian Trembling and Haste catch'd up and put ^{findeth his} into his Bosom. But who can tell how ^{Roll where he} joyful this Man was, when he had gotten ^{lost it.} his Roll again? For this Roll was the Assurance of his Life, and Acceptance at the desired Haven. Therefore he laid it up in his Bosom, gave GOD Thanks for directing his Eye to the Place where it lay, and with Joy and Tears betook himself again to his Journey. But, O how nimbly now did he go up the rest of the Hill! Yet, before he got up, the Sun went down upon *Christian*; and this made him again recal the Vanity of his Sleeping to his Remembrance; and thus he again began to condole with himself: O thou sinful Sleep! how for thy Sake am I like to be benighted in my Journey! I must
E
walk

The Pilgrim's Progress.

walk without the Sun, Darkness must cover the Path of my Feet, and I must hear the Noise of doleful Creatures, because of my sinful Sleep! Now also he remember'd the Story that *Mistrust* and *Timorous* told him of, how they were frighted with the Sight of the Lions. Then said *Christian* to himself again, These Beasts range in the Night for their Prey, and if they should meet with me in the Dark, how should I shift them? How should I escape being by them torn in Pieces? Thus he went on his Way; but while he was thus bewailing his unhappy Miscarriage, he lift up his Eyes, and behold there was a very stately Palace before him, the Name of which was *Beautiful*, and it stood just by the Highway Side.

So I saw in my Dream, that he made Hastè and went forward, that if possible he might get Lodging there. Now before he had gone far, he enter'd into a very narrow Passage, which was about a Furlong off the Porter's Lodge, and looking very narrowly before him as he went, he espied two Lions in the Way. Now, thought he, I see the Danger that *Mistrust* and *Timorous* were driven back by. (The Lions were chain'd, but he saw not the Chains) Then he was afraid, and thought also himself to go back after them, for he thought nothing but Death was before him: But the Porter at the Lodge, whose Name is *Watchful*, perceiving that *Christian* made a Halt, as if he would go back, cried unto him, say-

* Mark. 13.

ing, * Is thy Strength so small? Fear not the
the





The Palace called Beautifull; and Christian afraid of the Lion

The Pilgrim's Progress.

51

the Lions, for they are chain'd, and are placed there for Trial of Faith, where it is, and for Discovery of those that have none. Keep in the Midst of the Path, and no Hurt shall come unto thee.

Then I saw that he went on Trembling for Fear of the Lions; but taking good Heed to the Directions of the Porter, he heard them roar, but they did him no Harm. Then he clapt his Hands, and went on till he came and stood before the Gate where the Porter was. Then said *Christian* to the Porter, Sir, What House is this? And, May I lodge here to Night? The Porter answer'd, This House was built by the Lord of the Hill, and he built it for the Relief and Security of Pilgrims. The Porter also asked whence he was, and whither he was going?

Cbr. I am come from the City of Destruction, and am going to Mount Zion; but because the Sun is now set, I desire, if I may, to lodge here to Night?

Porter. What is your Name?

Cbr. My Name is now *Christian*, but my Name at the first was *Graceless*: I came of the Race of * *Japheth*, whom God * Gen. 9. 27. will persuade to dwell in the Tents of *Shem*.

Port. But how doth it happen that you came so late? The Sun is set.

Cbr. I had been here sooner, but that wretched Man that I am, I slept in the *Arbour* that stands on the Hill-side! Nay, I had, notwithstanding that, been here much sooner, but that in my Sleep, I lost my

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Evidence, and came without it to the Brow of the Hill, and then feeling for it, and finding it not, I was forced, with Sorrow of Heart, to go back to the Place where I slept my Sleep, where I found it, and now I am come.

Port. Well, I will call out one of the Virgins of this Place, who will (if she likes your Talk) bring you in to the rest of the Family, according to the Rules of the House. So *Watchful* the *Porter* rang a Bell, at the Sound of which came out of the Door of the House a grave and beautiful Damsel, named *Discretion*, and asked why she was called?

The *Porter* answer'd, This Man is in a Journey from the City of *Destruction* to Mount *Zion*, but being weary and benighted, he asked me if he might lodge here to Night: So I told him I would call for thee, who, after Discourse had with him, may'st do as seemeth thee good, even according to the Law of the House.

Then she asked him, whence he was, and whither he was going? And he told her. She asked him also, how he got into the Way? and he told her. Then she asked him, what he had seen and met with in the Way? and he told her. And at last she asked his Name? So he said, It is *Christian*; and I have so much the more a Desire to lodge here to Night, because by what I perceive, this Place was built by the Lord of the Hill, for the Relief and Security of Pilgrims: So she smiled, but the Water stood in her Eyes: And after a little Pause, she said, I will call forth

two or three more of my Family. So she ran to the Door, and called out *Prudence*, *Piety* and *Charity*, who after a little more Discourse with him, had him into the Family; and many of them meeting him at the Threshold of the House, said, Come in, Thou Blessed of the Lord; this House was built by the Lord of the Hill, on purpose to entertain such Pilgrims in. Then he bowed his Head, and followed them into the House: So when he was come in, and sat down, they gave him something to drink, and consented together that until Supper was ready, some of them should have some particular Discourse with *Christian*, for the best Improvement of Time, and they appointed *Piety*, and *Prudence*, and *Charity*, to discourse with him; and thus they began:

Piety. Come good *Christian*, since we ^{*Piety discourses him.*} have been so loving to you, to receive you into our House this Night, let us, if perhaps we may better ourselves thereby, talk with you of all Things that have happen'd to you in your Pilgrimage.

Cbr. With a very good Will, and I am glad that you are so well disposed.

Piety. What moved you at first to betake yourself to a Pilgrim's Life?

E 3

Cbr.

*Shall they who wrong begin, yet rightly end?
Shall they at all have Safety for their Friend?
No, no, in head-strong Manner they set out,
And head-long will they fall at last, no doubt.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* How Christian was driven out of his own Country.

Chr. I was driven out of my Native Country by a dreadful Sound that was in mine Ears; to wit, That unavoidable Destruction did attend me, if I abode in that Place where I was.

Piety. But how did it happen that you came out of your Country this Way?

Chr. It was as God would have it; for when I was under the Fears of Destruction, I did not know whither to go; but by Chance there came a Man, even to me, as I was Trembling and Weeping, whose Name is † *Evangelist*, and he directed me to the Wicket-Gate, which else I should never have found, and so set me into the Way that hath led me directly to this House.

† How he got into the Way to Zion.

Piety. But did you not come by the House of the *Interpreter*?

* A Rebeaful of what he faw in the Way.

Chr. Yes, and did see fuch Things there, the Remembrance of which will ftick by me as long as I live; Especially three Things, * to wit, How Christ, in Defpite of *Satan*, maintains his Work of Grace in the Heart; how the Man had finned himfelf quite out of Hopes of God's Mercy; and alfo the Dream of him that thought in his Sleep the Day of Judgment was come.

Piety. Why, Did you hear him tell his Dream?

Chr. Yes, and a dreadful one it was, I thought; it made my Heart ake as he was telling of it; but yet I am glad I heard it.

Piety. Was this all you faw at the House of the *Interpreter*?

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

55

Cbr. No, he took me and had me where he shewed me a stately Palace, and how the People were clad in Gold that were in it; and how there came a venturous Man, and cut his Way thro' the armed Men that stood in the Door to keep him out; and how he was bid to come in, and win Eternal Glory: Methought those Things did ravish my Heart! I would have staid at that good Man's House a Twelvemonth, but that I knew I had farther to go.

Piety. And what saw you else in the Way?

Cbr. Saw! Why, I went but a little farther, and I saw one, as I thought in my Mind, hang bleeding upon a Tree; and the very Sight of him made my Burden fall off my Back, (for I groaned under a very heaven Burden) but then it fell down from off me. 'Twas a strange Thing to me, for I never saw such a Thing before: Yea, and while I stood looking up, (for then I could not forbear looking) Three Shining Ones came to me: One of them testified that my Sins were forgiven me; another stript me of my Rags, and gave me this 'broider'd Coat which you see; and the third set the Mark which you see in my Forehead, and gave me this sealed Roll; (and with that he plucked it out of his Bosom.)

Piety. But you saw more than this, did you not?

Cbr. The Things that I have told you, were the best; yet some other Matters I saw, as namely, I saw three Men, *Simple,*

E. 4

Sloth,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Sloth, and *Presumption*, lie asleep a little out of the Way as I came, with Irons upon their Heels; but do you think I could awake them! I also saw *Formality* and *Hypocrisy* come tumbling over the Wall, to go (as they pretended) to *Zion*, but they were quickly lost; even as I myself did tell them, but they would not believe: But, above all, I found it hard Work to get up this Hill, and as hard to come by the Lions Mouths; and truly if it had not been for the good Man, the *Porter* that stands at the Gate, I do not know, but that, after all, I might have gone back again; but now I thank God I am here, and I thank you for receiving of me.

Then *Prudence* thought good to ask him a few Questions, and desired his Answer to them.

Prudence dis-
courses him.
† Christian's
Thoughts of his
Native Coun-
try.
Heb. 11. 15,
16,

Prud. Do you not think sometimes of the Country from whence you came?

Chr. Yea, † but with much Shame and Detestation: Truly, if I had been mindful of that Country from whence I came out; I might have had Opportunity to have returned; but now I desire a better Country; that is, a Heavenly One.

Prud. Do you not yet bear away with you some of the Things that then you were conversant withal?

Chr. Yes, but greatly against my Will; especially my inward and † carnal Cogitations, with which all my Countrymen, as well as myself, were delighted; but now all those Things are my Grief; and might

† Christian
distasted with
carnal Cogi-
tations.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

57

might I but choose mine own Things, I would * choose never to think of those Things more ; but when I would be doing of that which is best, that which is worst is with me.

Prud. Do you not find sometimes, as if those Things were vanquished, which at other Times are your Perplexity ?

Cbr. Yes, but that is but seldom ; but they are to me * Golden Hours, in which such Things happen to me.

Prud. Can you remember by what Means you find your Annoyances at Times, as if they were vanquished ?

Cbr. Yes, when † I think what I saw † at the Cross, that will do it ; and when I look upon my 'broider'd Coat, that will do it ; and when I look into the Roll that I carry in my Bosom, that will do it ; and when my Thoughts wax warm about whether I am going, that will do it.

Prud. And what is it that makes you so desirous to go to Mount Zion ?

Cbr. Why, * there I hope to see him alive that did hang dead on the Cross, and there I hope to be rid of all those Things, that to this Day are in me an Annoyance to me : There they say there is no † Death, and there I shall dwell with such Company as I like best. For, to tell you Truth, I love him, because I was by him eased of my Burden ; and I am weary of my inward Sickness : I would fain be where I shall die no more, and with the Company that shall continually cry, *Holy, Holy, Holy,*

Then

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* Charity dis-
course him.

† Then said * Charity to Christian, Have you a Family? Are you a marry'd Man?

Chr. I have a Wife and four small Children.

Chr. And why did you not bring them along with you?

† Christian's
Love to his
Wife and
Children.

Chr. Then *Christian* † wept, and said, Oh! how willingly would I have done it! but they were all of them utterly averse to my going on Pilgrimage.

Chr. But you should have talked to them, and have endeavoured to have shewn them the Danger of being behind.

Gen. 19. 14. *Chr.* So I did; and told them also what God had shewn to me of the Destruction of our City; but I seem'd to them as one that mocked, and they believed me not.

Chr. And did you pray to God that he would bless your Counsell to them?

Chr. Yes, and that with much Affection; for you must think that my Wife and poor Children were very dear unto me.

Chr. But did you tell them of your own Sorrow, and Fear of Destruction? For I suppose that Destruction was visible enough to you?

* Christian's
Fear of perishing
might be
read in his
very Counte-
nance.

Chr. Yes, over, and over, and over. They might also * see my Fears in my Countenance, in my Tears, and also in my Trembling under the Apprehension of the Judgment that did hang over our Heads; but all was not sufficient to prevail with them to come with me.

Chr. But what could they say for themselves why they came not?

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

19

Chr. Why, * my Wife was afraid of ^{*The Cause*} losing this World; and my Children were ^{*by his Wife*} given to the foolish Delights of Youth; ^{*and Children*} So what by one Thing and what by another, ^{*did not go*} they left me to wander in this Man- ^{*with him.*} ner alone.

Chr. But did you not with your vain Life damp all that you by Words used by way of Persuasion to bring them away with you?

Chr. Indeed I cannot commend my Life; for I am conscious to myself of many Failings therein: I know also, that a Man by his Conversation may soon overthrow what by Argument or Persuasion he doth labour to fasten upon others for their Good. Yet this I can say, I was very wary of giving them Occasion, by any unseemly Action to make them averse to going on Pilgrimage. Yea, for this very ^{*Christian's*} Thing, they would tell me I was too pro- ^{*good Conver-*} cise, and that I denied myself of Things ^{*sation before*} (for their Sakes) in which they saw no ^{*his Wife and*} Evil. Nay, I think I may say, that if ^{*Children.*} what they saw in me did hinder them, it was my great Tendernefs in sinning against God, or of doing any Wrong to my Neighbour.

Chr. Indeed * Cain hated his Brother, ^{*† 1 John 3. 12.*} because his own Works were Evil, and his Brother's Righteous; and if thy Wife ^{*Christian*} and Children have been offended with ^{*clear of their*} thee for this, they thereby shew them- ^{*Blood if they*} selves to be implacable to ^{*perish.*} † Good; and ^{*† Ezek. 4. 19.*} thou hast delivered thy Soul from their Blood.

Now

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Now I saw in my Dream, That thus they sat talking together until Supper was ready. So when they had made ready, they sat down to Meat: Now the Table was furnished with † fat Things, and with Wine that was well refined; and all their Talk at the * Table was about the L O R D of the Hill; as, namely, about what HE had done, and wherefore HE did what He did, and why HE had built that House; and by what they said, I perceived that He had been a great Warrior, and had fought with, and slain † him that had the Power of Death, but not without great Danger to himself, which made me love him the more.

† What Christian had for his Supper.
* Their Talk at Supper-Time.

† Heb. 2. 14.
15.

For, as they said, and, as I believe, (said Christian) he did it with the Loss of much Blood; but that which put Glory of Grace into all he did, was, that he did it of pure Love to his Country. And besides, there were some of them of the Household that said, they had been, and spoke with him since he did die on the Cross; and they have attested, that they had it from his own Lips, that he is such a Lover of poor Pilgrims, that the like is not to be found from the East to the West.

They moreover gave an Instance of what they affirmed, and that was, He had stript himself of that Glory, that he might do this for the Poor; and that they heard him say and affirm, *That he would not dwell in the Mountain of Zion alone.* They said moreover, That he had made

The Pilgrim's Progress.

61

made many Pilgrims * Princes, tho' by ^{* Christ makes} Nature they were Beggars born, and their ^{Princes of} Original had been the Dunghil. ^{Beggars.}

Thus they discoursed together till late ^{1 Sam. 2. 8.} at Night; and after they had committed ^{Psal. 113. 7.} themselves to their Lord for Protection, they betook themselves to Rest: The Pilgrim they laid in a large Upper † Cham- † Christian's ber, whose Window opened towards the ^{Bed-chamber.} Sun-rising: The Name of the Chamber was *Peace*, where he slept till Break of Day, and then he awoke and sang,

*Where am I now! Is this the Love and
Care*

*Of Jesus, for the Men that Pilgrims are,
Thus to provide! That I should be forgiven,
And dwell already the next Door to Heaven.*

So, in the Morning, they all got up; and, after some more Discourse, they told him that he should not depart till they had shewed him the *Rarities* of that Place. And first they had him into the Study, * where they shewed him Records of the ^{* Christian} greatest Antiquity; in which, as I remem- ^{bad into the} ber my Dream, they shewed him first the ^{Study, and} *Pedigree* of the Lord of the Hill, that ^{what he saw} he was the Son of the Ancient of Days, ^{there.} and came by that Eternal Generation: Here also was more fully recorded the Acts that he had done, and the Names of many Hundreds that he had taken into his Service; and how he had placed them in such Habitations, that could neither

The Pilgrim's Progress.

neither by Length of Days, nor Decays of Nature, be dissolved.

Then they read to him some of the worthy Acts that some of his Servants had done: As how they had subdued Kingdoms, wrought Righteousness, obtained Promises, stopped the Mouths of Lions, quenched the * Violence of Fire, escaped the Edge of the Sword, out of Weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in Fight, and turned to Flight the Armies of the *Aliens*.

* Heb. 11. 33.
34.

Then they read again in another Part of the Records of the House, where it was shewed how willing their Lord was to receive into his Favour, any, even any, though they in Time past had offered great Affronts to his Person and Proceedings. Here also were several other Histories of many other famous Things, of all which *Christian* had a View: As of Things both Antient and Modern; together with Prophécies and Predictions of Things that have their certain Accomplishment, both to the Dread and Amazement of Enemies, and the Comfort and Solace of Pilgrims.

† *Christian*
had into the
Armory.

The next Day they took him, and had him into the † Armory where they shewed him all manner of Furniture, which their Lord had provided for Pilgrims, as Sword, Shield, Helmet, Breast-plate, *All-Prayer*, and Shoes that would not wear out. And there was here enough of this to harness out as many Men, for the Service of their Lord, as there be Stars in the Heaven for Multitude.

They

The Pilgrim's Progress.

63

They also shewed him some of the Engines with which some of his Servants had done wonderful Things. * They shewed him *Moses's Rod*, the Hammer and Nail with which *Jael* slew *Sisera*, the Pitchers, Trumpets, and Lamps too, with which *Gideon* put to Flight the Armies of *Midian*. Then they shewed him the Ox's Goad, wherewith *Shamgar* slew Six Hundred Men. They shewed him also the Jaw-Bone with which *Sampson* did such mighty Feats: They shewed him moreover the Sling and Stone with which *David* slew *Goliath* of *Gath*; and the Sword also with which their Lord will kill the Man of Sin, in the Day that he shall rise up to the Prey. They shewed him besides many excellent Things, with which *Christian* was much delighted. This done, they went to their Rest again.

* Christian
made to see
Ancient
Things.

Then I saw in my Dream, That on the Morrow he got up to go forwards, but they desired him to stay till the next Day also; and then said they, we will (if the Day be clear) shew you the † Delectable Mountains; which, they said, would yet farther add to his Comfort, because they were nearer the desired Haven than the Place where at present he was; so he consented and staid. When the Morning was up, they had him to the Top of the House, and bid him look * South: † Christian shewed the Delectable Mountains. † Isa. 33, 16. So he did; and behold at a great Distance, he saw a most pleasant mountainous Country, beautified with Woods, Vineyards, Fruits of all Sorts, Flowers also, with Springs and Fountains, very de-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

delectable to behold. Then he asked the Name of the Country. They said, It was *Emanuel's Land*; and it is as common, said they, as this *Hill* is to and for all the Pilgrims. And when thou comest there, from thence thou may'st see to the Gate of the *Cœlestial City*, as the Shepherds that live there will make appear.

† Christian
sets forward.

* Christian
sent away
armed.

Now he bethought himself of setting forward, † and they were willing he should. But first, said they, let us go again into the *Armory*: So they did; and when he come there, they * harnessed him from Head to Foot, with what was of *Proof*, lest perhaps he should meet with *Assaults* in the *Way*. He being therefore thus accoutred, walked out with his *Friends* to the *Gate*, and there he asked the *Porter*, If he saw any *Pilgrim* pass by? Then the *Porter* answered, *Yes*.

Cbr. Pray, Did you know him? said he.

Port. I asked his Name, and he told me it was *Faithful*.

Cbr. O, said *Christian*, I know him; he is my *Townsmen*, my near *Neighbour*, he comes from the *Place* where I was born: How far do you think he may be fore?

Port. He is got by this *Time* below the *Hill*.

* How Christian and the Porter greet at parting.

Cbr. Well, said * *Christian*, good *Porter*, the *Lord* be with thee, and add to all thy *Blessings* much *Increase* for the *Kindness* thou hast shewed to me.

Then

Then he began to go forward; but *Discretion, Piety, Charity, and Prudence*, would accompany him down to the Foot of the Hill. So they went on together, reiterating their former Discourses, till they came to go down the Hill. Then said *Christian*, As it was *difficult* coming up, so, so far as I can see, it is *dangerous* going down. Yes, said *Prudence*, so it is; for it is a hard Matter for a Man to go down into the Valley of * *Humiliation*, * *The Valley* as thou art now, and to catch no Slip by ^{of Humilia-} the Way; therefore, said they, are we ^{tion.} come out to accompany thee down the Hill. So he began to go down, but very warily; yet he caught a Slip or two.

Then I saw in my Dream, That these good Companions (when *Christian* was got down to the Bottom of the Hill) gave him a Loaf of Bread, a Bottle of Wine, and a Cluster of Raisins; and then he went his Way.

But now in this Valley of *Humiliation*, poor *Christian* was hard put to it; for he had gone but a little Way, before he espied a foul *Fiend* coming over the Field to meet him: His Name is *Apollyon*. Then did *Christian* begin to be afraid, and to cast in his Mind whether to go back or to stand his Ground. But he consider'd again, that he had no * *Armour* for his * *Christian* Back, and therefore thought that to turn ^{bas no Armour} the Back to him might give him great ^{for his Back.} er Advantages, with Ease, to pierce him with his Darts; therefore he resolv'd to venture, and † stand his Ground: For, † *Christian's* thought he, had I no more in mine Eye ^{Resolution at} ^{the Approach} than of *Apollyon*.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

than the Saving of my Life, 'twould be the best Way to stand.

So he went on, and *Apollyon* met him : Now the Monster was hideous to behold ; He was cloathed with Scales like a Fish ; (and they are his Pride) he had Wings like a Dragon, Feet like a Bear, and out of his Belly came Fire and Smoke, and his Mouth was as the Mouth of a Lion. When he was come up to *Christian*, he beheld him with a disdainful Countenance, and thus began to question with him.

Apollyon. * Whence come you ? and
 * *Discourse* whicher are you bound ?
betwixt *Chri-*
stian and
Apollyon.

Chr. I am come from the City of *De-*
struction, which is the Place of all Evil,
 and am going to the City of *Zion*.

Apol. By this I perceive thou art one
 of my Subjects ; for all that Country is
 mine, and I am the Prince and God of
 it. How is it then that thou hast run a-
 way from thy King ? Were it not that I
 hope thou may'st do me more Service, I
 would strike thee now, at one Blow, to
 the Ground.

Chr. I was born indeed in your Domi-
 nions, but your Service was hard, and your
 Wages such as a Man could not live on ;
 * *Rom. 6. 23.* * *for the Wages of Sin is Death* ; therefore
 when I was come to Years, I did as other
 considerate Persons do, look out, if per-
 haps I might mend myself.

Apol. There is no Prince that will thus
 lightly lose his Subjects, neither will I as
 yet lose thee ; but since thou complainest
 of

The Pilgrim's Progress.

67

of they Service and Wages * be content to go back; what our Country will afford, I do here promise to give thee. * Apollyon's Flattery.

Cbr. But I have let myself to another, even to the King of Princes, and how can I, with Fairness, go back with thee?

Apol. Thou hast done in this according to the Proverb, † *Change a Bad for a Worse*: But it is ordinary for those that have professed themselves his Servants, after a while to give him the Slip, and return again to me: Do thou so too, and all shall be well. † Apollyon undervalues Christ's Service.

Cbr. I have given him my Faith, and sworn my Allegiance to him: How then can I go back from this, and not be hang'd as a Traytor?

Apol. Thou didst the same to me, and yet I am willing to pass by all, if now thou will yet turn and go back.

Cbr. What I promised thee was in my Non-age; and besides, I count that the Prince under whose Banner now I stand, is able to absolve me; yea, and to pardon also what I did as to my Compliance with thee: And besides, (O thou destroying Apollyon) to speak Truth, I like his Service, his Wages, his Servants, his Government, his Company, and Country, better than thine; and therefore leave off to persuade me farther, I am his Servant, and I will follow him. * Apollyon pleads the grievous Ends of Christians to dissuade Christian from persisting in his Way.

Apol. * Consider again, when thou art in cool Blood, what thou art like to meet with in the Way that thou goest. Thou knowest, that for the most Part, his Servants

The Pilgrim's Progress.

vants come to an ill End, because they are Transgressors against me and my Ways. How many of them have been put to shameful Deaths! And besides, thou countest his Service better than mine, whereas he never came yet from the Place where he is, to deliver any that served him out of their Hands: But as for me, how many Times, as all the World very well knows, have I delivered, either by Power or Fraud, those that have faithfully served me, from him and his, though taken by them? And so I will deliver thee.

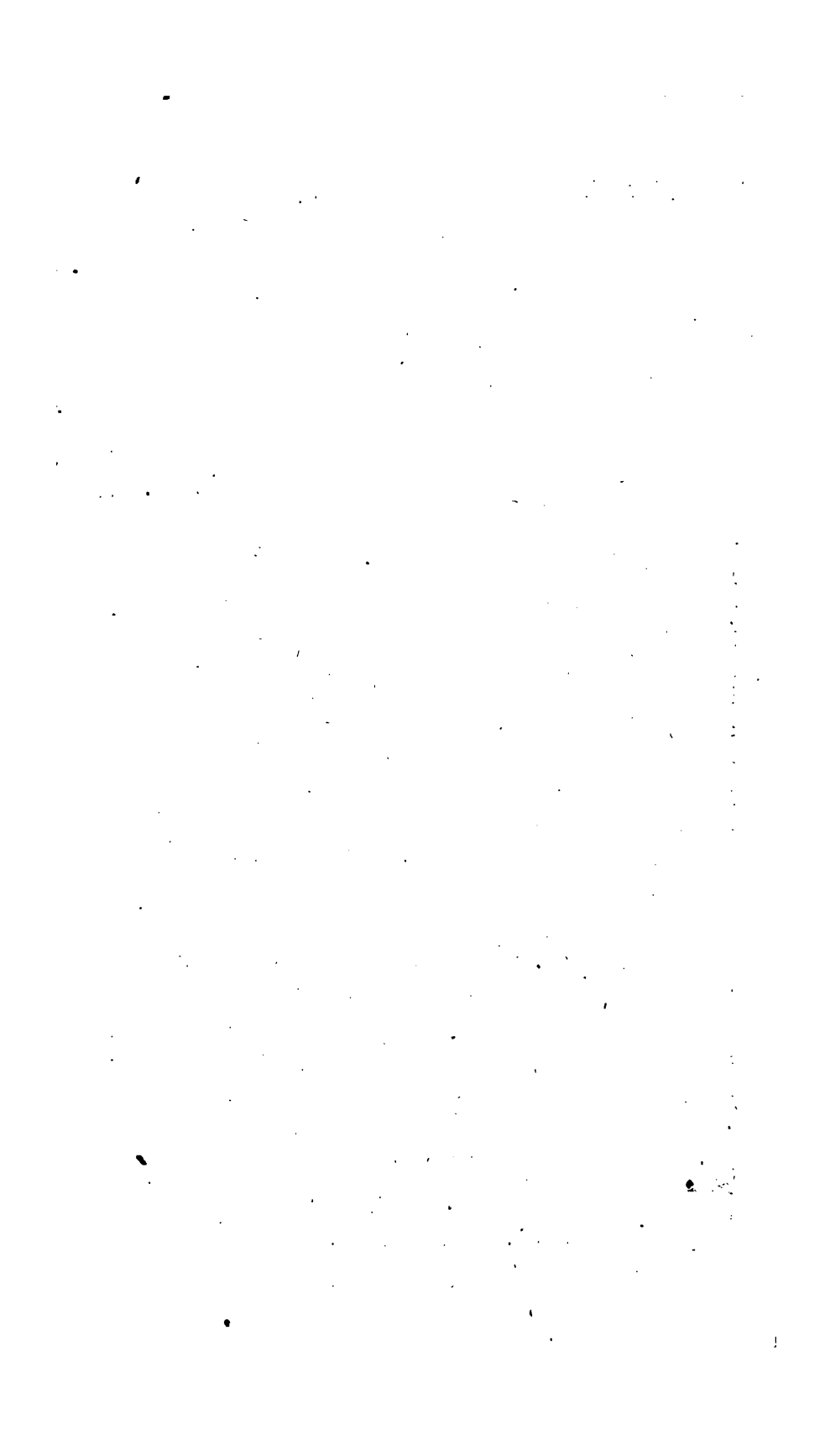
Chr. His forbearing at present to deliver them, is on purpose to try their Love, whether they will cleave to him to the End: And as for the ill End thou sayest they come to, that is most glorious in their Account: But, for present Deliverance, they do not much expect it; for they stay for their Glory, and then they shall have it, when their Prince comes in his, and the Glory of the Angels.

Apol. Thou hast already been unfaithful in thy Service to him; and how dost thou think to receive Wages of him?

Chr. Wherein, O *Apollyon!* have I been unfaithful to him?

† *Apollyon* pleads Christian's Infirmities against him.

Apol. Thou didst faint at * first setting out, when thou was almost choaked in the Gulph of *Despond*; thou didst attempt wrong Ways to be rid of thy Burden, whereas thou shouldest have stayed 'till thy Prince had taken it off. Thou didst sinfully sleep, and lose thy choice Things. Thou wast also almost persuaded to go back at the Sight of the Lions: And when thou





Christian fights Apollyon .

thou talkest of thy Journey, and of what thou hast heard and seen, thou art inwardly desirous of Vain-glory in all that thou sayest or dost.

Cbr. All this is true, and much more, which thou hast left out; but the Prince whom I serve and honour, is merciful and ready to forgive: But besides, these Infirmities possess'd me in thy Country: for there I suck'd them in, and I have groaned under them, been sorry for them, and have obtain'd Pardon of my Prince.

Apol. Then *Apollyon* broke out into a *Apollyon in a* grievous Rage, saying, I am an Enemy to this Prince; I hate his Person, his Laws, *a Rage falls upon Christian.* and People: I am come out on purpose to withstand thee:

Cbr. *Apollyon*, beware what you do; for I am in the King's Highway, the Way of Holiness; therefore take heed to yourself.

Apol. Then *Apollyon* straddled quite over the whole Breadth of the Way, and said, I am void of Fear in this Matter; prepare thyself to die; for I swear by my infernal Den, That thou shalt go no farther: Here will I spill thy Soul!

And with that he threw a flaming Dart at his Breast; but *Christian* had a Shield in his Hand, with which he caught it, and so prevented the Danger of that.

Then did *Christian* draw; for he saw it was time to bestir him; and *Apollyon* as fast made at him, throwing Darts as thick as Hail; by the which, notwithstanding all * *Christian* that *Christian* could do to avoid it, * *Apollyon* wounded in his *Head*, his *Hand*, and *Foot*. This made *Christian* give a little back: *his Understanding, Faith, and*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Apollyon, therefore, followed his Work a-
main, and *Christian* again took Courage,
and resisted as manfully as he could. This
fore Combat lasted for above half a Day,
even till *Christian* was almost quite spent.
For you must know, that *Christian*, by
reason of his Wounds, must needs grow
weaker and weaker.

Then *Apollyon* espying his Opportunity,
began to gather up close to *Christian*, and
wrestling with him, gave him a dreadful
† Fall; and with that *Christian's* Sword
flew out of his Hand. Then said *Apollyon*,
I am sure of thee now: And with that he
had almost press'd him to Death; so that
Christian began to despair of Life. But,
as God would have it, while *Apollyon* was
fetching his last Blow, thereby to make
a full End of this good Man, *Christian*
nimblely reached out his Hand for his
* Sword, and caught it, saying, † *Rejoyce
not against me, O mine Enemy! when I fall
I shall arise*; and with that gave him a
deadly Thrust, which made him give back,
as one that had received his Mortal
Wound. *Christian* perceiving that, made
at him again; saying, * *Nay, in all these
Things we are more than Conquerors, through
him that loved us*. And with that *Apollyon*
spread forth his Dragon's Wings, and
sped him away, that *Christian* saw him no
more.

† *Apollyon*
† *Christian* down to
the Ground.

* *Christian's*
† *Victory over*
† *Apollyon.*
† Mic. 7. 8.

* Rom. 8. 8,
9.
† Jam. 4. 7.

In

*A more unequal Match can hardly be:
Christian must fight an Angel; but you see
The Valiant Man by handling Sword and Shield,
Doth make him, tho' a Dragon quit the Field.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

71

In this Combat no Man can imagine, unless he had seen and heard as I * did, what Yelling and hideous Roaring *Apol-
lyon* made all the Time of the Fight : He spake like a Dragon : And on the other Side, what Sighs and Groans burst from *Christian's* Heart. I never saw him all the while give so much as one pleasant Look, till he perceived he had wounded *Apollyon* with his two-edged Sword ; then, indeed, he did smile, and look upward : But it was the dreadfulest Sight that ever I saw.

So when the Battle was over, *Christian* said, † *I will here give Thanks to him that hath delivered me out of the Mouth of the Lion, to him that did help me against Apol-lyon.* And so he did ; saying,

** A brief Relation of the Combat by the Spectator.*

† *Christian gives God Thanks for his Deliverance.*

*Great Beelzebub, the Captain of this Fiend,
Design'd my Ruin ; therefore to this End
He sent him harness'd out ; and he with Rage,
That hellish was, did fiercely me engage :
But blessed Michael help'd me, and I,
By Dint of Sword, did quickly make him fly :
Therefore to him let me give lasting Praise,
And Thanks, and bless his holy Name always.*

Then there came to him a Hand with some of the Leaves of the Tree of Life, the which *Christian* took and applied to the Wounds that he had received in the Battle, and was healed immediately. He also sat down in that Place to eat Bread, and to drink of the Bottle that was gi-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* Christian goes on his Journey with his Sword drawn in his Hand.

ven him a little before; so being refreshed, he addressed himself to his Journey, with his Sword drawn in his * Hand; for he said, I know not but some other Enemy may be at hand. But he met with no other Affront from *Apollyon* quite thro' the Valley.

† The Valley of the Shadow of Death.

Now at the End of this Valley was another, call'd † *The Valley of the Shadow of Death*, and *Christian* must needs go thro' it, because the Way to the Coelestial City lay thro' the Midst of it: Now this Valley is a very solitary Place. The Prophet * *Jeremiah* thus describes it: A Wilderness, a Land of Desarts, and of Pits; a Land of Drought, and of the *Shadow of Death*; a Land that no Man (but a Christian) passeth through, and where no Man dwelt.

* Jer. 2. 9.

Now here *Christian* was worse put to it than in his Fight with *Apollyon*; as by the Sequel you shall see.

† The Children of the Spies go back.

* Numb. 13.

I saw then in my Dream, That when *Christian* was got to the Borders of the *Shadow of Death*, there met him Two Men, † Children of them that brought up an * evil Report of the good Land, making haste to go back; to whom *Christian* spake as follows:

Cbr. Whither are you going?

Men. They said, Back! Back! And would have you to do so too, if either Life or Peace is prized by you.

Cbr. Why! What's the Matter? said *Christian*.

Men. Matter! said they, we were going that Way as you are going, and went

as far as we durst! and indeed we were almost past coming back: for had we gone a little farther, we had not been here to bring the News to thee.

Cbr. But what have you met with? said *Christian*.

Men. Why we were almost in the Valley of the Shadow of Death, but that by good ^{Psal. 44. 29.} ^{Psal. 107. 19.} Hap we looked before us, and saw the Danger before we came to it.

Cbr. But what have you seen? said *Christian*.

Men. Seen! Why the Valley itself, which is as dark as Pitch: We also saw there the Hobgoblins, Satyrs, and Dragons of the Pit: We heard also in that Valley a continual Howling and Yelling, as of People under unutterable Misery, who there sat bound in Affliction and Irons; over that Valley hangs the discouraging Clouds of Confusion: Death also doth ^{Job 3. 5.} ^{ch. 10. 22.} always spread his Wings over it. In a word, it is every whit dreadful being utterly without Order.

Cbr. Then said *Christian*, I perceive not ^{Jer. 2. 6.} yet, by what you have said, but that this is my Way to the desired Haven.

Men. Be it thy Way, we will not choose it for ours.

So they parted, and *Christian* went on his Way, but still with his Sword drawn in his Hand, for fear lest he should be assaulted.

I saw then in my Dream, so far as this Valley reached, there was on the Right Hand a very deep Ditch; That Ditch is ^{Psal. 63. 14.} it,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

it, into which the Blind have led the Blind in all Ages, and have both there miserably perished. Again, behold, on the Left Hand, there was a very dangerous Quag, into which, if even a good Man falls, he finds no Bottom for his Foot to stand on: Into that Quag King *David* once did fall, and had, no doubt, therein been smothered, had not he that is able pluck'd him out.

The Path-way was here also exceeding narrow, and therefore good *Christian* was the more put to it; for when he sought, in the Dark, to shun the Ditch on the one Hand, he was ready to tip over into the Mire on the other: Also when he sought to escape the Mire, without great Carefulness he would be ready to fall into the Ditch. Thus he went on, and I heard him here sigh bitterly: For besides the Danger mentioned above, the Path-way was here so dark, that oftentimes, when he lift up his Foot, to set forward, he knew not where, or upon what, he should set it next.

About the Midst of this Valley, I perceived the Mouth of Hell to be, and it stood also hard by the Way-side: Now, thought *Christian*, what shall I do? And ever and anon the Flame and Smoke would come out in such Abundance, with Sparks

*Poor Man! where art thou now? Thy Day is Night:
 Good Man be not cast down, thou yet art right.
 Thy Way to Heaven lies by the Gates of Hell:
 Cheer up, hold out, with thee it shall go well.*





The Valley of the Shadow of Death.

Sparks and hideous Noises. (Things that cared not for *Christian's* Sword, as did *Apollyon* before) that he was forced to put up his Sword, and betake himself to another Weapon, called *All Prayer*: So he cried, in my Hearing, *O Lord, I beseech thee, deliver my Soul.* Thus he went on a great while, yet still the Flames would be reaching towards him: Also he heard doleful Voices, and Rushings to and fro, so that sometimes he thought he should be torn to Pieces, or trodden down like Mire in the Streets. This frightful Sight was seen, and these dreadful * Noises were heard by him for several Miles together: And coming to a Place, where he thought he heard a Company of *Fiends* coming forward to meet him, he stopt, and began to muse what he had best to do: Sometimes he had half a Thought to go back; then again he thought he might be Half-way through the Valley: He remembered also, how he had already vanquished many a Danger; and that the Danger of going back might be much more than for to go forward; so he resolved to go on: Yet the *Fiends* seemed to come nearer and nearer: But when they were come even almost at him, he cried out with a most vehement Voice, *I will walk in the Strength of the Lord God*: So they gave back, and came no farther.

One Thing I would not let slip: I took Notice that now poor *Christian* was so confounded, that he did not know his own Voice: And thus I perceived it: Just when he was come over against the

Mouth

Ephes. 6. 18,
Psal. 116. 3.

* Christian
put to a Stand,
but for a
while.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

† Christian
made believe
that he spake
Blasphemies,
when 'twas
Satan that
suggested them
into his Mind.

Mouth of the burning Pit, one of the Wicked Ones got behind him, and stept up softly to him, and whispering suggested many grievous Blasphemies to him, † which he verily thought had proceeded from his own Mind. This put *Christian* more to it than any thing that he met with before, even to think that he should now blaspheme him that he loved so much before; yet, if he could have helped it, he would not have done it: But he had not the Discretion either to stop his Ears, or to know from whence those Blasphemies came.

Psal. 23. 4.

When *Christian* had travelled in this disconsolate Condition some considerable Time, he thought he heard the Voice of a Man, as going before him, saying, *Though I walk through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I will fear none Ill, for thou art with me.*

Then was he glad; and that for these Reasons:

First, Because he gathered from thence, that some who feared God were in this Valley as well as himself.

Job. 9. 10.

Secondly, For that he perceived God was with them, though in that dark and dismal State: And why not, thought he, with me? Though by reason of the Impediment that attends this Place, I cannot perceive it.

Thirdly, For that he hoped (could he overtake them) to have Company by-and-by.

So he went on, and called to him that was before ; but he knew not what to answer : For that he also thought himself to be alone. And by-and-by the Day broke : Then said *Christian*, *He hath turned the Shadow of Death into the Morning.* Amos 5. 8.

Now Morning being come, he looked back, not out of Desire to return, but to see, by the Light of the * Day what Ha- * Christian zards he had gone through in the Dark : glad at Break So he saw more perfectly the Ditch that of Day. was on the one Hand, and the Quag that was on the other ; also how narrow the Way was which led betwixt them both : Also how he saw the Hobgoblins, and Satyrs, and Dragons of the Pit, but all afar off : For after Break of Day they came not nigh, yet they were discovered to him, according to that which is written, *he discovereth deep Things out of Darkness, and bringeth out to Light the Shadow of Death.* Job 12. 22.

Now was *Christian* much affected with his Deliverance from all the Dangers of his solitary Way ; which Dangers, though he feared them more before, yet he saw them more clearly now, because the Light of the Day made them conspicuous to him ; and about this Time the Sun was rising, and this was another Mercy to *Christian* : For you must note, that though the first Part of the Valley of the Shadow of Death was dangerous, * yet this second Part, * The second Part of this Valley very dangerous. which he was yet to go, was, if possible, far more dangerous : For, from the Place where he now stood, even to the End of the

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Job. 29. 3.

the Valley, the Way was all along set so full of Snares, Traps, Gins and Nets here, and so full of Pits, Pit-falls, deep Holes, and Shelvings down there, that had it not been dark, as it was when he came the first Part of the Way, had he had a thousand Souls, they had in reason been cast away; but, as I said, just now the Sun was rising. Then said he, *His Candle shineth on my Head, and by his Light I go through Darknes.*

In this Light therefore he came to the End of the Valley. Now I saw in my Dream, that at the End of this Valley lay Blood, Bones, Ashes, and mangled Bodies of Men, even of Pilgrims that had gone this Way formerly: And while I was musing what should be the Reason, I espied a little before me a Cave, where two Giants, *Pope* and *Pagan*, dwelt in old Time; by whose Power and Tyranny the Men, whose Bones, Blood, Ashes, &c. lay there, were cruelly put to Death. But by this Place *Christian* went without much Danger, whereat I somewhat wonder'd: But I have learnt since, that *Pagan* has been dead many a Day; and as for the other, though he be yet alive, he is, by reason of Age, and also of the many shrewd Brushes that he met with in his younger Days, grown so crazy and stiff in his Joints, that he can now do little more than sit in his Cave's Mouth, grinning at Pilgrims as they go by, and biting his Nails, because he cannot come at them.

So

The Pilgrim's Progress.

79

So I saw that *Christian* went on his Way; yet, at the Sight of the *Old Man*, that sat at the Mouth of the Cave, he could not tell what to think, 'specially because he spake to him, though he could not go after him; saying, *You will never mend, till more of you be burnt.* But he held his Peace, and set a good Face on't, and so went by, and caught no Hurt. Then sang *Christian*:

*O World of Wonders! (I can say no less)
That I should be prefer'd in that Distress
That I have met with here! O blessed be
That Hand that from it hath deliver'd me!
Dangers in Darkness, Devils, Hell, and Sin,
Did compass me, while I this Vale was in:
Tea, Snarcs, and Pits, and Traps, and Nets
did lie*

*My Path about, that worthless, silly I,
Might have been catch'd, entangled, and
cast down:*

But since I live, let JESUS wear the Crown.

Now, as *Christian* went on his Way, he came to a little Ascent, which was cast up on purpose, that Pilgrims might see before them: Up there, therefore, *Christian* went; and looking forward, he saw *Faithful* before him upon his Journey: Then said *Christian* aloud, *Ho, ho: So ho: Stay, and I will be your Companion.* At that *Faithful* looked behind him; to whom *Christian* cried again, *Stay, stay, till I come up to you.*
But

The Pilgrim's Progress.

But *Faithful* answer'd, No, I am upon my Life, and the Avenger of Blood is behind me.

* Christian
overtakes
Faithful.

At this *Christian* was somewhat moved; and putting to all his Strength, he quickly got up with * *Faithful*, and did also over-run him; so the *last* was *first*. Then did *Christian* vain-gloriously smile, because he had gotten the Start of his Brother: But not taking good Heed to his Feet, he suddenly stumbled and fell, and could not rise again, until *Faithful* came up to help him.

† Christian's
Fall makes
Faithful and
he go lovingly
together.

Then I saw in my Dream, they went very lovingly † on together, and had sweet Discourse of all Things that had happened to them in their Pilgrimage; and thus *Christian* began.

Cbr. My honoured and well-beloved Brother *Faithful*, I am glad that I have overtaken you; and that God has so tempered our Spirits, that we can walk as Companions in this so pleasant a Path.

Faith. I had thought, dear Friend, to have had your Company quite from our Town, but you did get the Start of me: Wherefore I was forced to come thus much of the Way alone.

Cbr. How long did you stay in the City of *Destruction*, before you set out after me on your Pilgrimage?

* Their Talk
about the
Country from
whence they
came.

Faith. * Till I could stay no longer; for there was great Talk presently after you were gone out, that our City would, in a short Time, with Fire from Heaven, be burned down to the Ground.

Cbr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

81

Cbr. What! did your Neighbours talk so?

Faith. Yes, 'twas for a while in every Body's Mouth.

Cbr. What! and did no more of them but you come out to escape the Danger?

Faith. Though there was, as I said, a great Talk thereabout, yet I do not think they did firmly believe it. For in the Heat of the Discourse, I heard some of them deridingly speak of you and of your desperate Journey (for so they called this your Pilgrimage :) But I did believe, and do still, that the End of our City will be with Fire and Brimstone from Above: And therefore I have made my Escape.

Cbr. Did you hear no Talk of Neighbour Pliable?

Faith. Yes, *Christian*, I heard that he followed you 'till he came to the Slough of Despond; where, as some said, he fell in: But he would not be known to have so done; but I am sure he was soundly bedaubed with that kind of Dirt.

Cbr. And what said the Neighbours to him?

Faith. He hath, since his going back, been had greatly in Derision, and that among all sorts of People; some do mock and despise him, and scarce will any set him on work. He is now seven times worse than if he had never gone out of the City.

Cbr. But why should they be so set against him, since they also despise the Way that he forsook?

G

Faith.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Faith. O, they say, Hang him; he is a Turn-coat! he was not true to his Profession; I think God has stirred up even his Enemies to hiss at him, and make him a Proverb, because he hath forsaken the Way.

Jer. 29. 18,
19.

Cbr. Had you no Talk with him before you came out?

Faith. I met him once in the Streets, but he leered away on the other Side, as one ashamed of what he had done: So I spake not to him.

Cbr. Well, at my first setting out, I had Hopes of that Man; but now I fear he will perish in the Overthrow of the City.

* 2 Pet. 2.
22.
*The Dog and
the Sow.*

* For it has happened to him according to the true Proverb, The Dog is turned to his Vornit again; and the Sow that was washed, to her Wallowing in the Mire.

Faith. They are my Fears of him too, but who can hinder that which will be?

Cbr. Well, Neighbour *Faithful* (said *Christian*) let us leave him, and talk of Things that more immediately concern ourselves. Tell me now what you have met with in the Way as you came: For I know you have met with some Things, or else it may be writ for a Wonder.

† Faithful
assaulted by
Wanton.

Faith. I escaped the *Slough* that I perceived you fell into, and got up to the Gate without that Danger; only I met with one whose Name was † *Wanton*, that had like to have done me a Mischief.

Gen. 39. 11,
12, 13.

Cbr. 'Twas well you escaped her Net *Joseph* was hard put to it by her, and he escaped her as you did; but it had lik

The Pilgrim's Progress.

83

to have cost him his Life. But what did she do to you?

Faith. You cannot think (but that you know something) what a flattering Tongue she had; she lay at me hard to turn aside with her, promising me all manner of Content.

Chr. Nay, she did not promise you the Content of a good Conscience.

Faith. You know what I mean all carnal and fleshly Content.

Chr. Thank God you have escaped her: The Abhorred of the Lord shall fall into Prov. 22. 14. her Ditch.

Faith. Nay, I know not whether I did wholly escape her, or no.

Chr. Why, I trow, you did not consent to her Desire?

Faith. No, not to defile myself, for I remember'd an old Writing that I had seen, Prov. 5. 5. which said, Her Steps take hold of Hell. Job 31. 1. So I shut mine Eyes, because I would not be bewitched with her Looks: Then she railed on me, and I went my Way.

Chr. Did you meet with no other Assault as you came?

Faith. When I came to the Foot of the Hill call'd *Difficulty*, I met with a very aged *Man*, who asked me what I was? and whether bound? I told him, that I was a Pilgrim, going to the Coelestial City. Then said the old Man, Thou lookest like an honest Fellow; wilt thou be content to dwell with me, for the Wages that I shall give thee? Then I asked him his Name, and where he dwelt? He said his Name was *Adam the First*, and that he dwelt in the

† He was assaulted by Adam the First.

Ephes. 4. 22. *Town of Deceit.* I asked him then, What was his Work? and what the Wages that he would give? He told me, that his Work was *many Delights*; and his *Wages*, that I should be his Heir at last. I farther asked him, what House he kept, and what other Servants he had? So he told me, that his House was maintained with all the Dainties in the World; and that his Servants were those of his own begetting. Then I asked how many Children he had? He said, that he had but three Daughters, * *The Lust of the Flesh, The Lust of the Eyes, and the Pride of Life*; and that I should marry one of them, if I would. Then I asked, how long Time he would have me live with him? And he told me, As long as he lived himself.

* 1 John 2. 16.

Chr. Well, and what Conclusion came the old Man and you to at last?

Faith. Why, at first I found myself somewhat inclinable to go with the Man, for I thought he spake very fair; but looking in his Forehead, as I talked with him, I saw there written, Put off the Old Man with his Deeds.

Chr. And how then?

Faith. Then it came burning hot into my Mind, whatever he said, and however he flattered, when he got me home to his House, he would sell me for a Slave. So I bid him forbear to talk, for I would not come near the Door of his House. Then he reviled me, and told me, that he would send such a one after me, that should make my Way bitter to my Soul. So I turned to go away from him; but just as I turned

cd

ed myself to go thence, I felt him take hold of my Flesh, and give me such a deadly Twitch back, that I thought he had pulled Part of me after himself: This made me cry, *O wretched Man!* So I went Rom. 7. 24. on my Way up the Hill.

Now when I had got above half way up I looked behind me, and saw one coming after me, swift as the Wind; so he overtook me just about the Place where the Settle stands.

Chr. Just there (said *Christian*) did I fit down to rest me; but being overcome with Sleep, I there lost this Roll out of my Bosom.

Fai. b. But, good Brother, hear me out: So soon as the Man overtook me, he was but a Word and a Blow, for down he knock'd me, and laid me for dead. But when I was a little come to myself again, I ask'd him, Wherefore he served me so? He said, Because of my secret inclining to *Adam the First*: And with that he struck me another deadly Blow on the Breast, he beat me down backward; so I lay at his Foot as dead as before. When I came to myself again, I cried him Mercy: But he said, I know not how to shew Mercy; and with that knock'd me down again. He had doubtless made an End of me, but that one came by, and bid him forbear.

Chr. Who was that that bid him forbear?

Faith. I did not know him at first; but as he went by I perceived the Holes in his Hands and in his Side: Then I concluded that he was our Lord. So I went up the Hill.

The Pilgrini's Progress.

The Temper of Moses,
Moses, *Chr.* That Man that overtook you, was
 He spareth none, neither know-
 eth he how to shew Mercy to those that
 transgress his Law.

Faith. I know it very well; it was not
 the first Time that he has met with me.
 'Twas he that came to me when I dwelt
 securely at Home, and that told me he
 would burn my House over my Head, if
 I staid there.

Chr. But did you not see the House that
 stood there on the Top of the Hill, on the
 Side of which *Moses* met you?

Faith. Yes, and the Lions too, before I
 came at it; but for the Lions, I think they
 were asleep; for it was about Noon: And
 because I had so much of the Day before
 me, I passed by the Porter, and came down
 the Hill.

Chr. He told me indeed, That he saw you
 go by; but I wish you had call'd at the
 House; for they would have shewed you
 so many Rarities, that you would scarce
 have forgot them to the Day of your Death
 But pray tell me, Did you meet no Body in
 the Valley of *Humility*?

† Faithful
 assaulted by
 Discontent,

Faith. Yes, I met with one † *Discontent*
 who would willingly have persuaded me to
 go back again with him: His Reason was
 For that the Valley was altogether without
Honour. He told me moreover, That then
 to go, was to disoblige all my Friends, a
Pride, Arrogancy, Self-Conceit, Worldly
Glory, with others, who, he knew, as he
 said, would be very much offended, if
 made such a Fool of myself as to wade
 through this Valley.

Chr

The Pilgrim's Progress;

87

Chr. Well, and how did you answer him?

Faith. I told him, * That altho' all these * Faithful's
that he named might claim a Kindred *Answer to*
of me, and that rightly, (for indeed they *Discontent.*
were my Relations, according to the *Flesh*)
yet since I became a Pilgrim, they have
disowned me, as I also have rejected them;
and therefore they were to me now, no
more than if they had never been of my
Lineage: I told him moreover, That as
to this Valley he had quite misrepresented
the Thing; for before Honour is
Humility, and a haughty Spirit before a
Fall. Therefore, said I, I had rather go
through this Valley to the Honour that
was so accounted by the Wisest, than choose
that which he esteemed most worthy our
Affections.

Chr. Met you with nothing else in that
Valley?

Faith. Yes, I met with † *Shame*; but of † *He is af-*
all the Men that I met with in my Pilgri- *faulted by*
mage, he, I think, bears the wrong Name. *Shame.*
The other would be said Nay, after a little
Argumentation, and somewhat else: But
this bold-faced *Shame* would never have
done.

Chr. Why, what did he say to you?

Faith. What! why he objected against
Religion itself; he said, 'Twas a pitiful,
low, saocking-Business for a Man to mind
Religion; he said that a tender Conscience
was an unmanly Thing; and that for a
Man to watch over his Words and Ways,
so as to tie up himself from that bestor-
ing Liberty that the brave *Spirits of the*
Times; accustom themselves unto, would
make

The Pilgrim's Progress.

1 Cor. 1. 26.
 ch. 3. 18.
 Phil. 3. 7, 9.
 John 7. 48.

make him the Ridicule of the Times. He objected also, That few of the *Mighty, Rich* or *Wise*, were ever of my Opinion; nor any of them neither, before they were persuaded to be Fools, and to be of a voluntary Fondness to venture the Loss of all, for no Body else knows what. He moreover objected the base and low Estate and Condition of those that were chiefly the Pilgrims of the Times in which they lived; also their Ignorance, and Want of Understanding in all Natural Science. Yea, he did hold me to it at that Rate also, about a great many more Things than here I relate; as that it was a Shame to sit whining and mourning under a Sermon, and a Shame to come sighing and groaning Home: That is was a Shame to ask my Neighbour Forgiveness for petty Faults, or to make Restitution where I have taken from any. He said also, That Religion made a Man grow strange to the Great, because of a few Vices, (which he called by finer Names) and made him own and respect the Base, because of the same Religious Fraternity; And is not this, said he, a Shame?

Chr. And what did you say to him?

Faith. Say! I could not tell what to say at first. Yea, he put me so to it, that my Blood came up in my Face; ever this *Shame* fetch'd it up, and had almost beat me quite off. But, at last, I began to consider, That that which is highly esteemed among Men, is had in Abomination with God. And I thought again this *Shame* tells me what Men are; but

Luke 16. 15.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

89

it tells me nothing what *God* or the *Word of God* is. And I thought moreover, That at the Day of Doom we shall not be doomed to Death or Life, according to the hectoring Spirits of the World; but according to the Wisdom and Law of the Highest. Therefore, thought I, what *God* says, is best, though all the Men in the World are against it: Seeing then that *God* prefers his Religion; seeing *God* prefers a tender Conscience; seeing they that make themselves Fools for the Kingdom of Heaven, are wisest; and that the poor Man that loveth *Christ*, is richer than the greatest Man in the World that hates him; *Shame*, depart, thou art an Enemy to my Salvation; shall I entertain thee against my Sovereign Lord? How then shall I look him in the Face as his Coming? Should I now be ashamed Mar. 9: 35. of his Ways and Servants, how can I expect the Blessing? But indeed this *Shame* was a bold Villain; I could scarce shake him out of my Company: Yea, he would be haunting of me, and continually whispering me in the Ear, with some one or other of the Infirmities that attend Religion; but at last I told him, it was but in vain to attempt further in this Business; for those Things that he disdained, in those did I see most Glory: And so at last I got past this importunate one: And when I had shaken him off, then I began to sing:

*The Tryals that those Men do meet withal,
That are obedient to the Heavenly Call,*

Are

The Pilgrim's Progress.

*Are manifold and suited to the Flesh,
And come, and come, and come again afresh;
That now, or some time else, we by them may
Be taken, overcome, and cast away.
O let the Pilgrims, let the Pilgrims then
Be vigilant and quit themselves like Men.*

Chr. I am glad, Brother, that thou didst withstand this Villain so bravely for of all, as thou sayest, I think he hath the wrong Name; for he is so bold as to follow us in the Streets, and to attempt to put us to Shame before all Men, that is, to make us ashamed of that which is good; but if he was not himself audacious, he would never attempt to do as he does; but let us still resist him; for notwithstanding all his Bravado's, he promoteth the Fool, and none else. The Wise shall inherit Glory, said Solomon; but Shame shall be the Promotion of Fools.

Faith. I think we must cry to Him for Help against Shame, that would have us to be valiant for Truth upon the Earth.

Chr. You say true: But did you meet no Body else in that Valley?

Faith. No, not I; for I had Sun-shine all the rest of the Way through that, and also through the Valley of the Shadow of Death.

Chr. It was well for you; I am sure, I fared far otherwise with me; I had for long Season, as soon almost as I entered into that Valley, a dreadful Combat with that foul Fiend *Apollyon*; yea, I thought verily he would have killed me, especial when he got me down, and crushed me
unde

under him; as if he would have crushed me to Pieces: For as he threw me, my Sword flew out of my Hand; nay, he told me he was sure of me; but I cried to God, and he heard me, and delivered me out of all my Troubles. Then I entered into the Valley of the Shadow of Death, and had no Light for almost half the Way through it. I thought I should have been killed there over and over; but at last Day brake, and the Sun rose, and I went thro' that which was behind with far more Ease and Quiet.

Moreover I saw in my Dream, that as they went on; *Faithful*, as he chanced to look on one Side, saw a Man whose Name is *Talkative*, walking at a Distance besides them (for in this Place there was Room enough for them all to walk.) * He * *Talkative* was a tall Man, and something more comely at a Distance, than at Hand: To this Man *Faithful* addressed himself in this manner. *described.*

Faith. Friend, Whither away? Are you going to the Heavenly Country?

Talk. I am going to the same Place.

Faith. That is well; then I hope we may have your good Company?

Talk. With a very good Will will I be your Companion.

Faith. † Come on then, and let us go † *Faithful* together, and let us spend our Time in *and Talkative* discoursing of Things that are profitable. *enter into Discourse.*

Talk. To talk of Things that are good, to me is very acceptable; with you, or with any other; and I am glad that I have

• Talkative's
Dislike of his
Discourse.

have met with those that incline to so good a Work: For to speak the Truth, * the are but few that care thus to spend their Time (as they are in their Travels) to choose much rather to be speaking of Things to no Profit; and this hath been a Trouble to me.

Raith. That is indeed a Thing to be lamented; for what Thing so worthy of the Use of the Tongue and Mouth of Man on Earth, as are the Things of the Glory of Heaven?

Talk. I like you wonderful well; and your Sayings are full of Conviction; and I will add, What Thing is so pleasant, and what so profitable, as to talk of the Things of God?

What Things so pleasant (that is, a Man hath any Delight in Things that are wonderful) for Instance: If a Man doth delight to talk of the History, the Mystery of Things; or if a Man do love to talk of Miracles, Wonders, Signs, where shall he find Things record so delightful, and so sweetly penned, in the Holy Scripture?

Faith. That's true; but to be profited by such Things in our Talk, should be our chief Design.

Talkative's
fine Discourse.

Talk. That is it that I said; for to talk of such Things is most profitable; for so doing, a Man may get Knowledge of many Things; as of the Vanity of Earthly Things, and the Benefit of Things Above. (Thus in general) but more particularly by this a Man may learn the Necessity of a New Birth; the Insufficiency of our Work

the Need of Christ's Righteousness, &c. Besides, by this a Man may learn what it is to Repent, to Believe, to Pray, to Suffer, or the like: By this also a Man may learn what are the great Promises and Consolations of the Gospel, to his own Comfort. Farther, by this a Man may learn to refute false Opinions, to vindicate the Truth, and also to instruct the Ignorant.

Faith. All this is true, and glad am I to hear these Things from you.

Talk. Alas! the Want of this is the Cause that so few understand the Need of Faith, and the Necessity of Works of Grace in their Soul, in order to Eternal Life; but ignorantly live in the Works of the Law, by which a Man can by no Means obtain the Kingdom of Heaven.

Faith. But, by your Leave, Heavenly Knowledge of these is the Gift of God; no Man attaineth to them by human Industry, or only by the Talk of them.

Talk. * All this I know very well. For a Man can receive nothing, except it be given him from Heaven; all is of Grace, not of Works: I could give you an hundred Scriptures for the Confirmation of this.

* O brave
Talkative.

Faith. Well then, said *Faithful*, what is that one Thing that we shall at this Time found our Discourse upon?

Talk. What you will; † I will talk of Things Heavenly, or Things Earthly; Things Moral, or Things Evangelical; Things Sacred, or Things Prophane; Things

† O brave
Talkative.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Things past, or Things to come; Things Foreign, or Things at Home; Things more Essential, or Things Circumstantial; provided that all be done to our Profit.

Faithful
beguiled by
Talkative.

Faith. Now did * *Faithful* begin to wonder; and stepping to *Christian*, (for he walk'd all this while by himself) he said to him, but softly, What a brave Companion have we got? Surely this Man will make a very excellent Pilgrim.

* *Christian*
makes a Discovery of
Talkative,
saying Faithful
was to be
was.

Chr. At this *Christian* modestly smiled, and said, * This Man with whom you are so taken, will beguile, with this Tongue of his, twenty of them that know him
NOT.

Faith. Do you know him then?

Chr. Know him! Yea, better than he knows himself.

Faith. Pray, what is he?

Chr. His Name is *Talkative*; he dwelleth in our Town; I wonder that you should be a Stranger to him, only I consider that our Town is large.

Faith. Whose Son is he? And whereabout does he dwell?

Chr. He is the Son of one *Say-well*; he dwelt in *Prating-Row*; and he is known of all that are acquainted with him, by the Name of *Talkative* in *Prating-Row*; and notwithstanding his fine Tongue, he is but a sorry Fellow.

Faith. Well, he seems to be a very pretty Man.

Chr. That is, to them that have not a thorough Acquaintance with him; for he is best abroad, near home he is ugly enough: - Your saying that he is a pretty Man,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

59

Man brings to my Mind what I have observed in the Work of the Painter, whose Pictures shew best at a Distance; but very near, more unpleasing.

Faith. But I am ready to think you do but jest, because you smiled.

Chr. God forbid that I should jest, (tho' I smiled) in this Matter, or that I should accuse any falsely; I will give you a further Discovery of him: This Man is for any Company, and for any Talk; as he talketh now with you, so will he talk when he is on the Ale-bench: and the more Drink he hath in his Crown, the more of these Things he hath in his Mouth: Religion hath no Place in his Heart, or House, or Conversation; all he hath lieth in his Tongue, and his Religion is to make a Noise therewith.

Faith. Say you so! then I am in this Man greatly deceived.

Chr. Deceived! you may be sure of it: Mat. 23. Remember the Proverb, *They say, and do not*: But *the Kingdom of God is not in Word, but in Power.* He talketh of Prayer, of Repentance, of Faith, and of the New Birth; but he knows but only to talk of them. I have been in his Family, and have observed him both at home and abroad; and I know what I say of him is the Truth. * His House is as empty of Religion, as the White of an Egg is of Savour. There is there neither Prayer, nor Sign of Repentance for Sin: Yea, the Brewer, in his Kind, serves God far better than he. † He is the very Stain, Reproach, and Shame of Religion, to all that 25.

Talkative talks, but does not.

* His House is empty of Religion.

† He is a Stain to Religion. Rom. 2. 24.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

that know him; it can hardly have a good Word in all the End of the Town where he dwells, through him. Thus, say

* *The Proverb that goes of him.*

common People that know him, * *A Stranger abroad, and a Devil at home.* His private Family finds it so, he is such a Church such a Railer at, and so unreasonable with his Servants, that they neither know how to do for, or speak to him, Men therefore have any Dealings with him, say, † *It is better to deal with a Turk than with him, for fairer Dealing they shall have at their Hands.* This *Talkative* (if it be possible) will go beyond them, defraud, beguile and over-reach them, Besides, he brings up his Sons to follow his Steps; and if he finds (in any of them a *foolish Timorousness*) (for so he calls the first Appearance of a tender Conscience) he calls them Fools and Blockheads, and by no Means will employ them in much, or speak to them Commendations before others. For my Part, I am of Opinion, that he has, in his wicked Life, caused many to stumble and fall; and will be, if God prevent not, the Ruin of many more.

† *Men strive to deal with him.*

Faith. Well, my Brother, I am bound to believe you; not only because you say you know him, but also because, like a Christian, you make your Reports of Me. For I cannot think that you speak these Things of Ill-will, but because it is even so as you say.

Chr. Had I known him no more than you, I might perhaps have thought of him as at the first you did: Yea, had I received this Report at their Hands on

that are Enemies to Religion, I should have thought it had been a Slander. (A Lot that often falls from bad Mens Mouths upon good Mens Names and Professions :) But all these Things, yea, and a great many more as bad, of my own Knowledge, I can prove him guilty of. Besides, good Men are ashamed of him; they can neither call him *Brother* nor *Friend*: The very naming of him among them, makes them blush, if they know him.

Faith. Well, I see that *Saying* and *Doing* are two Things, and hereafter I shall better observe this Distinction.

Cbr. They are two Things indeed, and are as diverse as are the Soul and the Body; for as the Body without the Soul is but a dead * Carcass, so *Saying*, if it ^{* The Carcass} be alone, is but a dead Carcass also. ^{of Religion.} The Soul of Religion is the Practick Part: *Pure* James 1. 27. *Religion, and undefiled, before God and the* See Ver. 2, 3. *Father, is this, To visit the Fatherless and* 24, 25, 26. *Widows in their Affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the World.* This *Talkative* is not aware of; he thinks that *Hearing* and *Saying* will make a good Christian; and thus he deceiveth his own Soul. *Hearing* is but as the Sowing of the Seed; *Talking* is not sufficient to prove that Fruit is indeed in the Heart and Life; and let us assure ourselves, that at the Day of Doom, Men shall be judged See Matt. 13. according to their Fruit: It will not be 23. said then, *Did you believe?* But were you *Doers* or *Talkers* only? And accordingly shall they be judged. The End of the

The Pilgrim's Progress.

World is compared to our Harvest; and you know Men at Harvest regard nothing but Fruit. Not that any Thing can be accepted, that is not of Faith; but I speak this to shew you how insignificant Profession of *Talkative* will be at the Day.

Lev. 11.

Deut. 14.

* Faithful
convinced of
the Badness of
Talkative.

Faith. This brings to my Mind that *Moses*, by which he described the Beast that is clean. * He is such an one that parteth the Hoof, and cheweth the Cud not that parteth the Hoof only, or that cheweth the Cud only. The Hare cheweth the Cud, but yet is unclean, because he parteth not the Hoof. And this truly resembleth *Talkative*; he cheweth the Cud he seeketh Knowledge, he cheweth up the Word; but he divideth not the Hoof he parteth not with the Way of Sinne but as the Hare, he retaineth the Feet of a Dog or Bear, and therefore he is unclean.

1 Cor. 13. 1,
2, 3. ch. 14.
7.

† Talkative
like to Things
that sound
without Life.

Cbr. You have spoken, for ought I know, the true Gospel Sense of the Texts. And I will add another Thing *Paul* calleth some Men, yea, and the great *Talkers* too, *Sounding Brasses*, and *Tinkling Cymbals*; that is, as he expouseth them in another Place, *Things without Life*. Things without Life, that without the true Faith and Grace of the Gospel; and consequently, Things that shall never be placed in the Kingdom of Heaven among those that are the Children of Life: Though their *Sound*, by their *Talk*, be as it were the Tongue or Voice of an Angel.

Fa

The Pilgrim's Progress:

99

Faith. Well, I was not so fond of his Company at first, but I am as sick of it now. What shall we do to be rid of him?

Chr. Take my Advice, and do as I bid you, and you shall find that he will soon be sick of your Company too, except God shall touch his Heart and turn it.

Faith. What would you have me to do?

Chr. Why go to him, and enter into some serious Discourse about the *Power of Religion*; and ask him plainly, (when he has approved of it, for that he will) whether this Thing be set up in his Heart, House, or Conversation.

Faith. Then *Faithful* stept forward again, and said to *Talkative*, Come, what *Cbear*? How is it now?

Talk. Thank you; well, I thought we should have had a great deal of Talk by this Time.

Faith. Well, if you will, we will fall to it now; and since you left it with me to state the Question, let it be this: How doth the Saving Grace of God discover itself, when it is in the Heart of Man?

Talk. I perceive then that our Talk must be * *about the Power of Things*: Well, * *Talkative's* 'tis a very good Question, and I shall be *false Discove-* willing to answer you. And take my *ry of a Work* Answer in brief, thus: *First*, where the *of Grace.* Grace of God is in the Heart, it causeth there a great Outcry against Sin. *Secondly*,—

Faith. Nay, hold, let us consider of one at once: I think you should rather say,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

It shews itself, by inclining the Soul to abhor its Sin.

Talk. Why, what Difference is there between crying out against, and abhorring of Sin?

* *The Crying out against Sin, no Sign of Grace.*

Faith. Oh! a great deal: * A Man may cry out against Sin, of Policy, but he does not abhor it but by Virtue of a good Antipathy against it: I have heard many cry out against Sin in the Pulpit, who can abide it well enough in the Household, and Conversation. *Joseph's* Wives cried out with a loud Voice, as she had been very holy; but she would willingly, notwithstanding that, have committed Uncleanness with him. Some cry out against Sin, even as a Mother cries out against her Child in her Lap, when she calleth it Slut and Naughty Girl and then falls to hugging and kissing it.

Gen. 39. 15.

Talk. You lie at the Catch, I perceive.

Faith. No, not I, I am only forgetting Things right. But what is the second Thing whereby you would prove a Discovery of a Work of Grace in the Heart?

Talk. Great Knowledge of Gospel Mysteries.

† *Great Knowledge no Sign of Grace.*
1 Cor. 13.

Faith. This Sign should have been first or last, it is also false; Knowledge, † great Knowledge, may be obtained in the Mysteries of the Gospel and yet no Work of Grace in the Soul. Yea, if a Man have all Knowledge, may yet be nothing, and so consequently be no Child of God. When Ch

said, *Do you know all these Things?* And the Disciples had answered, *Yes:* He added, *Blessed are ye, if ye do them.* He doth not lay the Blessing in the Knowing of them, but in the Doing of them.

† For there is a Knowledge that is not attended with Doing: *He that knoweth his Master's Will, and doth it not.* A Man may know like an Angel, and yet be no Christian; therefore your Sign of it is not true. Indeed, to *know*, is a Thing that pleaseth Talkers and Boasters; but to *do*, is that which pleaseth God. Not that the Heart can be good without Knowledge; for without that, the Heart is naught. There are therefore two Sorts of Knowledge; Knowledge that resteth in the bare Speculation of Things, and Knowledge that is accompanied with the Grace of Faith and Love; which puts a Man upon doing even the Will of God from the Heart: The first of these will serve the *Talker*; but without the other, the true Christian is not content. * *Give me Understanding, and I shall keep thy Law; yea, I shall observe it with my whole Heart.* True Knowledge attended with Endeavours.

Pfal. cxix. 34.

Talk. You lie at the Catch again; this is not for Edification.

Faith. Well, if you please, propound another Sign how this Work of Grace discovereth itself where it is.

Talk. Not I, for I see we shall not agree.

Faith. Well, if you will not, will you give me Leave to do it?

Talk. You may use your Liberty.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

*One good Sign
of Grace.*

John 16. 8.
Rom. 7. 24.
John 16. 9.
Mark 6. 16.
Ps. 98. 18.
Jer. 31. 19.
Gal. 2. 15.
Acts 4. 12.
Matt. 5. 6.
Rev. 21. 6.

Faith. A Work of Grace in the So
discovereth itself, either to him that ha
it, or to Standers by.

To him that hath it, thus; It giv
him Conviction of Sin, especially the D
filament of his Nature, and the Sin
Unbelief, (for the sake of which he
sure to be damn'd, if he findeth not Me
cy at God's Hand, by Faith in Jes
Christ.) This Sight and Sense of Thin
worketh in him Sorrow and Shame f
Sin: He findeth, moreover, revealed
him the Saviour of the World, and t
absolute Necessity of clossing with him f
Life, at the which he findeth Hungrin
and Thirstings after him; to which Hu
grings, &c. the Promise is made. No
according to the Strength or Weakness
his Faith in his Saviour, so is his Joy a
Peace, so is his Love to Holiness, so a
his Desires to know him more, and al
to serve him in this World. But the
I say, it discovereth itself thus unto hi
yet it is but seldom that he is able
conclude, that this is a Work of Grac
because his Corruptions now, and I
abused Reason, make his Mind to m
judge in this Matter; therefore in hi
that hath this Work, there is required
very sound Judgment, before he can wi
Steadiness conclude that this is a Wo
of Grace.

To others it is thus discovered:

Rom. 10. 10. 1. By an Experimental Confession of
Phil. 8. 17. Faith in Christ. 2. By a Life answerable
Matt. 5. 9. tl

The Pilgrim's Progress.

103

that Confession, to wit, a Life of Holiness; Heart-Holiness, Family-Holiness, if he hath a Family, and by Conversation-Holiness in the World; which in the general teacheth him inwardly to abhor his Sin, and himself for that, in secret; to suppress it in his Family, and to promote Holiness in the World; nor by Talk only, as an Hypocrite or Talkative Person may do, but by a practical Subjection in Faith and Love to the Power of the Word: And now, Sir, as to this brief Description of the Work of Grace, and also the Discovery of it, if you have ought to object, object; if not, then give me Leave to propound to you a Second Question.

Talk. Nay, my Part is not now to object, but to hear: Let me therefore have your Second Question.

Faith. It is this: Do you experience this first Part of the Description of it?

* And doth your Life and Conversation testify the same? Or standeth your Religion in *Word or Tongue*, and not in *Deed* and *Truth*? Pray, if you incline to answer me in this, say no more than you know the God above will say *Amen* to; and also nothing but what your Conscience can justify you in: *For not he that commendeth himself, is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.* Besides, to say, I am thus, and thus, when my Conversation, and all my Neighbours tell me I lye, is great Wickedness.

* *Another good Sign of Grace.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

† Talkative
not pleased
with Faith-
ful's Question.

Talk. † Then *Talkative* at first began to blush; but, recovering himself, thus he replied: You come now to Experience, to Conscience, and God; and appeal to him for Justification of what is spoken: This kind of Discourse I do not expect; nor am I disposed to give Answer to such Questions, because I count not myself bound thereto, unless you take upon you to be a *Catechize* and though you should so do, yet I must refuse to make you my Judge: But I pray you tell me why you ask me such Questions?

* The Reason why Faithful put to him that Question.

Faith. * Because I saw you forward talk, and because I knew not that you had ought else but Notion. Besides, tell you all the Truth, I have heard you, that you are a Man whose Religion lies in Talk, and that your Conversion gives this your Profession the Lye. They say you are a Spot among Christians; and that Religion fareth the worse for your ungodly Conversation; that some already have stumbled at your wicked Ways, and that more are in Danger of being destroyed thereby; your Religion and an Alehouse, and Covetousness, and Uncleanness, and Swearing, and Lying and vain Company-keeping, &c. will stand together. The Proverb is true of you which is said of a Whore, to wit, *that she is a Shame to all Women*, so you are a Shame to all Professors.

Faithful's
plain Dealing
to Talkative.

* Talkative
sings away
from Faithful.

Talk. * Since you are ready to take up Report, and to judge so rashly as you do, I cannot but conclude you are somewhat peevish.

peevish or melancholy Man, not fit to be discoursed with, and so Adieu.

Cbr. Then came up *Christian*, and said to his Brother, I told you how it would happen; your Words and his Lusts could not agree. He had rather leave your Company than reform his Life; but he is gone, as I said; † let him go, the Loss is no Man's but his own; he has saved us the Trouble of going from him; for he continuing (as I suppose he will do) as he is, he would have been but a Blot in our Company: Besides, the Apostle says, *From such withdraw thyself.*

† *A good Riddance.*

Faith. But I am glad we had this little Discourse with him; it may happen that he will think of it again; however, I have dealt plainly with him, and am so clear of his Blood, if he perisheth.

Cbr. You did well to talk so plainly to him as you did; there is but little of this faithful Dealing with Men now-a-days, and that makes Religion to stink so in the Nostrils of many, as it doth; for they are these talkative Fools, whose Religion is only in Word, and are debauched and vain in their Conversation, that (being so much admitted into the Fellowship of the Godly) do puzzle the World, blemish Christianity, and grieve the Sincere. I wish that all Men would deal with such, as you have done; then should they either be made more conformable to Religion, or the Company of Saints would be too hot for them. Then did *Faithful* say,

How

The Pilgrim's Progress.

How Talkative at first lifts up his Plum
How bravely doth he speak! How
presumes

To drive down all before him! But so
As Faithful talks of Heart-work, like
Aston

That's past the Fall, into the Wane he go
And so will hit, but he that Heart-w
knows.

Thus they went on talking of what th
had seen by the Way, and so made t
Way easy, which would otherwise,
doubt, have been tedious to them: I
they went thro' a Wilderness.

Now when they were got almost qu
out of this Wilderness, *Faithful* chanced
cast his Eye back, and espied one comi
after them, and he knew him. Oh! f
Faithful to his Brother, who comes yo
der? Then *Christian* looked, and sa
It is my good Friend *Evangelist*: Ay, a
my good Friend too, said *Faithful*, for 'tw
he that set me the Way to the Gate. Ne
was *Evangelist* come up unto them, a
thus saluted them:

Evangelist
overtakes them
again.

Evan, Peace be with you, dearly b
loved; and Peace be your Helpers.

† They are
glad at the
Sight of him.

Chr. † Welcome, Welcome, my go
Evangelist; the Sight of thy Countenan
brings to my Remembrance thy ancie
Kindness and unwearied Labours for r
Eternal Good.

Fait

The Pilgrim's Progress.

107

Faith. And a thousand times Welcome, said good *Faithful*; thy Company, O sweet *Evangelist*, how desirable is it to us poor Pilgrims!

Evan. Then said *Evangelist*, How hath it fared with you, my Friends, since the Time of our last parting? What have you met with, and how have you behaved yourselves?

Then *Christian* and *Faithful* told him of all Things that had happened to them in the Way; and how, and with what Difficulty they had arrived to that Place.

Evan. * Right glad am I, said *Evan-^{His Exhortation to them.}* *gelist*, not that you have met with Trials, but that you have been Victors, and for that you have; notwithstanding many Weaknesses, continued in the Way to this very Day.

I say, right glad am I of this Thing, John 4. 36.
and that for mine own Sake and yours; Gal. 6. 9.
I have sowed, and you have reaped; and 1 Cor. 9. 24,
the Day is coming, when both he that 25, 26, 27.
sowed, and they that reaped, shall rejoice together; that is, if you hold out; for in due Time ye shall reap, if you faint not. The Crown is before you, and it Rev. 3. 21.
is an incorruptible one; so run, that you may obtain it. Some there be that set out for this Crown, and after they have gone far for it, another comes in and takes it from them: Hold fast therefore that you have, let no Man take your Crown: You are not yet out of the Gun-shot of the Devil: You are not resisted unto Blood, striving against Sin: Let the

The Pilgrim's Progress.

the Kingdom be always before you, and believe stedfastly concerning Things that are invisible: Let nothing that is on this Side the other World get within you: And above all, look well to your own Hearts and to the Lusts thereof, for they are deceitful above all Things; and desperately wicked; set your Faces like a Flint, you have all Power in Heaven and Earth on your Side.

They do thank him for his Exhortation.

Chr. Then *Christian* thanked him for his Exhortation; but told him withal, that they would have him speak farther to them for their Help the rest of the Way; and the rather, for that they well knew that he was a Prophet, and could tell them of Things that might happen unto them, and how they might resist and overcome them. To which Request *Faithful* also consented. So *Evangelist* began as followeth:

** He predicted what Troubles they shall meet with in Vanity Fair, and encourageth them to Steadfastness.*

Evan. * My Sons, you have heard in the Words of the Truth of the Gospel, that you must through many Tribulations enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. And again, That in every City, Bonds and Afflictions abide in you; and therefore you cannot expect that you should go long on your Pilgrimage without them; in some sort or other: You have found something of the Truth of these Testimonies upon you already, and more will immediately follow; for now, as you see, you are almost out of this Wilderness, and therefore you will soon come into a Town that you will by and by see before you; and in that Town you will be hard

hard beset with Enemies, who will strain hard but they will kill you; and be you sure that one or both of you must seal the Testimony which you hold, with Blood; but be you faithful unto Death, and the King will give you a Crown of Life. * He that shall die there, although his Death will be unnatural, and his Pains perhaps great, he will yet have the better of his Fellow; not only because he will be arrived at the Coelestial City soonest, but because he will escape many Miseries, that the other will meet with in the rest of his Journey. But when you are come to the Town, and shall find fulfilled what I have here related, than remember your Friend, and quit yourselves like Men, and commit the Keeping of your Souls to your God in Well-doing, as unto a Faithful Creator.

* He whose Lot it will be there to suffer, will have the Better of his.

Then I saw in my Dream, that when they were got out of the Wilderness, they presently saw a Town before them, and the Name of that Town is *Vanity*; and at the Town there is a Fair kept, called *Vanity-Fair*: It is kept all the Year long; it beareth the Name of *Vanity-Fair*, because the Town where it is kept, is lighter than *Vanity*; and also, because all that is there sold, or that cometh thither, is *Vanity*. As is the Saying of the Wise, *All that cometh is Vanity*.

Psal. 40. 17.
Ecclef. 1.
ch. 2. 11, 17.

* This Fair is no new-erected Business, but a Thing of ancient Standing: I will shew you the Original of it.

* Almost

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* *The Anti-
quity of this
Fair.*

* Almost five Thousand Years ago, there were Pilgrims walking to the Celestial City, as those two honest Persons are; and *Beelzebub*, *Apollyon*, and *Legion*, with their Companions, perceiving by the Path that the Pilgrims made, that their Way to the City lay through this Town of *Vanity*, they contrived here to set up a Fair; a Fair, wherein should be sold all Sorts of *Vanity*, and that it should last all the Year long; therefore, at this Fair, are all such Merchandizes sold, † as Houses, Lands, Trades, Places, Honours, Preferments, Titles, Countries, Kingdoms, Lufts, Pleasures; and Delights of all Sorts, as Whores, Bawds, Wives, Husbands, Children, Masters, Servants, Lives, Blood, Bodies, Souls, Silver, Gold, Pearls, precious Stones, and what not?

† *The Mer-
chandize of
this Fair.*

And moreover, At this Fair there is at all Times to be seen Jugglings, Cheats, Games, Plays, Fools, Apes, Knaves, and Rogues, and that of every Kind.

Here are to be seen too, and that for nothing, Thefts, Murders, Adulteries, False-swearers, and that of a blood-red Colour.

And as in other Fairs of less Moment, there are several Rows and Streets under their proper Names, where such and

*Behold, VANITY-FAIR! the Pilgrims there
Are chain'd, and stow'd beside:
Even so it was our LORD pass'd here,
And on Mount Calvery dy'd.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

and such Wares are vended: So here likewise, you have the proper Places, Rows, Streets, (*viz.* Countries and Kingdoms) where the Wares of this Fair are soonest to be found. * Here is the *British* Row, the *French* Row, the *Italian* Row, the *Spanish* Row, the *German* Row, where several Sorts of Vanities are to be sold, But as in other Fairs, some one Commodity is as the Chief of all the Fair, so the Ware of *Rome* and her Merchandize is greatly promoted in this Fair: Only our *English* Nation, with some others, have taken a Dislike thereat.

* *The Streets of this Fair.*

Now, as I said, the Way to the Celestial City lies just through the Town where this lusty Fair is kept; and he that will go to the City, and yet not go through this Town, must needs go out of the World. † The Prince of Princes himself when here, went through this Town to his own Country, and that upon a *Fair-day* too: Yea, and as I think, it was *Beelzebub*, the Chief Lord of this Fair, that invited him to buy of his Vanities; yea, would have made him Lord of the Fair, would he but have done him Reverence as he went through the Town: Yea, because he was such a Person of Honour, *Beelzebub* had him from Street to Street, and shewed him all the Kingdoms of the World in a little Time, that he might, if possible, allure that Blessed One, to cheapen and buy some of his Vanities; * but he had no Mind to the Merchandize, and therefore left the Town, without laying out so much as one Farthing upon

† *Cor. 5. 10.*

* *Christ went thro' this Fair.*

Mat. 7. 8.

Luke 4. 5, 6.

7.

* *Christ bought nothing in this Fair.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

upon these Vanities. This Fair, therefore is an ancient Thing, of long standing, and a very great Fair.

† *The Pilgrims enter the Fair.*

The Fair in a Hubbub about them.

* *The first Cause of the Hubbub.*

1 Cor. 2. 7, 8.

† *The second Cause of the Hubbub.*

* *Third Cause of the Hubbub.*

† Now these Pilgrims, as I said, must needs go through this Fair. Well, so they did; but behold, even as they entered into the Fair, all the People in the Fair were moved, and the Town itself, as it were, in a Hubbub about them; and that for several Reasons: For,

First, * The Pilgrims were cloathed with such kind of Raiment as was diverse from the Raiment of any that traded in that Fair. The People, therefore, of the Fair, made a great Gazing upon them: Some said they were Fools; some, they were Bedlams; and some, they were Outlandish Men.

Secondly, † And as they wondered at their Apparel, so they did likewise at their Speech; for few could understand what they said; they naturally spoke the Language of *Canaan*; but they that kept the Fair were the Men of this World: So that from one End of the Fair to the other, they seemed Barbarians to each other.

Thirdly, * But that which did not a little amuse the Merchandizers, was, that these Pilgrims set very light by all their Wares; they cared not so much as to look upon them; and if they called upon them to buy, they would put their Fingers in their Ears, and cry, *Turn away mine Eyes from beholding Vanity*; and look upwards, signifying, that their Trade and Traffick was in Heaven.

One

* One chanced mockingly, beholding the Carriages of the Men, to say unto them, *Fourth Cause of the Hubbub.* *What will ye buy?* But they looking gravely upon him, said, *We buy the Truth.* At that, there was an Occasion taken to despise the Men the more; some mocking, some taunting, some speaking reproachfully, and some calling upon others to smite them. At last † Things came to an Hubbub, and great Stir in the Fair, inasmuch that all Order was confounded. Now was Word presently brought to the great One of the Fair, who quickly came down and deputed some of his most trusty Friends to take those Men into an Examination, about whom the Fair was almost overturned. So the Men were * brought to Examination; and they that sat upon them, asked them, Whence they came, whither they went, and what they did there in such an unusual Garb? The Men told them, That † they were Pilgrims and Strangers in the World, and that they were going to their own Country, which was the Heavenly *Jerusalem*; and that they had given no Occasion to the Men of the Town, nor yet to the Merchandizers; thus to abuse them, and to stop them in thier Journey: Except it was for that, when one asked them what they would buy, they said, they would *buy the Truth*. But they that were appointed to examine them, did not believe them to be any other than Bedlams and Mad, or else such as came to put all Things into a Confusion in the *Fair*: Therefore they took them and beat them, and besmeared them

Prov. 23. 23.

They are mocked.

† The Fair in an Hubbub.

* They are examined.

† They tell who they are, and whence they came.

Heb. 11. 13, 14, 15, 16.

They are taken for Madmen.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

** They are put in the Cage.* with Dirt, * and then put them into the Cage, that they might be made a Spectacle to all the Men of the Fair. They

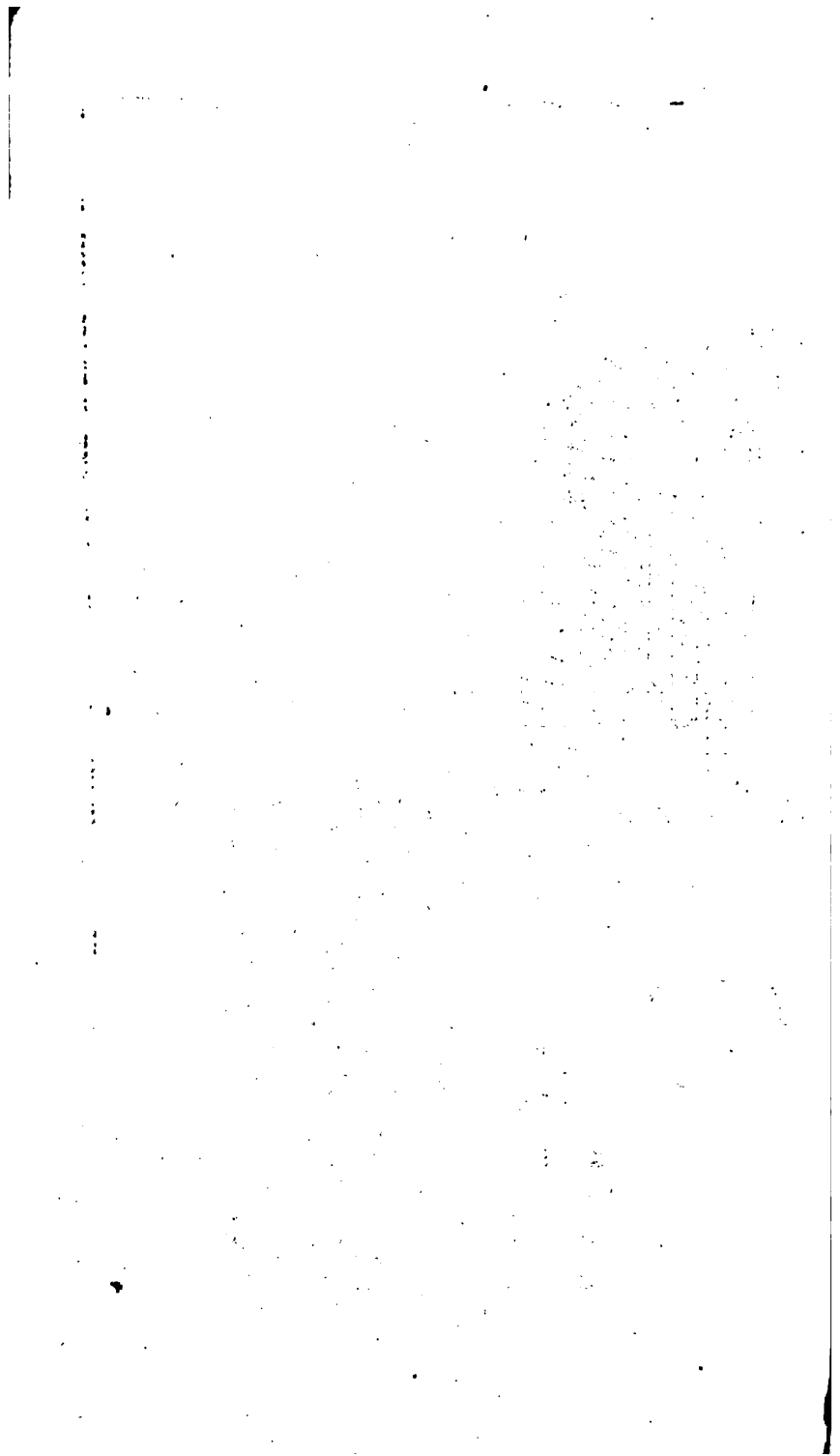
† Their Behaviour in the Cage. therefore, they lay for some time, and were made the Objects of any Man's Sport, or Malice, or Revenge; the great One of the Fair laughing still at all that befell them: † But, the Men being patient, and not rendering Railing for Railing, but contrariwise blessing, and giving good Words for bad, and Kindness for Injuries done;

‡ The Men of the Fair do fall out among themselves about these two Men. ‡ some Men in the Fair that were more observing, and less prejudiced than the rest, began to check and blame the baser Sort for their continual Abuses done by them to the Men: They therefore in angry Manner let fly at them again, counting them as bad as the Men in the Cage, and telling them that they seemed Confederates, and should be made Partakers of their Misfortunes. The others replied, that for ought they could see, the Men were quiet and sober, and intended no Body any Harm: And that there were many that traded in their Fair, that were more worthy to be put into the Cage, yea, and Pillory too, than were the Men that they had abused. Thus, after diverse Words had passed on both Sides, (the Men behaving themselves all the while very wisely and soberly before them) they fell to some Blows among themselves, and did Harm one to another.

** They are made the Authors of this Disturbance.* * Then were these two poor Men brought before their Examiners again, and there charged as being guilty of the late Hubbub



Vanity Fair, and the Pilgrims sufferings there.



The Pilgrim's Progress.

115

but that had been in the Fair. So † they beat them pitifully, and hanged Irons upon them, and led them in Chains up and down the Fair, for an Example and Terror to others, lest any should speak in their Behalf or join themselves unto them. But Christian and Faithful behaved themselves yet more wisely, and received the Ignominy and Shame that was cast upon them, with so much Meekness and Patience, that it * won to their Side (though but few in Comparison of the rest) several of the Men in the Fair. This put the other Party yet into a greater Rage, inso-much that they concluded the Death of these † two Men. Wherefore they threatened, that neither Cage nor Irons should serve their Turn, but that they should die for the Abuse they had done, and for deluding the Men of the Fair.

† They are led up and down the Fair in Chains, for a Terror to others.

* Some Men of the Fair won over to them.

† Their Adversaries resolve to kill them.

Then * were they remanded to the Cage again, until further Order should be taken with them. So they put them in, and made their Feet fast in the Stocks.

* They are again put into the Cage, and after brought to Tryal.

Here therefore they called again to mind what they had heard from their faithful Friend *Evangelist*, and were the more confirmed in their Ways and Sufferings, by what he told them would happen to them. They also now comforted each other, that whose Lot it was to suffer, even he should have the best on't; therefore each Man secretly wished that he might have that Preference: But committing themselves to the All-wise Disposal of Him that ruleth all

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Things, with much Content they abode in the Condition in which they were until they should be otherwise disposed of.

Then a convenient Time being appointed, they brought them forth to their Tryal, in order to their Condemnation. When the Time was come, they were brought before their Enemies, and arraigned. The Judge's Name was Lord *Hate-Good*: Their Indictment was one and the same in Substance, tho' somewhat varying in Form; the Contents whereof was this:

* *Their Indictment.*

* *That they were Enemies to, and Disturbers of their Trade: That they had made Comotions and Divisions in the Town, and had won a Party to their own most dangerous Opinions, in Contempt of the Law of their Prince.*

† *Faithful's Answer for himself.*

Then † *Faithful* began to answer, That he had only set himself against that which had set itself against Him, that is Higher than the Highest. And, said he, as for Disturbance, I make none, being myself a Man of Peace; the Parties that were won to us, were won by beholding our Truth and Innocence, and they are only turned from the worse to the better. And as to the King you talk of, since he is *Beelzebub*, the Enemy of our Lord, I defy him and all his Angels.

Then Proclamation was made, That they that had ought to say for their Lord the King against the Prisoner at the Bar, should forthwith appear, and give in their Evidence. So there came in three Witnesses

nesses, to wit, *Envy*, *Superstition*, and *Pick-thank*: They were then asked, if they knew the Prisoner at the Bar; and what they had to say for their Lord the King against him.

Then stood forth * *Envy*, and said to this Effect: My Lord, I have known this ^{* Envy be-} ^{gini.} Man a long Time, and will attest upon my Oath before this honourable Bench, That he is —

Judge. Hold—Give him his Oath.

So they sware him: Then he said, My Lord, this Man, notwithstanding his plausible Name, is one of the vilest Men in our Country; he neither regardeth Prince nor People; Law nor Custom; but doth all that he can to possess all Men with certain of his Disloyal Notions, which he in the general calls *Principles of Faith and Holiness*: And in particular, I heard him once myself affirm, that Christianity and the Customs of our Town of *Vanity*, were diametrically opposite, and could not be reconciled. By which saying, my Lord, he doth, at once, not only condemn all our laudable Doings, but Us in the doing of them.

Judge. Then did the Judge say to him, Hast thou any more to say?

Envy. My Lord, I could say much more, only I would not be tedious to the Court. Yet if need be, when the other Gentlemen hath given in their Evidence, rather than any thing shall be wanting that will dispatch him, I will enlarge my Testimony against him. So he was bid stand by.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Then they called *Superstition*, and bid him look upon the Prisoner; they also asked, what he could say for their Lord the King against him? Then they sware him; so he began:

* *Superstition follows.*

Super. * My Lord, I have no great Acquaintance with this Man, nor do I desire to have further Knowledge of him; however, this I know, That he is a very pestilent Fellow, from some Discourse that the other Day I had with him, in this Town; for then talking with him, I heard him say, That our Religion was naught, and such by which a Man could by no Means please God. Which Saying of his, my Lord, your Lordship very well knows what necessarily thence will follow, to wit, that we still do worship in vain, are yet in our Sins, and finally shall be damned: And this is that which I have to say.

Then was *Pick-thank* sworn, and bid say what he knew in the Behalf of their Lord the King, against the Prisoner at the Bar.

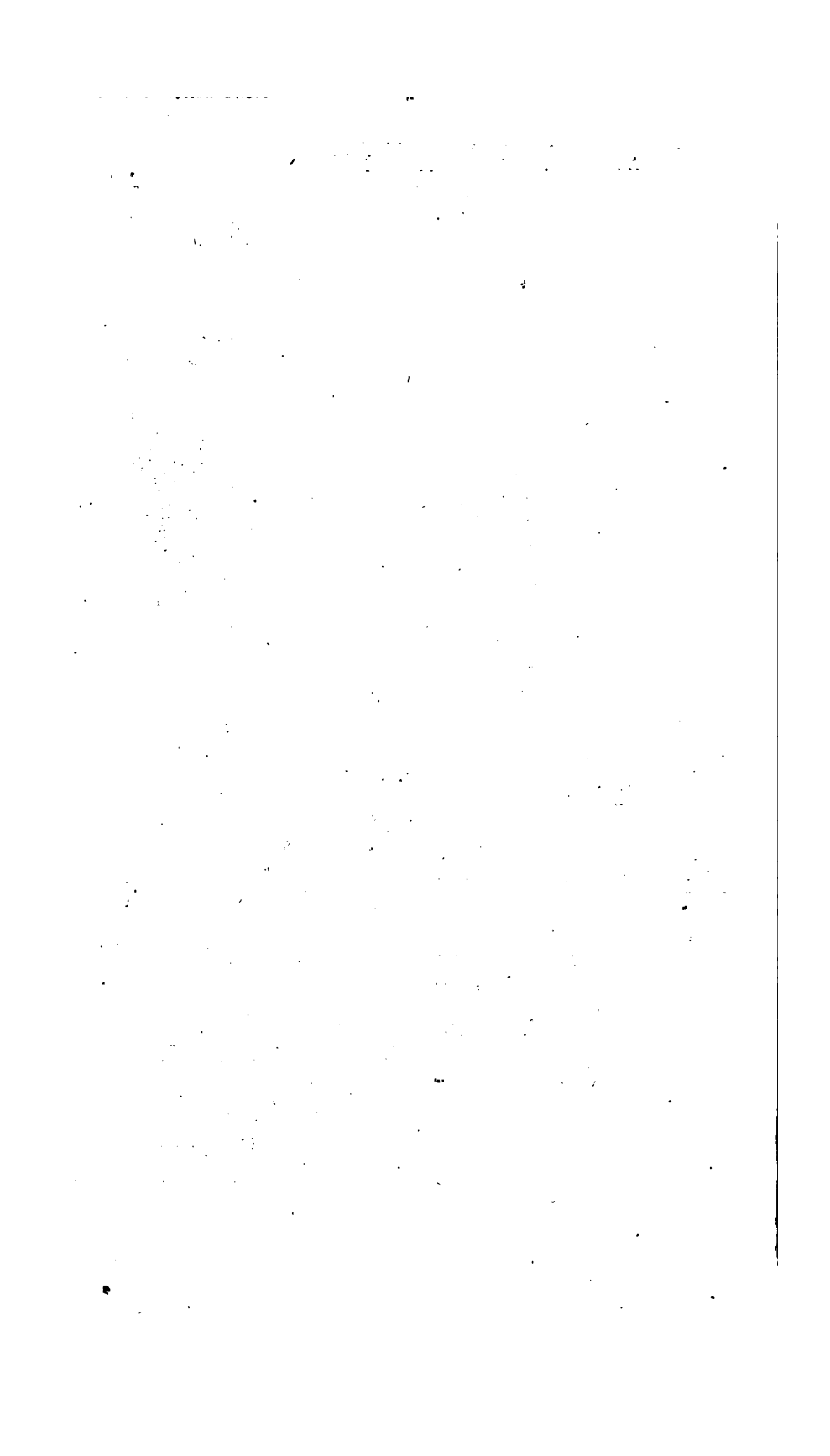
* *Pickthank's Testimony.*

Pick. * My Lord, and you Gentlemen all; this Fellow I have known of a long Time, and have heard him speak Things that ought not to be spoke; for he hath railed on our noble Prince *Beelzebub*, and hath spoken contemptibly of his honourable Friends, whose Names are, the † Lord *Old Man*, the Lord *Carnal Delight*, the Lord *Luxurious*, the Lord *Desire of Vain-Glory*, my old Lord *Leachery*, Sir *Having Greedy*, with all the rest of our Nobility; and he hath said moreover, That if all Men were of his Mind, if possible, there

† *Sins are all Lords and great ones.*



The Trial of Christian and Faithful .



The Pilgrim's Progress.

119

is not one of these Noblemen should have any longer a Being in this Town. Besides, he hath not been afraid to rail on you, my Lord, who are now appointed to be his Judge, calling you an ungodly Villain, with many other such-like vilifying Terms, with which he hath bespattered most of the Gentry of our Town.

When this *Pick-thank* had told his Tale, the Judge directed his Speech to the Prisoner at the Bar, saying, Thou Renegade, Heretick, and Traytor, hast thou heard what these honest Gentlemen have witnessed against thee?

Faith. May I speak a few Words in my own Defence?

Judge. Sirrah, Sirrah, thou deservest to live no longer, but to be slain immediately upon the Place; yet that all Men may see our Gentleness towards thee, let us see what thou hast to say.

Faith. 1. * I say then, in Answer to what *Faithful's* Mr. *Envy* hath spoken, I never said ought *Defence of himself.* but this, That what Rule or Laws, or Custom, -or People, were flat against the Word of God, are diametrically opposite to Christianity. If I have said amiss in this, convince me of my Error, and I am ready here before you to make my Recantation.

*Now, Faithful, play the Man, speak for thy Gods;
Fear not the Wicked's Malice, nor their Rod;
Speak boldly, Man, the Truth is on thy Side;
Die for it, and to Life in Triumph ride.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

2. As to the Second, to wit, Mr. *Superstition*, and his Charge against me, I said only this, That in the Worship of God there is required a Divine Faith; but there can be no Divine Faith without a Divine Revelation of the Will of God. Therefore, whatever is thrust into the Worship of God, that is not agreeable to Divine Revelation, cannot be done but by an humane Faith, which Faith will not be profitable to Eternal Life.

3. As to what Mr. *Pick-thank* hath said, I say (avoiding Terms, as that I am said to rail, and the like) that the Prince of this Town, with all the Rabblement, his Attendants; by this Gentleman-named, are more fit for being in Hell, than in this Town and Country; *and so the Lord have Mercy upon me.*

Then the Judge called to the Jury (who all this while stood by to hear and observe)

† *The Judge's
Speech to the
Jury.*

† Gentlemen of the Jury, you see this Man about whom so great an Uproar hath been made in this Town: You have also heard what these worthy Gentlemen have witnessed against him; Also you have heard his Reply and Confession: It lieth now in your Breasts to hang him, or save his Life; but yet I think meet to instruct you into our Law.

Exod. 1.

There was an Act made in the Days of *Pharaoh* the Great, Servant to our Prince, that lest those of a Contrary Religion should multiply, and grow too strong for him, their Males should be thrown into the River. There was also an Act made in the Days of *Nebuchadnezzar* the Great,

Dan. 3.

another

another of his Servants, that whoever would not fall down and worship his Golden Image, should be thrown into a fiery Furnace. There was also an Act made in the Days of *Darius*, That whoso for some Time called upon any God but him, should be cast into the Lions Den. Now the Substance of these Laws this Rebel has broken, not only in Thought (which is not to be borne) but also in Word and Deed; which must therefore needs be intolerable.

For that of *Pharaoh*, his Law was made upon a Supposition, to prevent Mischief, no Crime being yet apparent; but here is a Crime apparent. For the second and third, you see he disputeth against our Religion; and for the Treason he hath confessed, he deserveth to die the Death.

Then went the Jury out, * whose Names ^{* The Jury and their Names.} were Mr. *Blindman*, Mr. *No-good*, Mr. *Malice*, Mr. *Love-lust*, Mr. *Live-loose*, Mr. *Heady*, Mr. *High-mind*, Mr. *Enmity*, Mr. *Lyar*, Mr. *Cruelty*, Mr. *Hate-light*, and Mr. *Implacable*; who every one gave in his private Verdict against him among themselves, and afterwards unanimously concluded to bring him in Guilty before the Judge. And first among themselves,

* Mr. *Blindman* the Foreman said, I see ^{* Every one's private Verdict.} clearly that this Man is an Heretick. Then said Mr. *No-good*, Away with such a Fellow from the Earth. Ay, said Mr. *Malice*, for I hate the very Looks of him. Then said Mr. *Love-lust*, I could never endure him. Nor I, said Mr. *Live-loose*, for he would always be condemning my
Way

The Pilgrim's Progress.

way. Hang him, hang him, said Mr. *Heady*. A forry Scrub, said Mr. *High-mind*. My Heart riseth against him, said Mr. *Enmity*. He is a Rogue, said Mr. *Lyar*. Hanging is too good for him, said Mr. *Cruelty*. Let us dispatch him out of the Way, said Mr. *Hate-light*. Then said Mr. *Implacable*, Might I have all the World given me, I could not be reconciled to him, therefore let us forthwith bring him in Guilty of Death. * And so they did; therefore he was presently condemned to be had from the Place where he was, to the Place from whence he came, and there to be put to the most cruel Death that could be invented.

* They conclude to bring him in Guilty of Death.

They therefore brought him out, to do with him according to their Law; † and first they scourged him, then they buffeted him, then they lanced his Flesh with Knives; after that they stoned him with Stones, then pricked him with their Swords; and last of all, they burnt him to Ashes at the Stake. Thus came *Faithful* to his End.

† The cruel Death of Faithful.

* Chariot and Horses take away Faithful.

* Now I saw, that there stood behind the Multitude a Chariot and a Couple of Horses waiting for *Faithful*, who (so soon as his Adversaries had dispatched him) was taken up into it, and straightway was carried up through the Clouds with Sound

*Brave Faithful! Bravely done in Word and Deed!
 Judge, Witnesses, and Jury have, instead
 Of overcoming thee, but shewn their Rage,
 When they are dead, thou'lt live from Age to Age.*

of



The cruel Death of Faithful .



of Trumpet, the nearest Way to the Cœlestial Gate. * But as for *Christian* he had some respite, and was remanded back to Prison; so he there remained for a Space: But he that over-rules all Things, having the Power of their Rage in his own Hand, so wrought it about, that *Christian* for that Time escaped them, and went his Way.

And as he went he sung, saying;

† *Well Faithful, thou hast faithfully profest* † *The Song*
Unto thy Lord, with whom thou shalt be blest; † *that Christian*
When Faithless ones, with all their vain † *made of Faith-*
Delights, † *ful after his*
Are crying out under their Hellish Plights: † *Death.*
Sing, Faithful, sing, and let thy Name
survive;
For tho' they kill'd thee, thou art yet alive.

Now I saw in my Dream that *Christian* went not forth alone; for there was one whose Name was * *Hopeful*, (being so made by the beholding of *Christian* and *Faithful* in their Words and Behaviour, in their Sufferings at the Fair) who joined himself unto him, and entering into a Brotherly Covenant, told him that he would be his Companion. Thus one died to bear Testimony to the Truth, and another rises out of his Ashes to be a Companion with *Christian* in his Pilgrimage. † This † *There are*
Hopeful also told *Christian*, that there † *more of the*
were many more of the Men in the Fair † *Men in the*
that would take their Time, and follow † *Fair will fol-*
after, † *low,*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

So I saw, that quickly after they were got out of the Fair they overtook one that was going before them, whose Name

* *They over-* was * *By-ends*, so they said to him, What
take By-ends.

Countryman, Sir? and how far go you this Way? He told them, that he came from the Town of *Fair-Speech*, and he was going to the Cœlestial City, but told them not his Name.

Prov. 26. 25. From *Fair-Speech*, said *Christian*! is there any Good that lives there?

By-ends. Yes, said *By-ends*, I hope.

Chr. Pray, Sir, what may I call you?

By-ends. I am a Stranger to you, and
By-ends. I am a Stranger to you, and
both to tell his you to me.: If you be going this Way, I
Name. shall be glad of your Company: If not, I must be content.

Chr. This Town of *Fair-speech*, said *Christian*, I have heard of, and, as I remember, they say it's a wealthy Place.

By-ends. Yes, I will assure you that it is, and I have very many rich Kindred there.

Chr. Pray who are your Kindred there, if a Man may be so bold?

By-ends. Almost the whole Town: And in particular my Lord *Turn-about*, my Lord *Time-server*, my Lord *Fair-speech*, (from whose Ancestors that Town first took its Name:) Also Mr. *Smooth-man*, Mr. *Facing-both-ways*, Mr. *Any-thing*, and the Parson of our Parish, Mr. *Two-tongues*, was my Mother's own Brother by Father's Side: And, to tell you the Truth, I am become a Gentleman of good Quality, yet my Great Grandfather was but a Waterman, looking one Way and rowing another, and

I got

I got most of my Estate by the same Occupation.

Cbr. Are you a marry'd Man?

By-ends, Yes, †, and my Wife is a very † *The Wife and Kindred of By-ends.* vertuous Woman, the Daughter of a vertuous Woman; she was my Lady *Feigning's* Daughter; therefore she came of a very honourable Family, and is arrived to such a Pitch of Breeding, that she knows how to carry it to all, even to Prince and Peasant. * 'Tis true, we somewhat differ * *Where By-ends differs from others in Religion.* in Religion from those of the Stricter Sort, yet but in two small Points: First, We never strive against Wind and Tide. Secondly, We are always most zealous when Religion goes in his Silver Slippers; we love much to walk with him in the Street, if the the Sun shines, and the People applaud him.

Then *Christian* stept a little aside to his Fellow *Hopeful*, saying, it runs in my Mind that this is one *By-ends* of *Fair-speech*; and if it be he, we have as very a Knave in our Company as dwelleth in all these Parts. Then said *Hopeful*, Ask him, methinks he should not be ashamed of his Name. So *Christian* came up with him again, and said, Sir, You talk as if you knew something more than all the World doth; and, if I take not my Mark amiss, I deem I have half a Guess of you: Is not your Name Mr. *By-ends* of *Fair-speech*?

By-ends. This is not my Name, but indeed it is a Nick-name that is given me by some that cannot abide me, and I must be content to bear it as a Reproach, as other

The Pilgrim's Progress.

other good Men have borne theirs before me.

Chr. But did you never give an Occasion to Men to call you by this Name?

*How By-ends
got his Name.*

By-ends. Never, never! The worst that ever I did to give them an Occasion to give me this Name was, that I had always the Luck to jump in my Judgment with the present Way of the Times, whatever it was, and my Chance was to get thereby; but if Things are thus cast upon me, let me count them a Blessing; but let not the Malicious load me therefore with Re-proach.

Chr. I thought indeed that you were the Man that I heard of; and to tell you what I think, I fear this Name belongs to you more properly than you are willing we should think it doth.

** He desires
to keep Com-
pany with
Christian.*

By-ends. Well, if you will thus imagine, I cannot help it: * You will find me a fair Company-keeper, if you will still admit me your Associate.

Chr. If you will go with us, you must go against Wind and Tide; the which, I perceive, is against your Opinion: You must also own Religion in his Rags as well as when in his Silver Slippers; and stand by him too when bound in Irons, as well as when he walketh the Streets with Applause.

By-ends. You must not impose, nor lord it over my Faith; leave me to my Liberty, and let me go with you.

Chr. Not a Step farther, unless you will do in what I propound as we.

Then

Then said *By-ends*, I shall never desert my old Principles, since they are harmless and profitable. † If I may not go with you, I must do as I did before you overtook me, even go by myself, until some overtake me that will be glad of my Company.

† *By-ends and Christian part.*

Then I saw in my Dream, that *Christian* and *Hopeful* forsook him, and kept their Distance before him; but one of them looking back, saw three Men following *Mr. By-ends*, and behold as they came up with him, he made them a very low Congee; and they also gave him a Compliment. † The Mens Names were *Mr. Hold-the-World*, *Mr. Money-love*, and *Mr. Save-all*; Men that *Mr. By-ends* had formerly been acquainted with; for in their Minority they were School-Fellows, and taught by one *Mr. Gripe-man*, a School-master in *Love-gain*, which is a Market-Town in the County of *Coveting*, in the North. This School-master taught them the Art of getting, either by Violence, Cozenage, Flattery, Lying, or by putting on a Guise of Religion; and these four Gentlemen had attained much of the Art of their Master, so that they could each of them have kept such a School themselves.

† *He has new Companions.*

Well, when they had, as I said, thus saluted each other, *Mr. Money-love* said to *Mr. By-ends*, Who are they upon the Road before us? For *Christian* and *Hopeful* were yet within View.

By-ends.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

* By-ends;
Character of
the Pilgrim.

By-ends. * They are a Couple of far Country-men, that after their Mode are going on Pilgrimage.

Money-love. Alas! why did not they stay that we might have had their good Company; for they, and we, and you, Sir, I hope, are going on Pilgrimage.

By-ends. We are so, indeed; but the Men before us are so rigid, and love so much their own Notions, and do also so lightly esteem the Opinion of others, that let a Man be never so godly, yet if he jumps not with them in all Things, they thrust him quite out of their Company.

Mr. Save-all. That's bad; but we read of some that are righteous over-much, and such Mens Rigidness prevails with them to judge and condemn all but themselves; but I pray what, and how many were the Things wherein you differed?

By-ends. Why they, after their headstrong Manner, conclude that it is their Duty to rush on their Journey all Weathers, and I am for waiting for Wind and Tide. They are for hazarding all for God at a Clap, and I am for taking all Advantages to secure my Life and Estate. They are for holding their Notions, tho' all other Men be against them; but I am for Religion, in what, and so far as the Times and my Safety will bear it. They are for Religion when in Rags and Contempt, but I am for him when he walks in his Golden Slippers in the Sunshine, and with Applause.

Mr.

Mr. *Hold-the-World*. Ay, and hold you there still, good Mr. *By-ends*; for, for my Part, I can count him but a Fool, that having the Liberty to keep what he has, shall be so unwise as to lose it. Let us be wise as Serpents; it's best to make Hay when the Sun shines; you see how the Bee lieth still all Winter, and bestirs her only when she can have Profit with Pleasure. God sends sometimes Rain, and sometimes Sun-shine: If they be such Fools to go through the first, yet let us be content to take fair Weather along with us. For my Part, I like that Religion best, that will stand with the Security of God's good Blessings unto us: For who can imagine, that is ruled by his Reason, since God has bestowed upon us the good Things of this Life, but that he would have us keep them for his Sake. *Abraham* and *Solomon* grew rich in Religion. And *Job* says, that a good Man shall lay up Gold as Dust. But he must not be such as the Men before us, if they be as you have described them.

Mr. *Save-all*. I think that we are all agreed in this Matter, and therefore there needs no more Words about it.

Mr. *Money-love*. No, there needs no more Words about this Matter indeed; for he that believes neither Scripture nor Reason, (and you see we have both on our Side) neither knows his own Liberty, nor seeks his own Safety.

Mr. *By-ends*. My Brethren, we are, as you see, going all on Pilgrimage, and for our better Diversion from Things that

The Pilgrim's Progress.

are bad, give me Leave to propound un-
to you this Question.

Suppose a Man, a Minister or a Trades-
man, &c. should have an Advantage lie
before him, to get the good Blessings of
this Life, yet so as that he can by no
Means come by them, except in Appear-
ance, at least, he becomes extraordinary
zealous in some Points of Religion that
he meddled not with before: May he not
use this Means to attain his End, and yet
be a right honest Man?

Mr. *Money-love*. I see the Bottom of
your Question; and, with these Gentle-
men's good Leave, I will endeavour to
shape you an Answer: And first, to speak
to your Question as it concerns a *Minister*
himself. Suppose a Minister, a worthy
Man, possess'd but of a very small Bene-
fice, and has in his Eye a greater, more
fat and plump by far; he has also now an
Opportunity of getting it, yet so as by
being more studious, by preaching more
frequently and zealously, and, because the
Temper of the People requires it, by
altering of some of his Principles; for
my Part, I see no Reason but a Man may
do this; (provided he has a Call) ay, and
a great deal more besides, and yet be an
honest Man. For why?

1. His Desire of a greater Benefice is
lawful, (this cannot be contradicted) since
it is set before him by Providence; so
then he may get it if he can, making no
Question for Conscience-sake.

2. Be-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

131

2. Besides, his Desire after that Benefice makes him more studious, a more zealous Preacher, &c. and so makes him a better Man, yea, makes him better improve his Parts, which is according to the Mind of God.

3. Now as for his complying with the Temper of his People, by deserting, to serve, some of his Principles, this argueth, 1. That he is of a Self-denying Temper. 2. Of a sweet and winning Deportment. 3. And so more fit for the Ministerial Function.

4. I conclude then, that a Minister that changes a *Small* for a *Great*, should not, for so doing, be judged as Covetous; but rather, since he is improved in his Parts and Industry hereby, be counted as one that pursues his Call, and the Opportunity put into his Hand to do Good.

And now to the second Part of the Question, which concerns the *Tradesman* you mentioned: Suppose such a one to have but a poor Employ in the World, but, by becoming Religious, he may mend his Market, perhaps get a rich Wife, or more and far better Customers to his Shop. For my Part, I see no Reason but this may be lawfully done. For why?

1. To become *Religious* is a Virtue, by what Means soever a Man becomes so.

2. Nor is it unlawful to get a rich Wife, or more Custom to my Shop.

3. Besides, the Man that gets these by becoming Religious, gets that which is

The Pilgrim's Progress.

good of them that are good, by becoming good himself; so then here is a good Wife, and good Customers, and good Gain, and all these by becoming Religious, which is good: Therefore, to become Religious to get all these, is a good and profitable Design.

This Answer thus made by this Mr. *Money-love* to Mr. *By-ends's* Question, was highly applauded by them all; wherefore they concluded upon the Whole, that it was most wholesome and advantageous. And because, as they thought, no Man was able to contradict it, and because *Christian* and *Hopeful*, were yet within Call, they jointly agreed to assault them with the Question as soon as they overtook them; and the rather because they had opposed Mr. *By-ends* before. So they called after them, and they stopt and stood still till they came up to them; but they concluded, as they went, that not Mr. *By-ends*, but old Mr. *Hold-the-World* should propound the Question to them, because, as they supposed, their Answer to him would be without the Remainder of that Heat that was kindled between Mr. *By-ends* and them, at their parting a little before.

So they came up to each other, and after a short Salutation, Mr. *Hold-the-World* propounded the Question to *Christian* and his Fellow, and bid them to answer it if they could.

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

133

Cbr. Then said *Christian*, Even a Babe in Religion may answer Ten Thousand such Questions. For, if it be unlawful to follow Christ for Loaves, as it is, *John 6.* how much more abominable is it to make of him and Religion a Stalking-horse to get and enjoy the World? Nor do we find any other than Heathens, Hypocrites, Devils, and Witches, that are of this Opinion.

1. *Heathens*; for when *Hamor* and *Sechem* had a Mind to the Daughter and Cattle of *Jacob*, and saw that there was no Way for them to come at them, but by becoming circumcised; they said to their Companions: If every Male of us be circumcised, as they are circumcised, shall not their Cattle, and their Substance, and every Beast of theirs be ours? Their Daughters and their Cattle were that which they fought to obtain, and their Religion the Stalking-horse they made use of to come at them. Read the whole Story, *Gen. 34. 20, 21, 22, 23.*

2. The Hypocritical *Pharisees* were also of this Religion: Long Prayers were their Pretence; but to get Widow's Houses was their Intent, and greater Damnation was from God their Judgment. *Luke 20. 46, 47.*

3. *Judas* the Devil was also of this Religion; he was Religious for the Bag, that he might be possessed of what was therein; but he was lost, cast away, and the very Son of Perdition.

K 3

4. *Simon*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

4. *Simon* the Witch was of this Religion too; for he would have had the Holy Ghost, that he might have got Money therewith, and his Sentence from *Peter's* Mouth was according, *Acts* 8. 19, 20, 21, 22.

5. Neither will it go out of my Mind, but that that Man that takes up Religion for the World, will throw away Religion for the World; for so surely as *Judas* designed the World in becoming Religious, so surely did he also sell Religion and his Master for the same. To answer the Question therefore affirmatively, as I perceive you have done; and to accept of, as authentick, such Answer, is both Heathenish, Hypocritical and Devilish; and your Reward will be according to your Works. Then they stood staring one upon another, but had not wherewith to answer *Christian*. *Hopeful* also approved of the Soundness of *Christian's* Answer; so there was a great Silence among them. Mr, *By-ends* and his Company also staggered and kept behind, that *Christian* and *Hopeful* might out-go them. Then said *Christian* to his Fellow: If these Men cannot stand before the Sentence of Men, what will they do with the Sentence of God? And if they are mute when dealt with by Vessels of Clay, what will they do when they shall be rebuked by the Flames of a Devouring Fire?

* *The Ease that Pilgrims have, is but little in this Life.*

Then * *Christian* and *Hopeful* out-went them again, and went till they came at a delicate Plain, called *Ease*, where they went

went with much Content; but that Plain was but narrow, so they were quickly got over it. Now at the farther Side of that Plain was a little † Hill called *Lucre*, † *Lucre-Hill* and in that Hill a *Silver Mine*, which some ^{a dangerous} of them that had formerly gone that Way, ^{Hill.} because of the Rarity of it, had turned aside to see; but going too near the Brink of the Pit, the Ground, being deceitful under them, broke, and they were slain: Some also had been maimed there, and could not, to their Dying-day, be their own Men again.

Then I saw in my Dream, that a little off the Road, over-against the *Silver Mine*, stood * *Demas* (Gentleman-like) to call ^{* Demas at the Hill Lucre.} Passengers to come and see; who said to *Christian* and his Fellow, † Ho! turn aside † ^{† He calls to Christian and Hopeful to come to him.} hither, and I will shew you a Thing.

Chr. What Thing is so deserving, as to turn us out of the Way?

Demas. Here is a *Silver Mine*, and some digging in it for Treasure; if you will come, with a little Pains, you may richly provide for yourselves.

Hope. * Then said *Hopeful*, Let us go ^{* Hopeful tempted to go, but Christian holds him back.} see.

Chr. Not I, said *Christian*, I have heard of this Place before now, and how many have there been slain; and besides, that Treasure is a Snare to those that seek it; for it hindereth them in their Pilgrimage.

Then *Christian* called to *Demas*, saying, Is not the Place dangerous? Hath it not ^{Hosea 4. 18.} hindered many in their Pilgrimage?

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Demas. Not very dangerous, except to those that are careless; but withal, he blushed as he spake.

Chr. Then said *Christian* to *Hopeful*, Let us not stir a Step, but still keep on our Way.

Hope. I will warrant you, when *By-ends* comes up, if he hath the same Invitation as we, he will turn in thither to see.

Chr. No doubt thereof, for his Principles lead him that Way, and a hundred to one but he diés there.

Demas. Then *Demas* called again, saying: But will you not come over and see?

* *Christian*
roundeth up
Demas.
2 Tim. 4. 10.

Chr. Then * *Christian*, roundly answering, saying, *Demas*, Thou art an Enemy to the right Ways of the Lord of this Way, and hast been already condemned for thine own turning aside, by one of his Majesty's Judges: And why seekest thou to bring us into the like Condemnation? Besides, if we at all turn aside, our Lord the King will certainly hear thereof, and will there put us to Shame, where we would stand with Boldness before him:

Demas cried again, That he also was one of their Fraternity; and that if they would tarry a little, he also himself would walk with them.

Chr. Then said *Christian*, What is thy Name? Is it not the same by the which I have called thee?

Demas. Yes, my Name is *Demas*, I am the Son of *Abraham*.

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

137

Cbr. I know you; *Gebazi* was your ^{2 Kings 5. 20.} Great Grandfather, and *Judas* your Fa- ^{Matt. 26. 14.} ther, and you have trod in their Steps; it is ^{15.} but a Devilish Prank that thou usest: Thy ^{ch. 27. 1, 2,} Father was hang'd for a Traitor, and thou ^{3, 5, 6.} deservest no better Reward. Assure thyself, that when we come to the King, we will tell him of this thy Behaviour. Thus they went their Way.

By this Time *By-ends* and his Companions were come again within Sight, and they at the * first Beck went over to *De- * By-ends* *mas.* Now, whether they fell into the ^{goes over} Pit by looking over the Brink thereof, or ^{Demas.} whether they went down to dig; or whether they were smother'd in the Bottom by the Damps that commonly arise, of these Things, I am not certain; but this I observed, that they never were seen again in the Way. Then sang *Christian* :

By-ends and Silver Demas both agree;
One calls, the other runs, that he may be
A Sbarer in his Lucre; so these do
Take up in this World, and no farther go.

Now I saw, that just on the other Side of this Plain, the Pilgrims came to a Place where stood an old *Monument*, hard- ^{They see a} by the Highway Side, at the Sight of ^{strange Monu-} which they were both concerned, because ^{ment.} of the Strangeness of the Form thereof, for it seemed to them as if it had been a *Woman* transformed into the Shape of a Pillar; here therefore they stood looking, and looking upon it, but could not for

The Pilgrim's Progress.

for a Time tell what they should make thereof: At last *Hopeful* espied written upon the Head thereof, a Writing in an unusual Hand; but he being no Scholar, called to *Christian* (for he was learned) to see if he could pick out the Meaning: so he came, and after a little laying of the Letters together, he found the same to be this, *Remember Lot's Wife*. So he read it to his Fellow; after which they both

* Gen. 19. concluded that that was the * Pillar of
26. Salt into which *Lot's Wife* was turned, for looking back with a *covetous Heart*, when she was going from *Sodom* for Safety. Which sudden and amazing Sight gave them Occasion of this Discourse.

Chr. Ah, my Brother! this is a seasonable Sight; it came opportunely to us after the Invitation which *Demas* gave us to come over to view the Hill *Lucre*; and had we gone over, as he desired us, and as thou wast inclined to do, (my Brother) we had, for ought I know, been made like this Woman, a Spectacle for those that shall come after, to behold.

Hope. I am sorry that I was so foolish, and am made to wonder that I am not now as *Lot's Wife*; for wherein was the Difference between her Sin and mine? She only looked back, and I had a Desire to go see: Let Grace be adored, and let me be ashamed, that ever such a Thing should be in mine Heart.

Chr. Let us take Notice of what we see here, for our Help for Time to come: This Woman escaped one Judgment, for she fell not by the Destruction of *Sodom*; yet she

she was destroyed by another; as we see, she is turned into a Pillar of Salt.

Hope. True, and she may be to us both *Caution*, and *Example*; *Caution*, that we should shun her Sin; or a Sign of what Judgment will overtake such as shall not be prevented by this *Caution*: So *Korah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*, with the Two Hundred and Fifty Men that perished in their Sin, did also become * a Sign or Example. Num. 26. to beware. But above all, I muse at one ^{9, 10.} Thing, to wit, how *Demas* and his Fellows can stand so confidently yonder to look for that Treasure, which this Woman, but for looking behind her after, (for we read not that she stept one Foot out of the Way) was turned into a Pillar of Salt; especially since the Judgment which overtook her did make her an Example, within Sight of where they are: For they cannot choose but see her did they but lift up their Eyes.

Chr. It is a Thing to be wondered at, and it argueth that their Hearts are grown desperate in the Case; and I cannot tell who to compare them to so fitly, as to them that pick Pockets in the Presence of the Judge, or that will cut Purfes under the Gallows. It is said of the Men of *Sodom*, that they were Sinners exceedingly, be- Gen. 13. 13. cause they were Sinners before the Lord, that is, in his Eye-sight, and notwithstanding the Kindnesses that he had shewed them; for the Land of *Sodom* was now like the * *Garden of Eden heretofore*. This * Ver. 10. therefore provoked him the more to Jealousy, and made their Plague as hot as the
the

The Pilgrim's Progress.

the Fire of the Lord out of Heaven could make it. And it is most rationally to be concluded, That such, even such as these are, that shall sin in the Sight, yea, and that too in Despight of such Examples, that are set continually before them to caution them to the contrary, must be Partakers of the severest Judgments.

Hope. Doubtless thou hast said the Truth; but what a Mercy is it, that neither thou, but especially I, am not made myself this Example? This ministreth Occasion to us to thank God, to fear before him, and always to remember *Lot's Wife*.

A River.
Psal. 65. 9.
Rev. 22. 9.
Ezek. 47.

I saw then, that they went on their Way to a pleasant River; which *David the King* called *the River of God*; but *John*, *the River of the Water of Life*. Now their Way lay just upon the Bank of this River: Here therefore *Christian* and his Companion

Trees by the River.
The Fruit and Leaves of the Trees.

walked with great Delight; they drank also of the Water of the River, which was pleasant, and enlivening to their weary Spirits: Besides, on the Banks of this River, on either Side, were *green Trees*, for all manner of Fruit; and the Leaves they eat to prevent Surfeits, and other Diseases that are incident to those that heat their Blood by Travels. On either Side of the River was also a Meadow, curiously beautified with Lilies; and it was green all the Year long. In this Meadow they lay down and slept: for here they might *lie down safely*. When they awoke, they gathered again of the Fruit of the Trees, and drank again of the Water of the River, and then lay down again to sleep.

A Meadow in which they lie down to Sleep.
Psal. 22.
Isa. 14. 30.

Thus

The Pilgrim's Progress.

141

Thus they did several Days and Nights.
Then they sang :

*Behold ye, how these Crystal Streams do
glide,
To comfort Pilgrims, by the Highway Side.
The Meadows green besides their fragrant
Smell,
Yield Dainties for them : And he that can
tell
What pleasant Fruit, yea, Leaves, these
Trees do yield,
Will soon sell all, that he may buy this
Field.*

So when they were disposed to go on,
(for they were not as yet at their Journey's End) they eat and drank, and departed.

Now I beheld in my Dream, that they had not journeyed far, but the River and the Way for a Time parted, at which they were not a little sorry, yet they durst not go out of the Way. Now the Way from the River was rough, and their Feet tender by reason of their Travels : *So the Souls of the Pilgrims were much discouraged because of the Way.* Wherefore still as they went on, they wished for a better Way. Now a little before them, there was on the Left Hand of the Road a Meadow, and a Stile to go over into it, *By-path-Meadow.* and that Meadow is called *By-Path-Meadow.* Then said Christian to his Fellow, *One Temptation makes way for another.* If this Meadow lieth along by our Way-
side, ther.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

side, let us go over into it. Then he went to the Stile to see, and behold a Path lay along by the Way on the other Side of the Fence. 'Tis according to my Wish, said *Christian*, here is the easiest going; come, good *Hopeful*, and let us go over.

Hope. But how if this Path should lead us out of the Way?

Strong Christians may lead weak ones out of the Way.

Chr. That's not likely, said the other. Look, doth it not go along by the Way-side? So *Hopeful*, being persuaded by his Fellow, went after him over the Stile. When they were gone over, and were got into the Path, they found it very easy for their Feet; and withal, they looking before them, espied a Man walking as they did, (and his Name was *Vain Confidence*) so they called after him, and asked him, whither that Way led? He said, to the *Cœlestial Gate*: * Look, said *Christian*, did not I tell you so? By this you may see we are right, so they followed, and he went before them. But behold, the Night came on, and it grew very dark; so that they that were behind lost the Sight of him that went before.

* See what it is too suddenly to fall in with Strangers.

Isa. 9. 16.
A Pit to catch the Vain-glorious in.

He therefore that went before (*Vain Confidence* by Name) not seeing the Way before him, fell into a deep Pit, which was on Purpose there made by the Prince of those Grounds, to catch *Vain-glorious* Fools withal, and was dashed in Pieces with his Fall.

Reasoning between Christian and Hopeful.

Now *Christian* and his Fellow heard him fall. So they called to know the Matter, but there was none to answer, only they heard

heard a Groaning. Then said *Hopeful*, Where are we now? Then was his Fellow silent, as mistrusting that he had led him out of the Way; and now it began to rain, and thunder and lighten in a most dreadful Manner; and the Waters rose again.

Then *Hopeful* groaned in himself, saying, *Oh, that I had kept on my Way!*

Chr. Who would have thought that this Path should have led us out of the Way?

Hope. I was afraid on't at the very first, and therefore gave you that gentle Caution. I would have spoke plainer, but that you are older than I.

Chr. Good Brother, be not offended, I am sorry I have brought thee out of the Way, and that I have put thee into such imminent Danger; pray, my Brother, forgive me; I did not do it of an evil Intent.

Hope. Be comforted, my Brother, for I forgive thee; and believe too, that this shall be for our Good.

Chr. I am glad I have met with a merciful Brother: But we must not stand thus; let's try to go back again.

Hope. But, good Brother, let me go before.

Chr. No, if you please, let me go first; that if there be any Danger, I may be first therein, because by my Means we are both gone out of the Way.

Hope. No, said *Hopeful*, you shall not go first; for your Mind being troubled, may lead you out of the Way again. Then for their Encouragement, they heard the Voice

Jer. 31. 1.
They are in
Danger of
Drowning as
they go back

Voice of one saying, *Let thine Heart be towards the High-way; even the Way that thou wentest, turn again.* But by this time the Waters were greatly risen, by reason of which, the Way of going back was very dangerous. (Then I thought that it is easier going out of the Way when we are in, than going in when we are out.) Yet they adventured to go back, but it was so dark, and the Flood was so high, that in their going back, they had like to have been drowned nine or ten Times.

They sleep in
the Grounds of
Giant Despair.

Neither could they, with all the Skill they had, get again to the Stile that Night. Wherefore at last, lighting under a little Shelter, they sat down there 'till the Day-break: But being weary, they fell asleep. Now there was, not far from the Place where they lay, a Castle, called *Doubting-Castle*, the Owner whereof was *Giant Despair*, and it was in his Grounds they now were sleeping; wherefore he getting up in the Morning early, and walking up and down in his Fields, caught *Christian* and *Hopeful* asleep in his Grounds: Then with a *grim* and *surly* Voice, he bid them awake, and asked them whence they were, and what they did in his Grounds. They told him they were Pilgrims, and that they had lost their Way. Then said the *Giant*, You have this Night trespassed on me by trampling and lying on my Ground, and therefore you must go along with me. So they were forced to go because he was stronger than they. They also had but little to say, for they knew themselves in a Fault. The *Giant* therefore drove them
them

He finds them
in his Ground,
and carries
them to Doubt-
ing-Castle.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

145

them before him, and put them into his ^{The Grievous} Castle, in a very dark Dungeon, nasty and ^{mess of their} stinking to the Spirits of these two Men : ^{Imprisonment.} P^{sal.} 88. 16.

Here then they lay from *Wednesday* Morning 'till *Saturday* Night without one Bit of Bread, or Drop of Drink, or Light, or any to ask how they did : They were therefore here in evil Case, and were far from Friends and Acquaintance. Now in this Place *Christian* had double Sorrow, because 'twas through his unadvised Haste that they were brought into this Distress.

Now Giant *Despair* had a Wife, and her Name was *Diffidence* : So when he was gone to Bed, he told his Wife what he had done ; to wit, That he had taken a Couple of Prisoners, and cast them into his *Dungeon*, for trespassing on his Grounds. Then he asked her also, what he had best to do further to them. So she asked him what they were, whence they came, and whether they were bound ? and he told her. Then she counselled him, that when he arose in the Morning, he should beat them without Mercy : So when he arose, he getteth him a grievous Crab-Tree Cudgel, and goes down into the *Dungeon* to them, and there first falls to rating of them as if they were Dogs, although they gave him ^{On Thursday} never a Word of Distaste : Then he falls ^{Giant Despair} upon them, and beat them fearfully, in such ^{beats his Pri-} Sort, ^{soners.}

L

*The Pilgrims now, to gratify the Flesh,
Will seek it's Ease ; but, oh ! how they afresh
Do hereby plunge themselves new Grievs into !
Who seek to please the Flesh, themselves undo.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

fort, that they were not able to help themselves, or turn them upon the Floor. This done, he withdraws, and leaves them there to condole their Misery, and to mourn under their Distress: So all that Day they spent their Time in nothing but Sighs and bitter Lamentations. The next Night she talked with her Husband about them further, and understanding that they were yet alive, did advise him to counsel them to make away themselves: So when Morning was come, he goes to them in a surly Manner, as before, and perceiving them to be very sore with the Stripes that he had given them the Day before, he told them, That since they were never like to come out of that Place, their only Way would be forthwith to make an end of themselves, either with Knife, Halter, or Poison: For why, said he, should you chuse Life, seeing it is attended with so much Bitterness? But they desired him to let them go; with that he looked ugly upon them, and rushing to them had doubtless made an End of them himself, but that he fell into one of his * Fits (for he sometimes in Sun-shiny Weather fell into Fits) and lost for a Time the Use of his Hand: Wherefore he withdrew, and left them as before, to consider what to do. Then did the Prisoners consult between themselves, whether it was best to take his Counsel or no; and thus they began to discourse:

On Friday
Giant Despair
counsels them
to kill them-
selves.

* The Giant
sometimes has
Fits.

† Christian
begins to de-
spair.

Cbr. Brother, said *Christian*, † what shall we do? The Life that we now live is miserable! For my Part, I know not whe-
ther

ther 'tis best to live thus, or die out of Hand: * *My Soul chuseth Strangling rather than Life,* and the Grave is more easy for me than this Dungeon! Shall we be ruled by the Giant?

Hope. Indeed our present Condition is ^{Hopeful ~~comp~~} dreadful, and Death would be far more ^{forte him.} welcome to me, than *thus* forever to abide: But let us consider, the Lord of the Country to which we are going, hath said, Thou shalt do no Murder; no, not to another Man's Person; much more then are we forbidden to take his Counsel, to kill ourselves. Besides, he that kills another, can but commit Murder upon his Body: But for one to kill himself, is to kill Body and Soul at once. And moreover, my Brother, thou talkest of Ease in the Grave, but hast thou forgotten the Hell, whither for certain the Murderers go? For no Murderer hath Eternal Life, &c. And let us consider again, That all the Law is not in the Hand of *Giant Despair*: Others, so far as I can understand, have been taken by him, as well as we; and yet have escaped out of his Hands. Who knows, but that God, who made the World, may cause that *Giant Despair* may die, or that, at some Time or other, he may forget to lock us in; or that he may in a short Time have another of his Fits before us, and may lose the Use of his Limbs? And if ever that should come to pass again, for my Part I am resolv'd to pluck up the Heart of a Man, and to try my utmost to get from under his Hand. I was a Fool that I did not try to do it

The Pilgrim's Progress.

before ; but however, my Brother, let's be patient, and endure a while, the Time may come that may give us a happy Release : But let us not be our own Murderers. With these Words *Hopeful* at present did moderate the Mind of his Brother ; so they continued together (in the Dark) that Day in their sad and doleful Condition.

Well, towards Evening the *Giant* goes down into the Dungeon again, to see if his Prisoners had taken his Counsel ; but when he came there, he found them alive ; and truly alive was all ; for now, what for want of Bread and Water, and by reason of the Wounds they received when he beat them, they could do little but breathe. But I say, he found them alive ; at which he fell into a grievous Rage, and told them, That seeing they had disobey'd his Counsel, it should be worse with them than if they had never been born.

At this they trembled greatly, and I think that *Christian* fell into a Swoon ; but coming a little to himself again, they renewed their Discourse about the *Giant's* Counsel, and whether yet they had best take it or no. * Now *Christian* again seemed to be for doing it, but *Hopeful* made his second Reply as followeth.

* *Christian*
still dejected.

† *Hopeful*
comforts him
again, by call-
ing former
Things to Re-
membrance.

Hope, † My Brother, said he, rememberst thou not ; how valiant thou hast been heretofore ? *Apollyon* could not crush thee, nor could all that thou didst hear, or see, or feel in the Valley of the Shadow of Death ; what Hardships, Terror and Amazement hast thou already gone thro' ?
and

and art thou now nothing but Fear? Thou seest that I am in the Dungeon with thee, a far weaker Man by Nature than thou art; also this *Giant* has wounded me as well as thee, and hath also cut off the Bread and Water from my Mouth, and with thee I mourn without the Light. But let us exercise a little more Patience: Remember how thou play'd'st the Man at *Vanity Fair*, and was neither afraid of the Chain nor Cage, nor yet of bloody Death; wherefore let us (at least to avoid the Shame that becomes not a Christian to be found in) bear up with Patience as well as we can.

Now Night being come again, and the *Giant* and his Wife being in Bed, she asked him concerning the Prisoners, and if they had taken his Counsel: To which he reply'd; they are sturdy Rogues, they chuse rather to bear all Hardships, than to make away themselves. Then said she; Take them into the Castle-Yard to-morrow, and shew them the *Bones* and *Skulls* of those that thou hast already dispatch'd, and make them believe e're a Week comes to an End, thou wilt also tear them in Pieces, as thou hast done their Fellows before them.

So when the Morning was come, the *Giant* goes to them again, and takes them into the Castle-Yard, and shews them as his Wife had bidden him: These, said he, were Pilgrims as you are, once, and they trespassed in my Grounds, as you have done; and when I thought fit, I

The Pilgrim's Progress.

On Saturday
the Giant
threatened
that shortly he
would pull
them in Pieces.

tore them in Pieces, and so within ten Days I will do you; go, get you down to your Den again; and with that he beat them all the Way thither. They lay therefore all Day on Saturday in lamentable Case, as before. Now, when Night was come, and when Mrs. *Diffidence* and her Husband the *Giant* were got to Bed, they began to renew their Discourse of their Prisoners; and withal, the old *Giant* wonder'd that he could neither by his Blows nor Counsel bring them to an End. And with that his Wife reply'd; I fear, said she, that they live in Hopes that some will come to relieve them, or that they have Picklocks about them, by the Means of which they hope to escape. And say'st thou so, my Dear? said the *Giant*; I will therefore search them in the Morning.

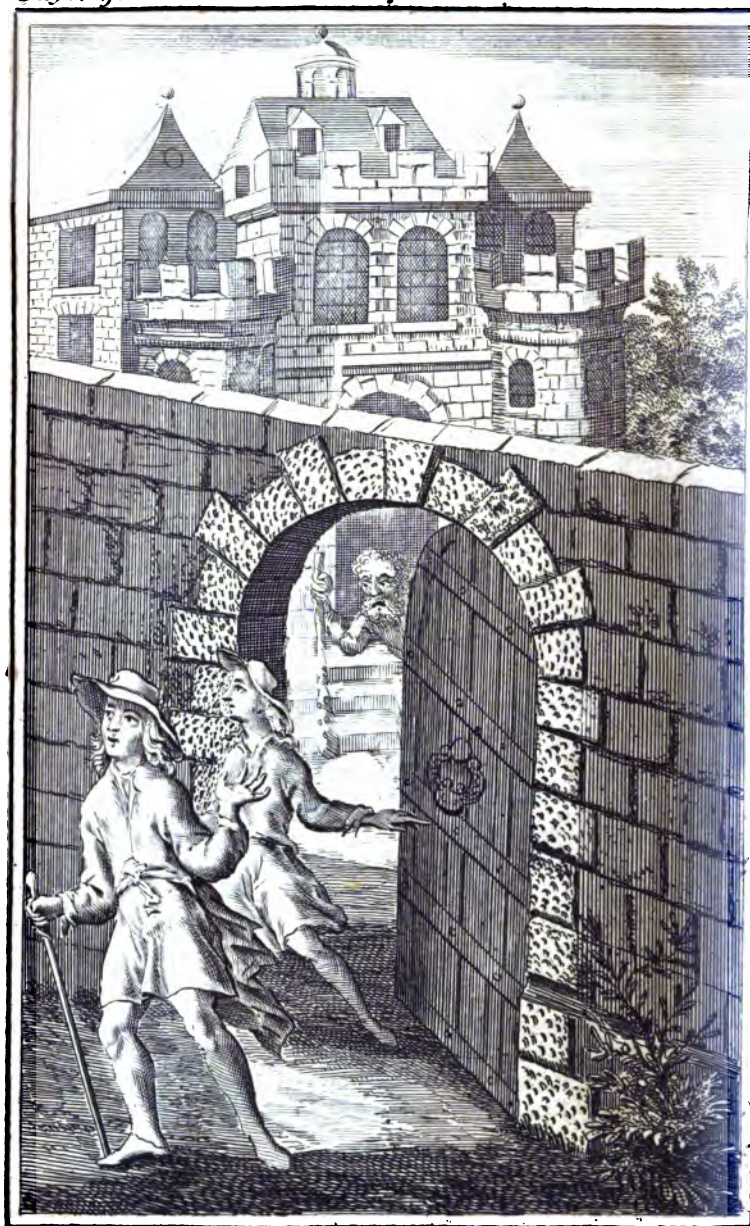
Well, on Saturday about Midnight they began to pray, and continued in Prayer till almost Break of Day.

A Key in
Christian's
Bosom called
Promise, opens
any Lock in
Doubting-
Castle.

Now, a little before it was Day, good *Christian*, as one half amazed, brake out in this passionate Speech; What 'a Fool (quoth he) am I, thus to lie in a stinking Dungeon, when I may as well walk at Liberty? I have a Key in my Bosom, called *Promise*, that will (I am persuaded) open any Lock in *Doubting-Castle*. Then said *Hopeful*, That's good News, good Brother, pluck it out of thy Bosom and try.

Then *Christian* pulled it out of his Bosom, and began to try at the Dungeon Door, whose Bolt (as he turned the Key) gave





Christian and Hopeful, Escape from Doubting Castle.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

151

gave back, and the Door flew open with Ease, and *Christian* and *Hopeful* both came out. Then he went to the outward Door that leads into the *Castle-Yard*, and with his Key opened that Door also. After he went to the Iron Gate, for that must be opened too, but that Lock went very hard, yet the Key did open it. Then they thrust open the Gate to make their Escape with Speed; but that Gate as it opened made such a Cracking, that it waked *Giant Despair*, who hastily rising to pursue his Prisoners, felt his Limbs to fail, for his Fits took him again, so that he could by no means go after them. Then they went on, and came to the King's Highway, and so were safe, because they were out of his Jurisdiction.

Now, when they were gone over the Stile, they began to contrive with themselves what they should do at that Stile, to prevent those that shall come after from falling into the Hands of *Giant Despair*. So they consented to erect there a * Pillar, and to engrave upon the Stile thereof this Sentence; 'Over this Stile is the Way to *Doubting-Castle*, which is kept by *Giant Despair*, who despiseth the King of the Cœlestial Country, and seeks to destroy his Holy Pilgrims.' Many therefore that followed after, read what was written, and escaped the Danger. This done, they sang as follows:

* A Pillar
erected by
Christian and
his Fellow.

*Out of the Way we went, and then we found
What it was to tread upon forbidden Ground;*

L. 4

And

The Pilgrim's Progress:

And let them that come after have a Care,
 Left they for trespassing, his Pris'ners are,
 Whose Castle's Doubting, and whose
 Name's Despair. }

The Delectable Mountains.

They are refreshed in the Mountains.

They went then till they came to the Delectable Mountains; which Mountains belong to the Lord of that Hill, of which we have spoken before; so they went up to the Mountains, to behold the Gardens and Orchards, the Vineyards and Fountains of Water; where also they drank and washed themselves, and did freely eat of the Vineyards. Now there was on the Tops of those Mountains, Shepherds feeding their Flocks, and they stood by the Highway Side. The Pilgrims therefore went to them, and leaning upon their Staffs, (as is common with weary Pilgrims when they stand to talk with any by the Way) they asked, * *Whose Delectable Mountains are these? And whose be the Sheep that feed upon them?*

* *Talk with the Shepherds.*

Shep. These Mountains are *Emanuel's Land*, and they are within Sight of his City; and the Sheep also are his, and he laid down his Life for them.

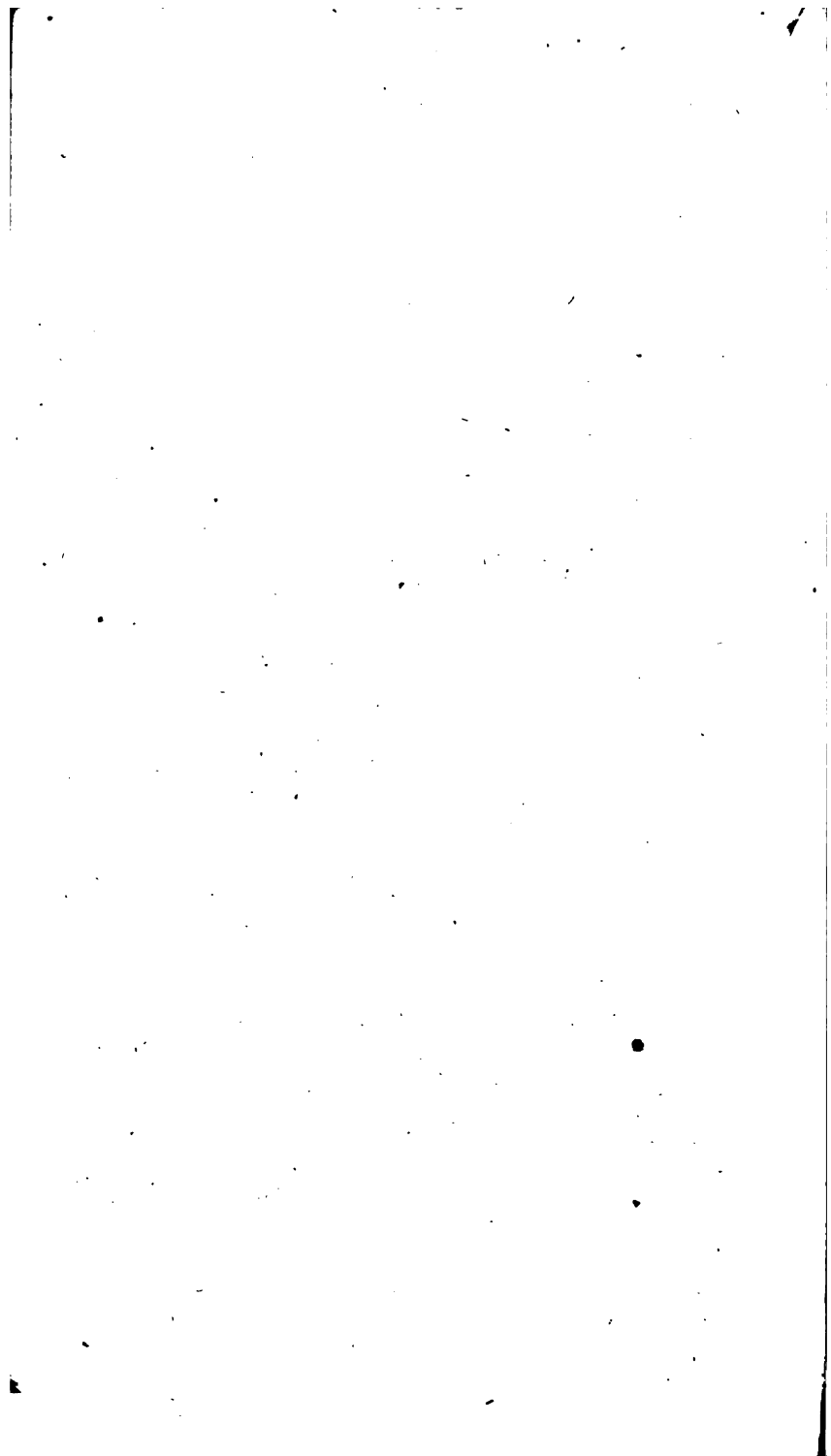
Chr. Is this the Way to the *Cœlestial City*?

Shep.

*Mountains Delectable they now ascend,
 Where Shepherds be, which to them do commend
 Alluring Things, and Things that Cautious are,
 Pilgrims are steady, kept by Faith and Fear.*



The delectable Mountains.



The Pilgrim's Progress.

153

Shep. You are just in the Way.

Cbr. How far is it thither?

Shep. Too far for any, but those that shall get thither indeed.

Cbr. Is the Way safe or dangerous?

Shep. Safe for those for whom it is to be safe, *but Transgressors shall fall therein.* Hof. 14. 9.

Cbr. Is there in this Place any Relief for Pilgrims, that are weary and faint in the Way?

Shep. The Lord of these Mountains hath given us a Charge *not to be forgetful to entertain Strangers,* therefore the Good of the Place is before you. Heb. 13. 1, 2.

I saw also in my Dream, That when the *Shepherds* perceived there were Wayfaring Men, they also put Questions to them (to which they made Answer as in other Places) as, Whence came you? And how got you into the Way? And by what Means have you so persevered therein? For, but few of them that begin to come hither, do shew their Face on these Mountains. But when the Shepherds heard their Answers, being pleased therewith, they looked very lovingly upon them, and said, *+ Welcome to the Delectable Mountains.* *+ The Shepherds welcome them.*

The Shepherds, I say, whose Names were *Knowledge, Experience, Watchful* and *Sincere,* took them by the Hand, and had them to their Tents, and made them partake of that which was ready at present. They said, moreover, We would that you should stay here a while, to be acquainted with us, and yet more to solace yourselves with the Good of the Delectable. *The Names of the Shepherds.*

The Pilgrims' Progress.

lectable Mountains. They then told them, That they were content to stay; so they went to their Rest that Night, because it was very late.

Then I saw in my Dream, That in the Morning the Shepherds called up *Christian* and *Hopeful* to walk with them upon the Mountains: So they went forth with them, and walked a while, having a pleasant Prospect on every Side. Then said the Shepherds one to another, shall we shew these Pilgrims some * Wonders? So when they had concluded to do it, they had them first to the Top of an Hill, called † *Error*, which was very steep on the farthest Side, and bid them look down to the Bottom. So *Christian* and *Hopeful* looked down, and saw at the Bottom several Men dashed all to Pieces by a Fall that they had from the Top. Then said *Christian*, What meaneth this? The Shepherds answer'd, have you not heard of them that were made to err, by hearkning to * *Hymeneus* and *Philetus*, as concerning the Faith of the Resurrection of the Body? They answer'd, Yes. Then said the Shepherds: Those that you see dash'd in Pieces at the Bottom of this Mountain are they; and they have continued to this Day unburied, (as you see) for an Example for others to take Heed how they clamber too high, or how they come too near to the Brink of this Mountain.

Then I saw that they had them to the Top of another Mountain, and the Name
of

* They are shewn Wonders.

† The Mountain of Error.

* 1 Tim. 2. 17, 18.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

155

of that is * *Caution*, and bid them look * *Mount*
afar off: Which when they did, they perceived *Caution.* as they thought, several Men walking up and down among the Tombs that were there: And they perceived that the Men were blind, because they stumbled sometimes upon the Tombs, and because they could not get out from among them. Then said *Christian*, *What means this?*

The Shepherds then answered, Did you not see a little below these Mountains a Stile that led into a Meadow, on the Left Hand of this Way? They answered, Yes. Then said the Shepherds, From that Stile there goes a Path that leads directly to *Doubting-Castle*, which is kept by Giant *Despair*, and these Men (pointing to them among the Tombs) came once on Pilgrimage, as you do now, even till they came to that same Stile. And because the right Way was rough in that Place, they chose to go out of it into that Meadow, and there were taken by Giant *Despair*, and cast into *Doubting-Castle*; where, after they had been a while kept in the Dungeon, he at last did put out their Eyes, and led them among those Tombs, where he has left them to wander to this very Day, that the Saying of the Wise Man might be fulfilled, *He that wandereth out of Prov. 21. 26.*
the Way of Understanding, shall remain in the Congregation of the Dead. Then *Christian* and *Hopeful* looked upon one another, with Tears gushing out, but yet said nothing to the Shepherds.

Then

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Then I saw in my Dream, That the Shepherds had them to another Place in a Bottom, where was a Door in the Side of an Hill, and they opened the Door, and bid them look in : They looked in therefore, and saw that within it was very dark and smoaky ; they also thought that they heard there a rumbling Noise, as of Fire, and a Cry of some tormented, and that they smelt the Scent of Brimstone. Then said *Christian*, *What means this ?* The Shepherds told them, This is a By-way to Hell, a Way that Hypocrites go in at ; namely, such as sell their Birth-right with *Esau* ; such as sell their Master, with *Judas* ; such as blaspheme the Gospel with *Alexander* ; and that lye and dissemble with *Ananias* and *Sapphira* his Wife.

A By-way to Hell.

Then said *Hopeful* to the Shepherds, *I perceive that these had on them, even every one, a Shew of Pilgrimage, as we have now; had they not ?*

Shep. Yes, and held it a long Time too.

Hope. How far might they go on Pilgrimage in their Days, since they notwithstanding were thus miserably cast away ?

Shep. Some farther, and some not so far as these Mountains.

Then said the Pilgrims one to another, *We have need to cry to the Strong for Strength.*

Shep. Ay, and you will have need to use it, when you have it, too.

By this Time the Pilgrims had a Desire to go forwards, and the Shepherds a Desire they should ; so they walked together towards the End of the Mountains. Then said the Shepherds one to another, Let

us here shew the Pilgrims the Gates to the Cœlestial City, if they have Skill to look through our;* Perspective-Glass. The Pilgrims then lovingly accepted the Motion: So they had them to the Top of an high Hill, called † Clear, and gave them the Glass to look.

* *The Shepherds Perspective Glass.*

† *The Hill Clear.*

Then they tried to look, but the Remembrance of that last Thing that the Shepherds had shewed them, made their Hands shake; by means of which Impediment, they could not look steadily thro' the Glass; yet they thought they saw something like the Gate, and also some of the Glory of the Place. Then they went away and sang.

The Fruits of servile Fear.

*Thus by the Shepherds Secrets are reveal'd,
Which from all other Men are kept conceal'd:
Come to the Shepherds then, if you would see
Things deep, Things hid, and that mysterious
be.*

When they were about to depart, one of the Shepherds gave them a Note of the Way. Another of them bid them * Beware of the Flatterer. The Third bid them Take Caution. Heed that they slept not upon the Incharmed Ground. And the Fourth bid them God Speed. So I awoke from my Dream.

* *A two-fold*

And I slept, and dreamed again, and saw the same Two Pilgrims going down the Mountains along the Highway towards the City. Now a little below these Mountains on the Left Hand, lieth the Country of Conceit; from which Country there Ignorance.

The Country of Conceit, out of which came

The Pilgrim's Progress.

there comes into the Way in which the Pilgrims walked, a little crooked Lane. Here therefore, they met with a very brisk Lad, that came out of that Country; and his Name was Ignorance. So Christian asked him, *From what Parts he came, and whither he was going.*

Christian and Ignorance have some Talk together.

Ignor. Sir, I was born in the Country that lieth off there, a little on the Left Hand, and am going to the Coelestial City.

Cbr. But how do you think to get in at the Gate? for you may find some Difficulty there.

Ignor. As other good People do, said he.

Cbr. But what have you to shew at that Gate, that the Gate should be opened to you?

The Grounds of Ignorance's Hope.

Ignor. I know my Lord's Will, and have been a good Liver; I pay every Man his own; I pray, fast, pay Tithes, and give Alms, and have left my Country, for whither I am going.

Cbr. But thou camest not in at the Wick-et-Gate that is at the Head of this Way; thou camest in hither through that same crooked Lane, and therefore I fear, however thou may'st think of thy self, when the Reckoning-day shall come, thou shalt have laid to thy Charge, that thou art a Thief and a Robber, instead of getting Admittance into the City.

Ignor. Gentlemen, Ye be utter Strangers to me, I know you not; be content to follow the Religion of your Country, and I will follow the Religion of mine. I hope

He telleth every one he is but a Fool.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

159

hope all will be well. And as for the Gate that you talk of, all the World knows that that is a great Way off of our Country. I cannot think that any Men in all our Parts do so much as know the Way to it, nor need they matter whether they did or no, since here, as you see, a fine pleasant green Lane, that comes down from our Country, the next Way into it.

When *Christian* saw that the Man was wise in his own Conceit, he said to *Hopeful* whisperingly, *That is, more Hopes of a Fool than of him.* And said moreover, *When he that is a Fool walketh by the Way,* Eccles. 01. 3. *his Wisdom faileth him, and he saith to every one, that he is a Fool.* How to carry it to a Fool. What, shall we talk farther with him, or out-go him at present, and so leave him to think of what he hath heard already, and then stop again for him afterwards, and see if by Degrees we can do any Good of him? Then said *Hopeful*:

*Let Ignorance a little while now muse
On what is said, and let him not refuse
Good Counsel to embrace, lest he remain
Still ignorant of what's the chiefest Gain.
God saith, Those that no Understanding
have,
(Altho' he made them) them he will not
save.*

Hope.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Hope. He farther added, It is not good, I think, to say to him all at once; let us pass him by, if you will, and talk to him anon, *even as he is able to bear it.*

So they both went on, and *Ignorance* he came after. Now when they had passed him a little Way, they entered into a very dark Lane, where they met a Man whom seven Devils had bound with seven strong Cords, and were carrying of him back to the Door that they saw on the Side of the Hill: Now good *Christian* began to tremble, and so did *Hopeful* his Companion: Yet, as the Devils led away the Man, *Christian* looked to see if he knew him; and he thought it might be one *Turn-away* that dwelt in the Town of *Apostacy*. But he did not perfectly see his Face; for he did hang his Head like a Thief that is found. But being gone past, *Hopeful* looked after him, and espied on his Back a Paper, with this Inscription, *Wanton Professor, and damnable Apostate*. Then said *Christian* to his Fellow, Now I call to Remembrance that which was told me, of a Thing that happened to a good Man hereabout: The Name of the Man was *Little-Faith*, but a good Man, and he dwelt in the Town of *Sincere*. The Thing was this: At the entering in at this Passage, there comes down from *Broad-way-Gate* a Lane called, *Dead-Man's-Lane*; so called, because of the Murders that are commonly done there: And this *Little-Faith* going on Pilgrimage, as we do now, chanced to sit down there and slept

The Destruction of one Turn-away.

Christian relates his Companion a Story of Little-Faith.

Broad-way-Gate. Dead-Man's Lane.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

164.

slept: Now there happened at that Time to come down the Lane from *Broad-way-Gate*, three sturdy Rogues, and their Names were *Faint-heart*, *Mistrust*, and *Guilt* (three Brothers) and they espying *Little-Faith*, where he was, came galloping up with Speed. Now the good Man was just awakened from his Sleep, and was getting up to go on his Journey. So they came up all to him, and with threatening Language bid him stand. At this *Little-Faith* looked as white as a Clout, and had neither Power to fight nor fly. Then said *Faint-heart*, Deliver thy Purse; but he making no Haste to do it, (for he was loth to lose his Money) *Mistrust* ran up to him, and thrusting his Hand into his Pocket, pulled out thence a Bag of Silver. Then he cried out, Thieves, Thieves. With that *Guilt*, with a great Club that was in his Hand, struck *Little-Faith* on the Head, and with that Blow fell'd him flat to the Ground; where he lay bleeding as one that would bleed to Death. All this while the Thieves stood by. But at last, they hearing that some were upon the Road, and fearing lest it should be one *Great Grace*, that dwells in the City of *Good-Confidence*, they betook themselves to their Heels, and left this good Man to shift for himself. Now after a While *Little-Faith* came to himself, and getting up, made a Shift to scrabble on his Way. This was the Story.

Little-Faith
robbed by
Faint-heart,
Mistrust and
Guilt.

They get away
his Silver,
and knock him
down.

Hope: But did they take from him all that ever he had?

M

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Little-Faith
lost not his best
Things.

1 Pet. 4. 18.

Little-Faith
forced to beg
to his Jour-
ney's End.

Chr. No: The Place where his Jewels were, they never ransack'd; so those he kept still. But, as I was told, the good Man was much afflicted for his Loss; for the Thieves got most of his Spending-Money. That which they got not, (as I said) were Jewels; also he had a little odd Money left, but scarce enough to bring him to his Journey's End; nay, (if I was not mis-informed) he was forced to beg as he went, to keep himself alive; (for his Jewels he might not sell.) But beg and do what he could, *he went* (as we say) *with many a hungry Belly*, the most Part of the rest of the Way.

Hope. But is it not a Wonder they got not from him his Certificate, by which he was to receive his Admittance at the Cœlestial Gate?

*He kept not
his best Things
by his own
Cunning.*

2 Tim. 1. 14.

2 Pet. 1. 9.

Chr. 'Tis a Wonder; but they got not that; though they missed it not through any good Cunning of his; for he being dismay'd with their coming upon him, had neither Power nor Skill to hide any thing, so it was more by good Providence than by his Endeavour, that they miss'd of that good Thing.

Hope. But it must needs be a Comfort to him, that they got not his Jewels from him.

Chr. It might have been great Comfort to him, had he used it as he should: But they that told me the Story, said, That he made but little use of it all the rest of the Way; and that because of the Dismay that he had in the taking away his Money: Indeed he forgot it a great Part of the rest

rest of his Journey; and besides, when at any time it came into his Mind, and he began to be comforted therewith, then would fresh Thoughts of his Loss come again upon him, and those Thoughts would swallow up all.

Hope. Alas, poor Man! This could not but be a great Grief unto him! He is pitied by both.

Cbr. Grief! Ay a Grief indeed. Would it not have been so to any of us, had we been used as he, to be robbed and wounded too, and that in a strange Place, as he was? 'Tis a Wonder he did not die with Grief, poor Heart: I was told that he scattered almost all the rest of the Way with nothing but doleful and bitter Complaints: Telling also to all that overtook him, or that he overtook in the Way as he went, where he was robbed, and how; who they were that did it, and what he lost; how he was wounded, and that he hardly escaped with his Life.

Hope. But 'tis a Wonder that his Necessity did not put him upon selling or pawning some of his Jewels, that he might have wherewithal to relieve himself in his Journey.

Cbr. Thou talkest like one upon whose Head is the Shell to this very Day: For what should he pawn them? or to whom should he sell them? In all that Country where he was robbed, his Jewels were not accounted of; nor did he want that Relief which could from thence be administered to him. Besides, had his Jewels been missing at the Gate of the *Celestial-City*, he had (and that he knew well enough) been excluded

The Pilgrim's Progress.

excluded from an Inheritance there, and that would have been worse to him than the Appearance and Villainy of Ten Thousand Thieves.

Heb. 12. 26. *Hope.* Why art thou so tart, my Brother? *Esau* sold his Birth-right, and that for a Mess of Pottage, and that Birth-right was his greatest Jewel; and if he, why might not *Little-Faith* do so too?

Discourse about Esau and Little-Faith.

Esau was ruled by his Lusts.
Gen. 25. 32.

Esau never had Faith.

Jer. 2. 24.

Chr. *Esau* did sell his Birth-right indeed, and so do many besides, and by so doing exclude themselves from the chief Blessing, as also that Caitiff did; but you must put a Difference betwixt *Esau* and *Little-Faith*, and also betwixt their Estates. *Esau's* Birth-right was Typical, but *Little-Faith's* Jewels were not so. *Esau's* Belly was his God, but *Little-Faith's* Belly was not so. *Esau's* Want lay in his fleshly Appetite, *Little-Faith's* did not so: Besides, *Esau* could see no farther than to the fulfilling of his Lusts; *For I am at the Point to die*, said he, *and what Good will this Birth-right do me?* But *Little-Faith*, tho' it was his Lot to have but a little Faith, was by his Little Faith kept from such Extravagancies, and made to see and prize his Jewels more, than to sell them as *Esau* did his Birth-right. You read not any where that *Esau* had Faith, no not so much as a little; therefore no marvel, if where the Flesh only bears Sway, (as it will in that Man where no Faith is to resist) if he sells his Birth-right, and his Soul and all, and that to the Devil of Hell; for it is with such as it is with the Ass, *who in her Occasions cannot be turned away.* When their Minds
are

are set upon their Lusts, they will have them, whatever they cost; but *Little-Faith* was of another Temper, his Mind was on Things divine; his Livelihood was upon Things that were Spiritual and from Above; therefore, to what End should he that is of such a Temper sell his Jewels, (had there been any that would have bought them) to fill his Mind with empty Things? Will a Man give a Penny to fill his Belly with Hay? or can you persuade the Turtle-Dove to live upon Carnation like the Crow? Tho' Faithless ones can for Carnal Lusts, pawn, or mortgage, or sell what they have, and themselves outright to boot; yet they that have Faith, Saving Faith, tho' but a little of it, cannot do so. Here therefore, my Brother, is thy Mistake.

Little-Faith could not live upon Esau's Pottage.

Comparison between the Turtle-Dove and the Crow.

Hope. I acknowledge it; but yet your severe Reflexion had almost made me angry.

Cbr. What, I did but compare thee to some of the Birds that are of the brisker Sort, who will run to and fro in untrodden Paths with the Shell upon their Heads: But pass by that, and consider the Matter under Debate, and all shall be well betwixt thee and me.

Hope. But, *Christian*, these three Fellows, I am persuaded in my Heart, are but a Company of Cowards: Would they have run else, think you, as they did, at the Noise of one that was coming on the Road? Why did not *Little-Faith* pluck up a greater Heart? He might, methinks, have stood one Brush with them, and

Hopeful swaggers.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

have yielded when there had been no Remedy.

No great Heart for God where there is but little Faith. Cbr. That they are Cowards, many have said, but few have found it so in the time of Trial. As for a great Heart, *Little-Faith* had none; and I perceive by thee, my Brother, hadst thou been the Man concerned, thou art but for a Brush, and then to yield. And verily, since this is the Height of thy Stomach, now they are at a Distance from us, should they appear to thee, as they did to him, they might put thee to second Thoughts.

We have more Courage when out, than when we are in.

Psal. 9. 5. Christian tells his own Experience in this Case.

But consider again, they are but Journey-men Thieves, they serve under the King of the Bottomless Pit; who, if need be, will come in to their Aid himself, and his Voice is *as the Roaring of a Lion*. I myself have been engaged as this *Little-Faith* was, and I found it a terrible Thing. These three Villains set upon me, and I beginning like a *Christian* to resist, they gave but a Call, and in came their Master; I would, (as the Saying is) have given my Life for a Penny; but that, as God would have it, I was cloathed with Armour of Proof. Ay, and yet, tho' I was so harness'd, I found it hard Work to quit myself like a Man; no Man can tell what in that Combat attend us, but he that hath been in the Battle himself.

Hope. Well, but they ran you see, when they did but suppose that one *Great-Grace* was in the Way.

Cbr. True, they have often fled, both they and their Master, when *Great-Grace* hath but appeared; and no marvel; for he is the

The Pilgrim's Progress.

167

the *King's-Champion*: But I trow, you will put some Difference between *Little-Faith* and the *King's-Champion*. All the King's Subjects *The King's Champion* are not his Champions, nor can they, when tried, do such Feats of War as he. Is it meet to think, that a little Child should handle *Goliath* as *David* did? Or, that there should be the Strength of an *Ox* in a *Wren*? Some are strong, some are weak; some have great Faith, some have little; this Man was one of the weak, and therefore he went to the Wall.

Hope. I would it had been *Great-Grace* for their Sakes.

Chr. If it had been he, he might have had his Hands full: For I must tell you, that though *Great-Grace* is excellent good at his Weapons, and has, and can, so long as he keeps them at Sword's Point, do well enough with them, yet if they get within him, even *Faint-heart*, *Mistrust*, or the other, it will go hard, but they will throw up his Heels. And when a Man is down, you know, what can he do?

Whofo looks well upon *Great-Grace's* Face, shall see those Scars and Cuts there, that shall easily give Demonstration of what I say. Yea, once I heard that he should say, (and that when he was in the Combat) *We despaired even of Life*. How did these sturdy Rogues and their Fellows make *David* groan, mourn and roar? Yea, *Haman* and *Hezekiah* too, though Champions in their Days, were forced to bestir them when by these assaulted; and yet notwithstanding, they

The Pilgrim's Progress.

had their Coats soundly brushed by them. Peter, upon a Time, would go try what he could do; but though some do say of him, that he is the Prince of the Apostles, they handled him so, that they made him at last afraid of a sorry Girl.

Job. 41. 26.
Leviathan's
Sturdiness.

Besides, their King is at their Whistle; he is never out of Hearing; and if at any Time they be put to the worst, he, if possible, comes in to help them: And of him it is said, *The Sword of him that layeth at him cannot hold; the Spear, the Dart, nor the Harbergeon, he esteemeth Iron as Straw, and Brass as rotten Wood. The Arrow cannot make him fly, Sling-stones are turned, with him, into Stubble; Darts are counted as Stubble; he laugheth at the Shaking of a Spear.* What can a Man do in this Case?

Job. 39. 19.
The excellent
Mettle that is
in Job's Horse.

'Tis true, if a Man could at every Turn have Job's Horse, and had Skill and Courage to ride him, he might do notable Things, *For his Neck is clothed with Thunder; he will not be afraid as the Grasshopper; the Glory of his Nostrils is terrible; he paweth in the Valley, rejoiceth in his Strength, and goeth out to meet the Armed Men. He mocketh at Fear, and is not affrighted, neither turneth back from the Sword. The Quiver rattleth against him, the glittering Spear, and the Shield. He swalloweth the Ground with Fierceness and Rage, neither believeth he that it is the Sound of the Trumpet. He saith among the Trumpets, Ha, ha; and he smelleth the Battle afar off, the Thundering of the Captains and the Shoutings.*

But

But for such Footmen as thee and I are, let us never desire to meet with an Enemy, nor vaunt as if we could do better, when we hear of others that they have been foiled, nor be tickled at the Thoughts of our Manhood, for such commonly come by the Worst when tried. Witness *Peter*, of whom I made Mention before; he would swagger, ay, he would; he would, as his vain Mind prompted him to say, do better, and stand more for his Master than all Men; but, who so foiled and run down by these Villains as he?

When therefore we hear that such Robberies are done on the King's Highway, two Things become us to do: First, to go out harnessed, and to be sure to take a Shield with us; for it was for Want of that, that he that laid so lustily at *Leviathan* could not make him yield; and indeed, if that be wanting, he fears us not at all. Therefore, he that had Skill hath said, *Above all, take the Shield of Faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery Darts of the World.* Ephes. 6. 16.

It is good also that we desire of the King a *Convoy*, yea, that he will go with us himself. This made *David* rejoice when in the Valley of the Shadow of Death; and *Moses* was rather for dying where he stood, than to go one step without his God. O, my Brother, if he will but go along with us, what need we be afraid of ten thousands that shall set themselves against us? but without him, the proud Helpers fall under the Slain.

'Tis good to have a Convoy.

Psal. 3. 5, 6, 7, 8.

And 27. 1, 2,

the 3.
Isa. 10. 4.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

I, for my Part, have been in the Fray before now; and though (through the Goodness of him that is best) I am, as you see, alive, yet cannot boast of my Manhood. Glad shall I be, if I meet with no more such Brunts; though I fear we are not got beyond all Danger. However, since the Lion and the Bear have not as yet devoured me, I hope God will also deliver us from the next uncircumcised *Philistine*. Then sang *Christian* :

Poor Little-Faith! Hast been among the Thieves!

Wast robb'd! Remember this, who so believes,

And get more Faith then shall your Victors be

Over ten thousand, else scarce over three.

A Way and a Way.

The Flatterer finds them.

So they went on, and *Ignorance* followed. They went then till they came at a Place where they saw a Way put itself into *their Way*, and seemed withal to lie as strait as the Way which they should go; and here they knew not which of the two to take, for both seemed strait before them; therefore here they stood still to consider. And as they were thinking about the Way, behold a Man black of Flesh, but covered with a very light Robe, came to them, and asked them why they stood there? They answered, They were going to the *Cœlestial City*, but knew not which of these Ways to take. Follow me, said the Man, it is thither that

The Pilgrim's Progress.

171

that I am going. So they followed him in the Way that but now came into the Road, which by Degrees turned, and turned them *so* from the City, that they desired to go to, that in a little Time their Faces were turned away from it; yet they followed him. But, by and by, before they were aware, he led them both within the Compass of a Net, in which they were both so entangled, that they knew not what to do; and with that the *White Robe fell off the black Man's Back*: Then they saw where they were. Wherefore there they lay crying some Time, for they could not get themselves out.

Christian and his Fellow deluded.

They are taken in a Net.

Chr. Then said *Christian* to his Fellow, *They bewail* Now do I see myself in an Error. Did not the Shepherds bid us beware of the Flatterers? As is the Saying of the Wise Man, so we have found it this Day: *Prov. 29. 5. Man that flattereth his Neighbour, spreadeth a Net for his Feet.*

Hope. They also gave us a Note of Directions about the Way, for our more certain finding thereof; but therein we have also forgotten to read, and have not kept ourselves from the Paths of the Destroyer. Here *David* was wiser than we; for, saith he, *Concerning the Works of Men, by the Word of thy Lips, I have kept me from the Paths of the Destroyer.* Thus they lay bewailing themselves in the Net. At last they espied a Shining One coming toward them with a Whip of small Cord in his Hand. When he was come to the Place where they were, he asked them

A shining One comes to them with a Whip in his Hand.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

them whence they came, and what they did there? They told him, that they were poor Pilgrims going to *Zion*, but were led out of their Way by a black Man cloathed in White, who bid us, said they, follow him, for he was going thither too. Then said he with the Whip, It is the *Flatterer*, a false Apostle, that hath transformed himself into an Angel of Light. So he rent the Net, and let the Men out. Then said he to them, Follow me, that I may set you in your Way again; so he led them back to the Way which they had left to follow the *Flatterer*.

Prov. 29. 5.
Dan. 11. 3.
2 Cor. 11.
13, 14.

They are examined, and convicted of Forgetfulness.

Deceivers fine spoken.

Rom. 6. 18.
Deut. 25. 2.
2 Chron. 6.
26, 27.
Lev. 3. 19.

They are whipt and sent on their Way.

Then he asked them, saying, Where did you lie the last Night? They said, With the Shepherds, upon the *Delectable Mountains*. He asked them then, If they had not a Note of Directions for the Way? They answered, Yes. But, did you, said he, when you were at a Stand, pluck out and read your Note? They answered, No. He asked them, Why? They said, They forgot. He asked moreover, If the Shepherds did not bid them beware of the *Flatterer*? They answered, Yes. But we did not imagine, said they, that this fine-spoken Man had been he.

Then I saw in my Dream, That he commanded them to lie down; which when they did, he chastized them sore, to teach them the good Way wherein they should walk: And as he chastized them, he said, *As many as I love I rebuke and chasten; be zealous, therefore, and repent.* This done, he bid them go on their Way, and

The Pilgrim's Progress.

173

and take good Heed to the other Directions of the Shepherds. So they thanked him for all his Kindness, and went softly along the right Way, singing :

*Come hither, you that walk along the Way,
See how the Pilgrims fare, that go astray :
They catched are in an intangled Net,
'Cause thy good Counsel lightly did forget :
'Tis true, they rescu'd were, but yet you see
They're scourg'd to boot: Let this your Cau-
tion be.*

Now, after a while, they perceived afar off, one coming softly, and alone, all along the Highway to meet them. Then said *Christian* to his Fellow, Yonder is a Man with his Back toward *Zion*, and he is coming to meet us.

Hope. I see him, let us take Heed to ourselves now, lest he should prove a *Flatterer* also. So he drew nearer and nearer, and at last came up to them. His Name was *Atheist*, and he asked them whither they were going ? *The Atheist meets them.*

Chr. We are going to Mount *Zion*.

Then *Atheist* fell into a very great *He laughs at them.* Laughter.

Chr. What is the Meaning of your Laughter ?

Atheist. I laugh to see what ignorant Persons you are, to take upon you so tedious a Journey, and yet are like to have nothing but your Travel for your Pains.

Chr.

*They reason
together.*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Chr. Why, Man? Do you think we shall not be received?

Atheist. Received! There is no such Place as you dream of in all this World.

Chr. But there is in the World to come.

Atheist. When I was at Home in mine own Country, I heard as you now affirm, and from that Hearing went out to see, and have been seeking this City these Twenty Years, but find no more of it than I did the first Day I set out.

Chr. We have both heard, and believe that there is such a Place to be found.

*Jer. 22. 13.
Ecclef. 10. 15*

*The Atheist
takes up his
Content in this
World.*

Atheist. Had not I, when at Home, believed, I had not come thus far to seek; but finding none, (and yet I should, had there been such a Place to be found, for I have gone to seek it farther than you) I am going back again, and will seek to refresh myself with the Things that I then past away, for Hopes of that which I now see is not.

*Christian
proveth his
Brother.*

Chr. Then said *Christian* to *Hopeful*, his Companion, *Is it true which this Man has said?*

*Hopeful's
gracious An-
swer.
2 Cor. 5. 7.*

Hope. Take Heed, he is one of the *Flatterers*; remember what it hath cost us once already for our hearkening to such kind of Fellows. What! No Mount Zion? Did we not see from the *Delectable Mountains*, the Gate of the City? Also, are we not now to walk by Faith? * Let us go on, said *Hopeful*, lest the Man with the Whip overtake us again.

* Remem-
brance of for-
mer Chastise-
ments, is a
Help against
present Temp-
tations.

You should have taught me that Lesson, which I will round you in the Ears withal: *Cease, my Son, to hear the Instruction that causeth*

confess to err from the Words of Knowledge: Prov. 19. 27.

I say, My Brother, cease to hear him, and let us believe to the Saving of the Soul. Heb. 10. 39.

Cbr. My Brother, I did not put the Question to thee, for that I doubted of the Truth of your Belief myself, but to prove *The Fruit of thee, and to fetch from thee a Fruit of the an honest* Honesty of thy Heart. As for this Man, *Heart,* I know that he is blinded by the God of this World. Let thee and I go on, knowing that we have Belief of the Truth, and *1 John 2. 11.* no Lye is of the Truth.

Hope. Now I do rejoice in hope of the Glory of God: So they turned away from the Man, and he laughing at them, went his Way.

I saw then in my Dream, that they *They are come* went 'till they came into a certain Country, whose Air naturally tended to make *to the Enchanted Ground,* one drowzy, if he came a Stranger into it. And here *Hopeful* began to be very *Hopeful begins to be drowzy.* dull and heavy to sleep; wherefore he *Christian keeps him awake.* said unto *Christian,* I do now begin to grow so drowzy, that I can scarcely hold open mine Eyes: Let us lie down here, and take one Nap.

Cbr. By no means, (said the other) lest sleeping we never awake more.

Hope. Why, my Brother? Sleep is sweet to the labouring Man; we may be refreshed, if we take a Nap.

Cbr. Do you not remember, that one of the Shepherds bid us, beware of the Enchanted Ground? He meant by that, that we should beware of Sleeping; wherefore let us not sleep as others do, but let *1 Thes. 5. 6.* us watch and be sober.

Hope.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

He is thankful.

Eccles. 4. 9.

*To prevent
Drowziness
they fall to
good Discourse.
Good Discourse
preventeth
Drowziness.*

Hope. I acknowledge myself in a Fault; and had I been here alone, I had by sleeping run the Danger of Death. I see it is true that the wise Man saith, *Two are better than one.* Hitherto hath thy Company been my Mercy; and thou shalt have a good Reward for thy Labour.

Chr. Now then, said Christian, to prevent Drowziness in this Place, let us fall into good Discourse.

Hope. With all my Heart, said the other.

Chr. Where shall we begin?

Hope. Where God began with us: But do you begin if you please.

Chr. I will sing you first a Song.

The Dreamer's Note.

*When Saints do sleepy grow, let them come
hither,*

*And hear how these two Pilgrims talk to-
gether:*

*Yea, let them learn of them in any wise
Thus to keep open their drowzy slumb'ring Eyes
Saints Fellowship, if it be manag'd well,
Keeps them awake, and that in spite of Hell.*

*They begin at
the Beginning
of their Con-
version.*

Chr. Then Christian began, and said, I will ask you a Question. How came you to think at first of so doing as you do now?

Hope. Do you mean, how came I at first to look after the Good of my Soul?

Chr. Yes, that is my Meaning.

Hope.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

177

Hope. I continued a great While in the Delight of those Things which were seen and sold at our *Fair*; Things which I believe now would have, had I continued in them still, drowned me in Perdition and Destruction.

Chr. What Things were they?

Hope. All the Treasures and Riches of the World. * Also I delighted much in * *Hopeful's* Rioting, Revelling, Drinking, Swearing, *Life before Conversion.* Lying, Uncleaness, Sabbath-breaking, and what not, that tended to destroy the Soul. But I found at last, by hearing and considering of Things that are Divine, which indeed I heard of you, as also of beloved *Faithful*, that was put to Death for his Faith and good living in *Vanity*-Rom. 6. *Fair*, *That the End of these Things is Death.* 21, 22, 23. And that for these Things Sake, the Wrath *Eph. 5. 6.* of God cometh upon the Children of Disobedience.

Chr. And did you presently fall under the Power of this Conviction?

Hope. No, I was not willing presently to know the Evil of Sin, nor the Damnation that follows upon the Commission of it; but endeavoured when my Mind at first began to be shaken with the Word, *Hopeful at first shuts his Eyes against the Light.* to shut mine Eyes against the Light thereof.

Chr. But what was the Cause of your carrying of it thus to the first Workings of God's Blessed Spirit upon you?

Hope. The Causes were, 1. I was ignorant that this was the Work of God upon me. I never thought that by *Reasons of his resisting the Light.* Awakenings for Sin, God at first begins the

N

Con-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Conversion of a Sinner. 2. Sin was yet very sweet to my Flesh, and I was loth to leave it. 3. I could not tell how to part with mine old Companions, their Presence and Actions were so desirable unto me. 4. The Hours in which Convictions were upon me, were such Troublesome and such Heart-affrighting Hours, that I could not bear, no not so much as the Remembrance of them upon my Heart.

Cbr. Then, as it seems, sometimes you got rid of your Trouble.

Hopeful. Yes, verily, but it would come into my Mind again, and then I should be as bad, nay worse than I was before.

Cbr. Why, what was it that brought your Sins to Mind again?

Hope. Many Things; as

* When he had lost his Sense of Sin, what brought it again.

1. * If I did but meet a good Man in the Streets; or,

2. If I have heard any read in the Bible; or,

3. If mine Head did begin to ach; or,

4. If I were told that some of my Neighbours were sick; or,

5. If I heard the Bell toll for some that were dead; or,

6. If I thought of Dying myself; or,

7. If I heard that sudden Death happened to others.

8. But especially when I thought of myself, that I must quickly come to Judgment.

Cbr.

Chr. And could you at any Time, with Ease, get off the Guilt of Sin, when by any of these Ways it came upon you?

Hope. No, not I; for then they got faster Hold of my Conscience; and then, if I did but think of going back to Sin, (though my Mind was turned against it) it would be double Torment to me.

Chr. And how did you then?

Hope. † I thought I must endeavour to mend my Life; for else, † thought I, I am sure to be damned. † When he could no longer shake off his Guilt by sinful Courses, then

Chr. And did you endeavour to mend?

Hope. Yes; and fled from, not only my Sins, but sinful Company too, and betook me to Religious Duties; as Praying, Reading, weeping for Sin, speaking Truth to my Neighbours, &c. These Things did I, with many others, too much here to relate. be endeavours to mend.

Chr. And did you think yourself well then?

Hope. Yes for a While; but at the last my Trouble came tumbling upon me again, and that over the Neck of all my Reformations. Then he thought himself well.

Chr. How came that about, since you were now reform'd?

Hope. There were several Things brought it upon me, especially such Sayings as these: *All our Righteousnesses are as filthy Rags.* Reformation at last could not help, and *By the Works of the Law, no Man shall be justified.* Isa. 64. 6. *When ye have done all those Things, say, We are unprofitable:* Gal. 2. 16. Luke 17. 10.

With many more such like. From whence I began to reason with myself thus: If All my Righteousnesses are filthy Rags; if

The Pilgrim's Progress.

by the Deeds of the Law *No* Man can be justified; and if when we have done *All* we are unprofitable, then 'tis but Folly to think of Heaven by the Law. I farther thought thus: * If a Man runs a Hundred Pounds into the Shop-keeper's Debt, and after that shall pay for all that he shall fetch; yet if this old Debt stands still in the Book uncross'd, the Shop-keeper may sue him for it, and cast him into Prison, till he shall pay the Debt.

** His being a Debtor by the Law troubled him.*

Cbr. Well, and how did you apply this to yourself?

Hop. Why I thought thus with myself; I have by my Sins run a great Way into God's Book, and that my now Reforming will not pay off that Score; therefore I should think still, under all my present Amendments. But how shall I be freed from that Damnation that I brought myself in Danger of by my former Transgressions?

Cbr. A very good Application; but pray go on.

His espying bad Things in his best Duties troubled him.

Hope. Another Thing that hath troubled me ever since my late Amendments is, that if I look narrowly into the best of what I do now, I still see Sin, new Sin, mixing itself with the best of that I do; so that now I am forced to conclude, that notwithstanding my former fond Conceits of myself and Duties, I have committed Sin enough in one Day to send me to Hell, tho' my former Life had been faultless.

Cbr. And what did you then?

Hope

The Pilgrim's Progress.

181

Hope. Do ! I could not tell what to do, This made him break his Mind to Faithful, 'till I break my Mind to Faithful ; for he and I were well acquainted. And he told me, that unless I could obtain the Righteousness of a Man that never had sinned, who told him the Way to be saved. neither mine own, nor all the Righteousness of the World could save me.

Chr. And did you think he spake true ?

Hope. Had he told me so when I was pleased and satisfied with mine own Amendments, I had called him Fool for his Pains ; but now since I see mine own Infirmity, and the Sin which cleaves to my best Performance, I have been forced to be of his Opinion.

Chr. But did you think, when at first he suggested it to you, that there was such a Man to be found, of whom it might justly be said, that he never committed Sin ?

Hope. I must confess the Words at first At which he founded strangely, but after a little more started at present. Talk and Company with him, I had full Conviction about it.

Chr. And did you ask him what Man this was, and how you must be justified by him ?

Hope. Yes, and he told me it was the Heb. 10. Rom. 4. Col. 1. 1 Pet. 1. Lord Jesus, that dwelleth on the Right Hand of the Most High : * And thus, * A more particular Discovery of the Way to be saved. I said he, you must be justified by him, even by trusting to what he hath done by himself in the Days of his Flesh, and suffered when he did hang on the Tree. I ask'd him further, how that Man's Righteousness could be of that Efficacy, as to justify another before GOD ? And he told

The Pilgrim's Progress.

me, He was the Mighty GOD, and did what he did, and died the Death also, not for himself, but for me; to whom his Doings, and the Worthiness of them, should be imputed, if I believed on him.

Cbr. And what did you do then?

*He doubts of
Acceptation.*

Hope. I made my Objections against my Believing, for that I thought he was not willing to save me.

Cbr. And what said *Faithful* to you then?

*Mat. 11. 28.
† He is better
instructed.*

Hope. He bid me go to him and see. Then I said it was Presumption. † He said No, for I was invited to come. Then he gave me a Book of Jesus's inditing, to encourage me the more freely to come; and he said concerning that Book, That every Jot and Tittle thereof stood firmer than Heaven and Earth. Then I ask'd him what I must do when I came: And he told me, I must entreat upon my Knees, with all my Heart and Soul, the Father to reveal him to me. Then I ask'd him further, how I must make my Supplication to him? And he said, Go, and thou shalt find him upon a Mercy-Seat, where he sits all the Year long, to give Pardon and Forgiveness to them that come. I told him, that I knew not what to say when I came. * And he bid me say to this Effect: God be merciful to me a Sinner, and make me to know and believe in Jesus Christ; for I see, that if his Righteousness had not been, or I have not Faith in that Righteousness, I am utterly cast away. Lord, I have heard that thou art a merciful God, and hast ordained that thy Son
Jesus

*Mat. 24. 25.
Psal. 95. 6.
Dan. 6. 10.
Jer. 29. 12.
13.*

*Ex. 25. 22.
Lev. 16. 9.
Num. 11. 7, 8.
Heb. 4. 6.*

** He is bid
to pray.*

Jesus Christ should be the Saviour of the World : And moreover, that thou art willing to bestow upon such a poor Sinner as I am, (and I am a Sinner indeed) Lord, take therefore this Opportunity, and magnify thy Grace in the Salvation of my Soul, through thy Son Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

Chr. And did you do as you were bidden ?

Hope. Yes, over, and over, and over. *He prays.*

Chr. And did the Father reveal the Son to you ?

Hope. Not at first, nor second, nor third, nor fourth, nor fifth, no, nor at the sixth Time neither.

Chr. What did you do then ?

Hope. What ! why I could not tell what to do.

Chr. Had you not Thoughts of leaving off Praying ?

Hope. Yes, and a hundred Times twice *He thought to leave off* told.

Chr. And what was the Reason you did *praying.* not ?

Hope. * I believed that that was true, which hath been told me, to wit, That without the Righteousness of this Christ, all the World could not save me ; and therefore thought I with myself, if I leave off, I die, and I can but die at the Throne of Grace. And withal this came into my Mind, if it tarry, wait for it, because it Heb. 2. 3. will surely come, and will not tarry. So I continued praying, until the Father shewed me his Son.

Chr. And how was he revealed unto you ?

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Eph. 1. 18.
19.

Christ is revealed to him, and how.

Acts 16. 30.
31.

2 Cor. 12. 9.

John 6. 35.

Joh. 6. 16.

1 Tim. 1. 15.
Rom. 10. 4.
Chap. 4.

Hope. I did not see him with my bodily Eyes, but with the Eyes of mine Understanding; and thus it was. One Day I was very sad, I think sadder than at any one Time of my Life; and this Sadness was through a fresh Sight of the Greatness and Vileness of my Sins. And as I was then looking for nothing but *Hell*, and the everlasting Damnation of my Soul, suddenly, as I thought, I saw the Lord Jesus look down from Heaven upon me, and saying, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved.

But I replied, Lord, I am a great, a very great Sinner: And he answered, My Grace is sufficient for thee. Then I said, but Lord, what is Believing? And then I saw from that Saying, [He that cometh to me shall never hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst] that Believing and Coming was all one; and that he that came, that is, ran out in his Heart and Affections after Salvation by Christ, he indeed believed in Christ. Then the Water stood in mine Eyes, and I asked further, But, Lord, may such a great Sinner as I am, be indeed accepted of thee, and be saved by thee? And I heard him say, *And him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.* Then I said, but how, Lord, must I consider of thee in my coming to thee, that my Faith may be placed aright upon thee? Then he said, Christ came into the World to save Sinners. He is the End of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believes. He died for our Sins, and rose again for our Justification:

He

He loved us, and washed us from our Sins in his own Blood: He is a Mediator betwixt God and us: He ever liveth to make Intercession for us. From all which I gathered, That I must look for Righteousness in his Person, and for Satisfaction for my Sins by his Blood; that what he did in Obedience to his Father's Law, and in submitting to the Penalty thereof, was not for himself, but for him that will accept it for his Salvation, and be thankful. And now was my Heart full of Joy, mine Eyes full of Tears, and mine Affections running over with Love to the Name, People, and Ways of Jesus Christ.

Chr. This was a Revelation of Christ to your Soul indeed: But tell me particularly what Effect this had upon your Spirit?

Hope. It made me see that all the World, notwithstanding all the Righteousness thereof, is in a State of Condemnation: It made me see that God the Father, though he be Just, can justly justify the coming Sinner: It made me greatly ashamed of the Vileness of my former Life, and confounded me with the Sense of mine own Ignorance; for there never came a Thought into my Heart before now, that shewed me so the Beauty of Jesus Christ: It made me love a Holy Life, and long to do something for the Honour and Glory of the Name of the Lord Jesus: Yea, I thought that had I now a thousand Gallons of Blood in my Body, I could spill it all for the Sake of the Lord Jesus.

I saw

The Pilgrim's Progress.

I saw in my Dream, that *Hopeful* looked back and saw *Ignorance*, whom they had left behind, coming after: Look, said he to *Christian*, how far yonder Youngster loitereth behind?

Chr. Ay, ay, I see him; he careth not for our Company.

Hope. But I trow it would not have hurt him, had he kept Pace with us hitherto.

Chr. That's true, but I'll warrant you he thinketh otherwise.

*Young Ignorance comes up again.
Their Talk.*

Hope. That I think he doth, but however, let us tarry for him. [*So they did.*]

Then *Christian* said to him, Come away, Man, why do you stay so behind?

Ignor. I take my Pleasure in walking alone, even more a great deal than in Company, unless I like it better.

Then said *Christian* to *Hopeful*, (but softly) Did I not tell you he cared not for our Company? But however, said he, come up, and let us talk away the Time in this solitary Place. Then directing his Speech to *Ignorance*, he said, Come, how do you? How stands it between God and your Soul now?

Ignorance's Hope, and the Ground of it.

Ignor. I hope well, for am always full of good Motions, that come into my Mind, to comfort me as I walk.

Chr. What good Motions? Pray tell us.

Ignor. Why, I think of God and Heaven.

Chr. So do the Devils and damned Souls.

Ignor. But I think of them, and desire them.

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

187.

Chr. So do many that are never like to come there. The Soul of the Sluggard Prov. 28. 29. desires, and hath nothing.

Ignor. But I think of them, and leave all for them.

Chr. That I doubt; for to leave all is a very hard Matter; yea, a harder Matter than many are aware of. But why, or by what, art thou persuaded that thou hast left all for God and Heaven.

Ignor. My Heart tells me so.

Chr. The wise Man says, *He that trusts his own Heart, is a Fool.*

Ignor. This is spoken of an evil Heart, but mine is a good One.

Chr. But how dost thou prove that?

Ignor. It comforts me in Hopes of Heaven.

Chr. That may be through its Deceitfulness; for a Man's Heart may minister Comfort to him in the Hopes of that Thing for which he has yet no Ground to hope.

Ignor. But my Heart and Life agree together, and therefore my Hope is well grounded.

Chr. Who told thee that thy Heart and Life agree together?

Ignor. My Heart tells me so.

Chr. Ask my Fellow, if I be a Thief? Thy Heart tells thee so! Except the Word of God beareth Witness in this Matter, other Testimony is of no Value.

Ignor. But it is not a good Heart that has good Thoughts? And is not that a good Life, that is according to God's Commandments?

Chr.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Chr. Yes, that is a good Heart that hath good Thoughts; and that is a good Life that is according to God's Commandments: But it is one Thing indeed to have these, and another Thing only to think so.

Ignor. Pray, what count you good Thoughts, and a Life according to God's Commandments?

Chr. There are good Thoughts of divers Kinds; some respecting ourselves, some GOD, some CHRIST, and some other Things.

What are good Thoughts. *Ignor.* What be good Thoughts respecting ourselves?

Chr. Such as agree with the Word of GOD.

Ignor. When do our Thoughts of ourselves agree with the Word of GOD?

Chr. When we pass the same Judgment upon ourselves which the Word passes. To explain myself: The Word of GOD saith of Persons in a Natural Condition, *There is none Righteous, there is none that doth Good.* It saith also, *That every Imagination of the Heart of a Man is only Evil, and that continually.* And again, *The Imagination of Man's Heart is Evil from his Youth.* Now then, when we think thus of ourselves, having Sense thereof, then are our Thoughts good ones, because according to the Word of God.

Ignor. I will never believe that my Heart is thus bad.

Chr. Therefore thou never hadst one good Thought concerning thyself in thy Life. But let me go on. As the Word passeth

Rom. 7.
Gen. 6. 8.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

189

Passeth a Judgment upon our Heart, so it passeth Judgment upon our Ways; and when the Thoughts of our Hearts and Ways agree with the Judgment which the Word giveth of both, then are both good, because agreeing thereto.

Ignor. Make out your Meaning.

Cbr. Why, the Word of God saith, That Man's Ways are crooked Ways, P^{sal.} 125. 5. not good, but perverse: It saith, They ^{Prov. 2. 15.} are naturally out of the good Way, that ^{Rom. 3.} they have not known it. Now when a Man thus thinketh of his Ways, I say, when he doth sensibly, and with Heart-humiliation thus think, then hath he good Thoughts of his own Ways, because his Thoughts now agree with the Judgment of the Word of God.

Ignor. What are good Thoughts concerning GOD?

Cbr. Even (as I have said concerning ourselves) when our Thoughts of God do agree with what the Word saith of him; and that is, when we think of his Being and Attributes as the Word hath taught; of which I cannot now discourse at large: But to speak of Him in reference to us, then we have right Thoughts of God when we think that he knows us better than we know ourselves, and can see Sin in us when and where we can see none in ourselves: When we think He knows our inmost Thoughts, and that our Heart, with all its Depths, is always open unto his Eyes: Also when we think that all our Righteousness stinks in his Nostrils, and that there-

The Pilgrim's Progress.

therefore he cannot abide to see us stand before him in any Confidence, even of all our best Performances.

Ignor. Do you think that I am such a Fool as to think G O D can see no farther than I? Or, that I would come to G O P in the best of my Performances?

Cbr. Why, how dost thou think in this Matter?

Ignor. Why, to be short, I think I must believe in Christ for Justification.

Cbr. How! Think thou must believe in Christ, when thou seest not thy Need of him! Thou neither seest thy Original nor Actual Infirmities, but hast such an Opinion of thyself and of what thou dost, as plainly renders thee to be one that did never see a Necessity of Christ's Personal Righteousness to justify thee before G O D. How then dost thou say, I believe in Christ?

Ignor. I believe well enough for all that.

Cbr. How dost thou believe?

The Faith of Ignorance.

Ignor. I believe that Christ died for Sinners, and that I shall be justified before God from the Curse, thro' his gracious Acceptance of my Obedience to his Law. Or thus, Christ makes my Duties, that are Religious, acceptable to his Father by virtue of his Merits, and so shall I be justified.

Cbr. Let me give an Answer to this Confession of thy Faith.

1. Thou believest with a Fantastical Faith; for this Faith is no where described in the Word.

2. Thou

The Pilgrim's Progress.

191

2. Thou believest with a False Faith, because it taketh Justification from the Personal Righteousness of Christ, and applies it to thy own.

3. This Faith maketh not Christ a Justifier of thy Person, but of thy Actions; and of thy Person, for thy Actions Sake, which is false.

4. Therefore this Faith is deceitful, even such as will leave thee under Wrath in the Day of God Almighty: For true *Justifying Faith* puts the Soul (as sensible of its lost Condition by the Law) upon flying for Refuge unto Christ's Righteousness: (Which Righteousness of his is not an Act of Grace, by which he maketh, for Justification, thy Obedience accepted with God, but this Personal Obedience to the Law, in doing and suffering for us what that required at our Hands.) This Righteousness, I say, true Faith accepteth; under the Skirt of which, the Soul being shrouded, and by it presented as spotless before God, it is accepted, and acquitted from Condemnation.

Ignor. What, would you have us trust to what Christ in his own Person hath done without us? This Conceit would loosen the Reins of our Lust, and tolerate us to live as we list: For, what Matter how we live, if we may be justify'd by Christ's Personal Righteousness, from all, when we believe it?

Chr. *Ignorance* is thy Name; and as thy Name is, so art thou; even this thy Answer demonstrateth what I say. *Ignorant* thou art of what *Justifying Righteousness* is,

The Pilgrim's Progress.

is, and as *ignorant* how to secure thy Soul through the Faith of it from the heavy Wrath of G O D. Yea, thou also art *ignorant* of the true Effects of Saving Faith in this Righteousness of Christ, which is to bow and win over the Heart to G O D in Christ, to love his Name, his Word, Ways, and People, and not as thou *ignorantly* imaginest.

Hope. Ask him if ever he had Christ revealed to him from Heaven?

Ignorance jangles with them.

Ignor. What! You are a Man for Revelation! I do believe that what both you and all the rest of you say about that Matter, is but the Fruit of distracted Brains.

Hope. Why Man! Christ is so hid in God from the natural Apprehensions of the Flesh, that he cannot by any Man be savingly known, unless G O D the Father reveals him to them.

He speaks reproachfully of what he knows not.

Ignor. That is your Faith, but not mine; yet mine, I doubt not, is as good as yours, though I have not in my Head so many Whimsies as you.

Chr. Give me Leave to put in a Word: You ought not to speak so slightly of this Matter: For this I will boldly affirm, (even as my good Companion hath done) that no Man can know Jesus Christ but by the Revelation of the Father; yea, and Faith too, by which the Soul layeth hold upon Christ, (if it be right) must be wrought by the exceeding Greatness of his mighty Power; the Working of which Faith, I perceive, poor *Ignorance*, thou art ignorant of. Be awakened then, see thine

Matt. 11. 28.

1 Cor. 11. 3.

Eph. 1. 18, 19.

thine own Wretchedness, and fly to the Lord Jesus; and by his Righteousness, which is the Righteousness of GOD, (for he himself is GOD) thou shalt be delivered from Condemnation.

Ignr. You go so fast, I cannot keep *The Talk* Pace with you: Do you go on before; I *broke up.* must stay a while behind.

Then they said,

*Well, Ignorance, wilt thou yet foolish be
To slight good Counsel, ten times given thee?
And if thou yet refuse it, thou shalt know,
E're long, the Evil of thy doing so.*

*Remember Man, in time; stoop, do not fear;
Good Counsel taken well secures; then
bear.*

*But if thou yet shalt slight it, thou wilt be
The Loser, Ignorance, I'll warrant thee.*

Then *Christian* address'd himself thus to his Fellow:

Cbr. Well, come my good *Hopeful*, I perceive that thou and I must walk by ourselves again.

So I saw in my Dream, That they went on apace before, and *Ignorance* he came hobbling after. Then said *Christian* to his Companion, I am much grieved for this poor Man; it will certainly go hard with him at last.

Hope. Alas! there are abundance in our Town in this Condition, whole Families, yea, whole Streets, and that of
O Pilgrims

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Pilgrims too; and if there be so many in our Parts, how many, think you, must there be in the Place where he was born?

Cbr. Indeed the Word saith, *He hath blinded their Eyes, lest they should see, &c.*

But now we are by ourselves, What do you think of such Men? Have they at no Time, think you, Convictions of Sin, so consequently Fears that their State is dangerous?

Hope. Nay, do you answer that Question yourself, for you are the elder Man,

Cbr. Then I say, sometimes (as I think) they may; but they being naturally ignorant, understand not that such Convictions tend to their Good; and therefore they do desperately seek to stifle them, and presumptuously continue to flatter themselves in the Way of their own Hearts.

The good Use of Fear.

Hope. I do believe, as you say, that Fear tends much to Men's Good, and to make them right at their Beginning to go on Pilgrimage.

Job. 28. 28.
Psal. 111. 10.
Prov. 1. 7.
ch. 9. 10.

Cbr. Without all Doubt it doth, if it be right: For so says the Word, *The Fear of the Lord is the Beginning of Wisdom.*

Hope. How will you describe right Fear?

Right Fear.

Cbr. True or right Fear is discover'd by Three Things:

1. By its Rise, It is caused by Saving Convictions for Sin.

2. It driveth the Soul to lay fast hold of Christ for Salvation.

3. It begetteth and continueth in the Soul a great Reverence of G O D, his Word

Word and Ways, keeping it tender, and making it afraid to turn from them, to the Right Hand or to the Left, to any thing that may dishonour G O D, break its Peace, grieve the Spirit, or cause the Enemy to speak reproachfully.

Hope. Well said; I believe you have said the Truth. Are we now almost got past the Enchanted Ground?

Chr. Why, art thou weary of this Discourse?

Hope. No verily, but that I would know where we are.

Chr. We have not now above two Miles farther to go thereon. But let us return to our Matter. * Now the Ignorant know * *Why ignorant Persons do stife Convictions.*
 not that such Convictions, as tend to put them in Fear, are for their Good, and therefore they seek to stife them.

Hope. How do they seek to stife them?

Chr. 1. They think that those Fears are wrought by the Devil, (tho' indeed they are wrought of G O D) and thinking so, they resist them, as Things that directly tend to their Overthrow. 2. They also think that these Fears tend to the Spoiling of their Faith, when alas! for them, poor Men that they are, they have none at all! and therefore they harden their Hearts against them. 3. They presume they ought not to fear, and therefore in Despite of them wax presumptuously Confident. 4. They see that those Fears tend to take away from them their pitiful old Self-holiness, and therefore they resist them with all their Might.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Hope. I know something of this myself; before I knew myself, it was so with me.

Chr. Well, we will leave, at this Time, our Neighbour *Ignorance* by himself, and fall upon another profitable Question.

Hope. With all my Heart, but you shall still begin.

*Talk about
one Temporary.*

Chr. Well then, did you know about ten Years ago, one *Temporary* in your Parts, who was a forward Man in Religion then?

*Where he
dwelt.*

Hope. Know him! yes, he dwelt in *Graceless*, a Town about two Miles off of *Honesty*, and he dwelt next Door to one *Turnback*.

*He was to-
wardly once.*

Chr. Right, he dwelt under the same Roof with him. Well, that Man was much awaken'd once; I believe that then he had some Sight of his Sins, and of the Wages that were due thereto.

Hope. I am of your Mind, for (my House not being above three Miles from him) he would oftentimes come to me, and that with many Tears. Truly I pitied the Man, and was not altogether without Hope of him: But one may see, it is not every one that cries, *Lord, Lord*.

Chr. He told me once, That he was resolved to go on Pilgrimage, as we go now; but all on a sudden he grew acquainted with one *SaveSelf*, and then he became a Stranger to me.

Hope. Now since we are talking about him, let us a little enquire into the Reason of the sudden Backsliding of him and such others.

Chr.

Chr. It may be very profitable, but do you begin.

Hope. Well then, there are in my Judgment four Reasons for it.

1. Tho' the Consciences of such Men *Reasons why* are awakened, yet their Minds are not *towardsly ones* changed: Therefore, when the Power of *go back.*

Guilt weareth away, that which provoketh them to be religious ceaseth: Wherefore they naturally return to their own Course again; even as we see the Dog that is sick of what is eaten, so long as his Sicknes prevails, he vomits and casts up all: Not that he doth this of a free Mind (if we may say a Dog has a Mind) but because it troubleth his Stomach; but now, when his Sicknes is over, and so his Stomach eased, his Desires being not at all alienated from his Vomit, he turns him about and licks up all; and so it is true which is written: *The Dog is turned to his own Vomit again.* 2 Pet. 2. 2. Thus, I say, being hot for Heaven by Virtue only of the Sense and Fear of the Torments of Hell; as that Sense of Hell, and Fear of Damnation chills and cools, so their Desires for Heaven and Salvation cool also. So then it comes to pass, that when their Guilt and Fear is gone, their Desires for Heaven and Happiness die, and they return to their Course again.

2. Another Reason is, they have slavish Fears that do over-master them; I speak now of the Fears that they have of Men: *For the Fear of Men bringeth a Snare.* So Prov. 29. 2. then tho' they seem to be hot for Heaven so long as the Flames of Hell are about their

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Ears, yet when that Terror is a little over, they betake themselves to Second Thoughts, namely, that 'tis good to be wife, and not to run (for they know not what) the Hazard of losing all, or at least of bringing themselves into unavoidable and unnecessary Troubles, and so they fall in with the World again.

3. The Shame that attends Religion lies also as a Block in their Way; they are proud and haughty, and Religion in their Eye is low and contemptible: Therefore when they have lost their Sense of Hell, and Wrath to come, they return again to their former Course,

4. *Guilt*, and to meditate Terror, are grievous to them; they like not to see their Misery before they come into it, tho' perhaps the Sight of it first, if they lov'd that Sight, might make them fly whither the righteous fly and are safe; but because they do, as I hinted before, even shun the Thoughts of Guilt and Terror, therefore when once they are rid of their Awakenings about the Terrors and Wrath of God, they harden their Hearts gladly, and chuse such Ways as will harden them more and more.

Chr. You are pretty near the Business, for the Bottom of all is, for Want of a Change in their Mind and Will. And therefore they are but like the Felon that standeth before the Judge; he quakes and trembles, and seems to repent most heartily; but the Bottom of all is, the Fear of the Halter; nor that he hath any Detestation of the Offence, as it is evident,
be-

because, let but this Man have his Liberty, and he will be a Thief, and so a Rogue still; whereas, if his Mind was changed, he would be otherwise.

Hope. Now I have shewed you the Reasons of their going back, do you shew me the Manner thereof.

Chr. So I will willingly.

1. They draw off their Thoughts, all ^{How the} that they may, from the Remembrance of ^{Apostate goes} God, Death, and Judgment to come. ^{back.}

2. Then they cast off by Degrees private Duties, as Closet-Prayer, Curbing their Lusts, Watching, Sorrow for Sin, &c.

3. Then they shun the Company of lively and warm Christians.

4. After that they grow cold to publick Duty, as Hearing, Reading, Godly Conference, and the like.

5. Then they begin to pick Holes, as we say, in the Coats of some of the Godly, and that devilishly, that they may have a seeming Colour to throw Religion (for the Sake of some Infirmities they have spied in him) behind their Backs.

6. Then they begin to adhere to, and associate themselves with carnal, loose, and wanton Men.

7. Then they give Way to carnal and wanton Discourses in Secret; and glad are they if they can see such Things in any that are counted honest, that they may the more boldly do it thro' their Example.

8. After this, they begin to play with little Sins openly.

9. And then being harden'd, they

The Pilgrim's Progress.

shew themselves as they are. Thus being launched again into the Gulph of Misery, unless a Miracle of Grace prevent it, they everlastingly perish in their own Deceivings.

Now I saw in my Dream, that by this Time the Pilgrims were got over the *Inchanted Ground*, and entering into the Country of * *Beulah*, whose Air was very sweet and pleasant, the Way lying directly through it, they solaced themselves there for a Season. Yea, here they heard continually the Singing of Birds, and saw every Day the Flowers appear in the Earth, and heard the Voice of the Turtle in the Land. In this Country the Sun shineth Night and Day; wherefore it was beyond the Valley of the *Shadow of Death*, and also out of the Reach of Giant *Despair*, neither could they from this Place so much as see *Doubting-Castle*. Here they were within Sight of the City they were going to; also here met them some of the Inhabitants thereof; For in this Land the

ANGELS. *Shining Ones* commonly walked, because it was upon the Borders of Heaven. In this Land also the Contract between the Bride and the Bridegroom was renewed: Yea, here, *as the Bridegroom rejoiceth over the Bride, so did their God joyce over them*. Here they had no Want of Corn and Wine; for in this Place they met Abundance of what they had sought for in all their Pilgrimage. Here they heard Voices from out of the City, loud Voices, saying, *Say ye to the Daughter of Sion, Behold thy Salvation cometh! Behold his Reward is with him!*

Here

* Isa. 62. 4.
Cant. 7.
10, 11, 12.

Isa. 62. 5.

Ver. 8.

Ver. 11.

Here all the Inhabitants of the Country called them, *The holy People, the Redeemed* Ver. 12. *of the Lord, Sought out, &c.*

Now, as they walked in this Land, they had more Rejoycing than in Parts more remote from the Kingdom to which they were bound; and drawing nearer to the City yet, they had a more perfect View thereof: It was built of Pearls and precious Stones, also the Streets thereof were paved with Gold; so that by reason of the natural Glory of the City, and the Reflexion of the Sun-beams upon it, *Christian* with Desire fell sick; *Hopeful* also had a Fit or two of the same Disease: Wherefore here they lay by it a while, crying out because of their Pangs; *If you see my Beloved, tell him that I am sick of Love.*

But being a little strengthened, and better able to bear their Sickness, they walked on their Way, and came yet nearer and nearer, where were Orchards, Vineyards and Gardens, and their Gates opened into the High-way. Now as they came up to these Places, behold the Gardener stood in the Way, to whom the Pilgrims said, Whose goodly Vineyards and Gardens are these? He answered, They are the King's, Deut. 23. 24. and are planted here for his own Delight, and also for the Solace of Pilgrims: So the Gardener had them into the Vineyards, and bid them refresh themselves with Dainties; He also shewed them there the King's Walks and Arbours, where he delighted to be: And here they tarried and slept.

Now

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Now I beheld in my Dream, that they talked more in their Sleep at this Time, than ever they did in all their Journey; and being in a Muse thereabout, the Gardener said even to me, Wherefore musest thou at the Matter? It is the Nature of the Fruit of the Grapes of these Vineyards to go down so sweetly, as to cause the Lips of them that are asleep to speak.

So I saw that when they awoke, they addressed themselves to go up to the City. But as I said, the Reflections of the Sun upon the City (for the City was pure Gold) was so extremely glorious, that they could not as yet with open Face behold it, but through an Instrument made for that Purpose. So I saw that as they went on, there met them two Men in Raiment that shone like Gold, also their Faces shone as the Light.

Rev. 21. 23.

1 Cor. 3. 18.

These Men asked the Pilgrims whence they came? and they told them. They also asked them where they had lodged, what Difficulties and Dangers, what Comforts and Pleasures they had met with in the Way? And they told them. Then said the Men that met them, You have but two Difficulties more to meet with, and then you are in the City.

Christian then and his Companion asked the Men to go along with them, so they told them that they would: But, said they, you must obtain it by your own Faith. So I saw in my Dream that they went on together till they came in Sight of the Gate.

Now





The Pilgrims pass the River.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

203

Now I further saw, that betwixt them and the Gate was a River, but there was no Bridge to go over, and the River was very deep. At the Sight therefore of this River, the Pilgrims were much stunned, but the Men that went with them, said, You must go through, or you cannot come at the Gate.

The Pilgrims then began to enquire if there was no other Way to the Gate; to which they answered, Yes, but there hath not any, save two, to-wit, *Enoch and Elijah*, been permitted to tread that Path, since the Foundation of the World, nor shall until the last Trumpet shall sound. The Pilgrims then (especially *Christian*) began to despond in their Minds, and looked this Way and that, but no Way could be found by them, by which they might escape the River. Then they asked the Men if the Waters were all of a Depth? They said, No, yet they could not help them in that Case: For, said they, *you shall find it deeper or shallower, as you believe in the King of the Place.*

They then addressed themselves to the Water, and entering, *Christian* began to sink, and crying out to his good Friend *Hopeful*, he said, I sink in deep Waters: the

Death is not welcome to Nature, tho' by it we pass out of this World into Glory.

1 Cor. 15. 51, 52.

Angels help us out comfortably thro' Death.

*Now, now look how the holy Pilgrims ride,
Clouds are their Chariots, Angels are their Guide;
Who would not here for him all Hazards run,
That thus provides for his, when this World's done?*

The Pilgrim's Progress.

the Billows go over my Head, all the Waves go over me. *Selah.*

Christian's
Conflict at the
Hour of
Death.

Then said the other, Be of good Cheer, my Brother, I feel the Bottom, and it is good. Then said *Christian*, Ah! my Friend, the Sorrow of Death hath compassed me about, I shall not see the Land that flows with Milk and Honey. And with that a great Darknes and Horror fell upon *Christian*, so that he could not see before him. Also here he in a great Measure lost his Senses, so that he could neither remember nor orderly talk of any of those sweet Refreshments that he had met with in the Way of his Pilgrimage. But all the Words that he spake still tended to discover, that he had Horror of Mind, and Heart-Fears that he should die in that River, and never obtain Entrance in at the Gate. Here also, as they that stood by perceived, he was much in the troublesome Thoughts of the Sins that he had committed, both since and before he began to be a Pilgrim. 'Twas also observed, That he was troubled with Apparitions of Hobgoblins and evil Spirits; for ever and anon he would intimate so much by Words. *Hopeful* therefore here had much ado to keep his Brother's Head above Water, yea, sometimes he would be quite gone down, and then e'er a While he would rise up again half dead. *Hopeful* did also endeavour to comfort him, saying, Brother, I see the Gate, and Men standing by to receive us; but *Christian* would answer, 'Tis you, 'tis you they wait for; you have been *Hopeful* ever since I knew you.

And

And so have you, said he to *Christian*. Ah, Brother! said he, surely if I was right, he would now rise to help me, but for my Sins he hath brought me into the Snare and left me. Then said *Hopeful*, My Brother, you have quite forgot the Text, where it is said of the Wicked, There is no Bands in their Death, but Psal. 33. 4. 5. their Strength is firm, they are not troubled as other Men, neither are they plagued like other Men. These Troubles and Distresses that you go through in these Waters, are no Sign that God hath forsaken you, but are sent to try you, whether you will call to Mind that which heretofore you have received of his Goodness, and live upon him in your Distresses.

Then I saw in my Dream, That *Christian* Christian delivered from his Fears in Death. was in a Muse a while. To whom Isa. 40. 2. also *Hopeful* added these Words, Be of good Cheer, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: And with that *Christian* brake out with a loud Voice, Oh, I see him again! and he tells me, When thou passest thro' the Waters, I will be with thee; and thro' the Rivers, they shall not overflow thee. Then they both took Courage, and the Enemy was after that as still as a Stone, until they were gone over. *Christian* therefore presently found Ground to stand upon, and so it followed, that the rest of the River was but shallow; but thus they got over. Now upon the Bank of the River on the other Side, they saw the two shining Men again, who there waited for them: Wherefore being come out

The Pilgrim's Progress.

The Angels do wait for them so soon as they are pass'd out of this World.

out of the River, they saluted them, saying, *We are Ministering Spirits sent forth to minister to those that shall be Heirs of Salvation.* Thus they went along toward the Gate. Now you must note, that the City stood upon a mighty Hill, but the Pilgrims went up that Hill with Ease, because they had these two Men to lead them

They have put off Mortality.

up by the Arms; they had likewise left their *mortal Garments* behind them in the River: For tho' they went in with them, they came out without them. They therefore went up here with much Agility and Speed, tho' the Foundation upon which the City was framed was higher than the Clouds: They therefore went up through the Region of the Air, sweetly talking as they went, being comforted, because they safely got over the River, and had such glorious Companions to attend them.

The Talk that they had with the Shining Ones was about the Glory of the Place, who told them, that the Beauty and Glory of it was inexpressible. There, said they, is *Mount Zion*, the Heavenly Je-

Heb. 12. 22,
23, 24.
Rev. 2. 7,
& 3, 4.

rusalem, the innumerable Company of Angels, and the Spirits of just Men made perfect. You are going now, said they, to the Paradise of GOD, wherein you shall see the *Tree of Life*, and eat of the never-fading Fruits thereof; and when you come there you shall have white Robes given you, and your Walk and Talk shall be every Day with the KING, even all the Days of Eternity. There you shall not see again such Things as you saw when you

Rev. 22. 7.

you were in the lower Region upon the Earth, to wit, Sorrow, Sickness, Affliction, and Death, *for the former Things are passed away.* You are now going to *Abraham, Isaac,* and *Jacob*, and to the Prophets, Men that *GOD* hath taken away from the Evil to come, and that are now resting upon their Beds, each one walking in his Righteousness. The Men then asked, What must we do in the Holy Place? To whom it was answer'd, You must there receive the Comforts of all your Toil, and have Joy for all your Sorrow; you must reap what you have sown, even the Fruit of all your Prayers and Tears, and Sufferings for the King by the Way. In that Place you must wear Crowns of Gold, and enjoy the perpetual Sight and Vision of the *Holy ONE*, *for there you shall see Him as He is.* There also you shall serve him continually with Praise, with Shouting, and Thanksgiving, whom you desire to serve in the World, though with much Difficulty because of the Infirmity of your Flesh. There your Eyes shall be delighted with Seeing, and your Ears with Hearing the pleasant Voice of the *Mighty ONE*. There you shall enjoy your Friends again, that are gone thither before you; and there you shall with Joy receive every one that follows into the Holy Places after you. There also you shall be clothed with Glory and Majesty, and put into an Equipage fit to ride out with the *KING of Glory*. When he shall come with Sound of Trumpet in the Clouds, as upon *the Wings of the Wind*,
 you

Isa. 57. 12, &
6. 14.

1 John. 3. e.

The Pilgrim's Progress.

1 Thef. 4. 13, you shall come with him; and when he
 14, 16, 17. shall sit upon the Throne of Judgment,
 Jude 14. you shall sit by him; yea, and when he
 Dan. 7. 9, 10. shall pass Sentence upon all the Workers
 1 Cor. 6. 2, 3. of Iniquity, let them be Angels or Men;
 you also shall have a Voice in that Judgment,
 because they were his and your Enemies. Also when he shall again return
 to the City, you shall go too with Sound of
 Trumpet, and be ever with him.

Now while they were thus drawing to-
 wards the Gate, behold a Company of the
 Heavenly Host came out to meet them;
 to whom it was said by the other two
 Shining Ones, These are the Men that
 have loved our Lord, when they were in
 the World, and that have left all for his
 Holy Name, and he hath sent us to fetch
 them, and we have brought them thus
 far on their desired Journey, that they
 may go in and look their Redeemer in
 the Face with Joy. Then the Heavenly
 Host gave a great Shout, saying, *Blessed*
are they that are called to the Marriage Sup-
per of the Lamb. There came out also at
 this Time to meet them, several of the
 King's Trumpeters, cloathed in white and
 shining Raiment, who with melodious
 Noises, and loud, made even the Heavens
 to echo with their Sound. These Trum-
 peters saluted *Christian* and his Fellow with
 Ten Thousand Welcomes from the World;
 and this they did with Shouting and Sound
 of Trumpet.

Rev. 19. 9.

This

The Pilgrim's Progress.

209

This done, they compassed them round about on every Side; some went before, some behind, and some on the Right-hand, some on the Left, (as it were to guard them through the upper Regions) continually sounding as they went with melodious Noise, in Notes on high; so that the very Sight was to them that could behold it, as if Heaven itself was come down to meet them. Thus therefore they walked on together; and as they walked, ever and anon these Trumpeters, even with joyful Sound, would by mixing their Musick with looks and Gestures, still signify to *Christian* and his Brother how welcome they were into their Company, and with what Gladness they came to meet them: And now were these two Men, as it were, in Heaven before they came at it; being swallow'd up with the Sight of Angels, and with hearing their melodious Notes. Here also they had the City itself in View, and thought they heard all the Bells therein to ring, to welcome them thereto. But above all, the warm and joyful Thoughts that they had about their own dwelling there with such Company, and that ever and ever; Oh! by what Tongue or Pen can their glorious Joy be express'd! Thus they came up to the Gate.

Now, when they were come up to the Gate, there was written over it in Letters of Gold, *Blessed are they that do his* Rev. 22. 14. *Commandments, that they may have Right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City.*

P

Then

The Pilgrim's Progress.

Then I saw in my Dream, that the shining Men bid them call at the Gate; the which when they did, some from above looked over the Gate, to wit, *Enoch, Moses, and Elijah, &c.* to whom it was said, *These Pilgrims are come from the City of Destruction, for the Love that they bear to the KING of this Place; and then the Pilgrims gave in unto them each Man his Certificate, which they had received in the Beginning; those therefore were carried in to the King; who when he had read them, said, Where are the Men? To whom it was answer'd, They are standing without the Gate. The King then commanded to open the Gate, That the Righteous Nation, said he, that keepeth Truth may enter in.*

Isa. 26. 2.

Now I saw in my Dream, That these two Men went in at the Gate; and lo, as they enter'd, they were transfigur'd; and they had Raiment put on that shone like Gold. There was also that met them, with Harps and Crowns, and gave them to them, the Harps to praise withal, and the Crowns in token of Honour. Then I heard in my Dream, That all the Bells in the City rang again for Joy; and that it was said unto them, *Enter ye in to the Joy of our Lord.* I also heard the Men themselves, that they sang with a loud Voice, saying, *Blessing, Honour and Glory, and Power, be to him that sitteth upon the Throne, and to the Lamb for ever and ever.*

Rev. 5. 13,
14.

Now,

The pilgrim's Progress.

211

Now, just as the Gates were opened to let in the Men, I looked in after them; and behold the City shone like the Sun; the Streets also were paved with Gold, and in them walked many Men with Crowns on their Heads, Palms in their Hands, and Golden Harps to sing Praises withal.

There were also of them that had Wings, and they answered one another without Intermission, saying; *Holy, Holy, Holy is the Lord.* And after that, they shut up the Gates; which when I had seen, I wished myself among them.

Now, while I was gazing upon all these Things, I turned my Head to look back, and saw *Ignorance* coming up to the River-side: But he soon got over, and that without half the Difficulty which the other two Men met with. For it hap-^{*comes up to the River, and*}pened that there was then in that Place ^{*Vain-Hope*} one *Vain-Hope*, a Ferry-man, that with his Boat helped him over; so he, as the other, I saw, ^{*ferry him over.*} did ascend the Hill, to come up to the Gate; only he came alone; neither did any Men meet him with the least Encouragement. When he was come up to the Gate, he looked up to the Writing that was above, and then began to knock, supposing that Entrance should have been quickly administered to him: But he was asked by the Men that looked over the Top of the Gate, Whence come you? And what he would have? He answered, I have eat and drank in the Presence of the King, and he has taught in our Streets. Then they asked him for his Certificate;

The Pilgrim's Progress.

that they might go in and shew it to the King; so he fumbled in his Bosom for one, and found none. Then said they, Have you none? but the Man answered never a Word. So they told the King, but they would not come down to see him, but commanded the two shining Ones that conducted *Christian* and *Hopeful* to the City, to go out and take *Ignorance* and bind him Hand and Foot, and have him away. Then they took him up, and carried him through the Air to the Door that I saw on the Side of the Hill, and put him in there. Then I saw that there was a Way to Hell, even from the Gates of Heaven, as well as from the City of *Destruction*. So I awoke, and behold it was a Dream.





The CONCLUSION.

NOW, Reader, I have told my Dream
to thee,

See if thou can'st interpret it to me,

Or to thyself, or Neighbour; but take Heed

Of Misinterpreting; for that, instead

Of doing Good, will but thyself abuse:

By Misinterpreting, Evil ensues.

Take Heed also that thou be not extreme,

In playing with the Outside of my Dream:

Nor let my Figure or Similitude

Put thee into a Laughter, or a Feud:

Leave this for Boys and Fools; but as for thee,

Do thou the Substance of my Matter see.

Put by the Curtains, look within my Veil,

Turn up my Metaphors, and do not fail;

There, if thou seekest them, such Thing thou'lt

As will be helpful to an honest Mind. (find

What of my Drofs thou findest here, be bold

To throw away, but yet preserve the Gold.

What if my Gold be wrapped up in Ore?

None throws away the Apple for the Core.

But if thou shalt cast all away as vain,

I know not but 'twill make me dream again.

The End of the First PART.

THE
FIRST
PART

THE FIRST PART OF THE FIRST PART.

T H E
Pilgrim's Progress:

F R O M
This W O R L D *to that which*
is to C O M E.

P A R T II.

Delivered under the SIMILITUDE of a

D R E A M.

Wherein is set forth

The MANNER of the Setting out of
CHRISTIAN'S Wife and Children; their
Dangerous JOURNEY, and Safe ARRIVAL
at the Desired COUNTRY.

By JOHN BUNYAN.

I have used Similitudes, Hof. xii. 10.

L O N D O N:

Printed for W. JOHNSTON, at the *Golden-Ball*
in *St. Paul's Church-Yard*. M.DCC.LVII.

The first part of the report deals with the general situation of the country and the progress of the work. It is followed by a detailed account of the various expeditions and the results obtained. The second part of the report is devoted to the study of the flora and fauna of the country. It contains a list of the plants and animals collected during the expeditions, and a description of their habits and distribution. The third part of the report is devoted to the study of the geology and topography of the country. It contains a description of the various geological formations and a map of the country showing the locations of the expeditions.

APPENDIX

The following is a list of the plants and animals collected during the expeditions. The list is arranged in alphabetical order of the names of the plants and animals.



THE
AUTHOR'S WAY
Of sending forth His
SECOND PART
OF THE
PILGRIM.



O now, my little Book, to every
Place,
Where my First Pilgrim has but
shewn his Face:
Call at their Door: If any say,
Who's there?
Then answer thou, CHRISTIAN is here.
If they bid thee Come in, then enter thou,
With all thy Boys: And then thou knowest how;

Tell

P R E F A C E.

*Tell who they are, also from whence they came ;
 Perhaps they know them by their Looks or Name :
 But if they should not, ask them yet again,
 If formerly they did not entertain
 One Christian a Pilgrim ? If they say,
 They did, and were delighted in his Way,
 Then let them know, that those related were
 Unto him : Yea, his Wife and Children are.*

*Tell them that they have left their House and
 Home,
 Are turned Pilgrims, seek a World to come :
 That they have met with Hardships in the Way,
 That they do meet with Troubles Night and Day :
 That they have trod on Serpents, fought with Devils,
 Have also overcome a many Evils.
 Yea, tell them also of the next who have
 Of Love to Pilgrimage, been stout and brave
 Defenders of that Way, and how they still
 Refuse this World, to do their Father's Will.*

*Go tell them also of those dainty Things,
 That Pilgrimage unto the Pilgrims brings :
 Let them acquainted be too, how they are
 Belov'd of their King, under his Care.
 What goodly Mansions he for them provides,
 Tho' they meet with rough Winds and swelling Tides.
 How brave a Calm they will enjoy at last,
 Who to the Lord, and by his Ways hold fast.*

*Perhaps with Heart and Hand they will embrace
 Thee, as they did my Kinsling, and will grace
 Thee, and thy Fellows, with good Cheer and Fare,
 As shew well, they of Pilgrims Loves are.*

G B.

P R E F A C E.

1. O B J E C T I O N.

But how, if they will not believe of me
That I am truly thine; 'cause some there be
That counterfeit the Pilgrim, and his Name,
Seek, by Disguise, to seem the very same,
*And by that Means have brought themselves into
The Hands and Houses of I know not who.*

A N S W E R.

*'Tis true, some have of late to counterfeit
My Pilgrim to their own, my Title set;
Yea, others half my Name and Title too
Have stitched to their Books, to make them do;
But yet they by their Features do declare
Themselves, not mine to be, whose e'er they are.*

*If such thou meet'st with, then thine only Way
Before them all, is to Say out thy Say,
In thine own Native Language, which no Man
Now useth, nor with Ease dissemble can.
If, after all, they still of you shall doubt,
Thinking that you, like Gipsies, go about
In naughty wise, the Country to defile,
Or that you seek good People to beguile
With Things unwarrantable, then send for me,
And I will testify you Pilgrims be;
Yea, I will testify that only you
My Pilgrims are, and that alone will do.*

2. O B J E C T.

But yet, perhaps, I may enquire for him,
Of those that wish him damned Life and Limb.

What

P R E F A C E.

What shall I do, when I at such a Door
For *Pilgrims* ask, and they shall rage the more?

A N S W E R.

*Fright not thyself, my Book, for such Bugbears
Are nothing else but Ground for groundless Fears.
My Pilgrim's Book has travelled Sea and Land,
Yet could I never come to understand
That it was slighted or turn'd out of Door
By any Kingdom, were they Rich or Poor.*

*In France and Flanders, where Men kill each
other,
My Pilgrim is esteem'd a Friend, a Brother.*

*In Holland too, 'tis said, as I am told,
My Pilgrim is with some worth more than Gold.*

*Highlanders and Wild-Irish can agree
My Pilgrim should familiar with them be.
'Tis in New-England under such Advance,
Receives there so much loving Countenance,
As to be trim'd, new-cloth'd, and deck'd with Gems
That it may shew its Features and its Limbs.
Yet more; so commonly doth my Pilgrim walk,
That of him Thousands daily Sing and Talk.*

*If you draw nearer Home, it will appear,
My Pilgrim knows no Ground of Shame or Fear;
City and Country will entertain
With, Welcome, Pilgrim, yea, they can't refrain
From Smiling, if my Pilgrim be but by,
Or shew his Head in any Company.*

*Brave Gallants do my Pilgrim hug and love,
Esteem it much, yea, value it above*

Things

P R E F A C E.

*Things of a greater Bulk ; yea, with Delight,
Say, my Lark's Leg is better than a Kite.*

*Young Ladies, and young Gentlewomen too,
Do no small Kindness to my Pilgrim shew ;
Their Cabinets, their Bosoms, and their Hearts,
My Pilgrim has, 'cause he to them imparts
His pretty Riddles, in such wholesome Strains,
As yields them Profit double to their Pains
Of Reading ; yea, I think I may be bold
To say, some prize him far above their Gold.*

*The very Children that do walk the Street,
If they do but my Holy Pilgrim meet,
Salute him will, will wish him well, and say,
He is the only Stripling of the Day.*

*They that have seen him, yet admire
What they have heard of him, and much desire
To have his Company, and bear him tell
Those Pilgrim Stores which he knows so well.*

*Yea, some that did not love him at the first,
But call'd him Fool and Noddy, say they must,
Now they have seen and heard him, him commend
And to those whom they love they do him send.*

*Wherefore, my Second Part, thou need'st not be
Afraid to shew thy Head ; none can hurt thee,
That wish but well to him that went before,
'Cause thou com'st after with a Second Store,
Of Things as good, as rich, as profitable,
For Young, for Old, for Stagging, and for Stable.*

P R E F A C E.

3. O B J E C T

But some there be that say, *He laughs too loud;*
And some do say, *His Head is in a Cloud.*
Some say, *His Words and Stories are so dark,*
They know not how by them to find his Mark.

A N S W E R.

*One may (I think) say, Both his Laughs and Griefs,
May well be guess'd at by his wat'ry Eyes.
Some Things are of that Nature, as to make
One's Fancy check'd, while his Heart doth ake;
When Jacob saw his Rachel with the Sheep,
He did at the same Time both kiss and weep.*

*Whereas some say, A Cloud is in his Head,
That doth but shew his Wisdom's covered
With his own Mantle, and to fit the Mind
To search well after what it faint would find.
Things that seem to be hid in Words obscure,
Do but the Godly Mind the more allure,
To study what those Sayings should contain,
That speak to us in such a cloudy Strain.*

*I also know a dark Similitude
Will on the curious Fancy more intrude,
And will stick faster in the Heart and Head,
Than Things from Similes not borrow'd.*

*Wherefore, My Book, let no Discouragement
Hinder thy Travels: Behold, thou art sent
To Friends, not Foes, to Friends that will give Place
To thee, thy Pilgrims, and thy Words embrace.*

Be-

P R E F A C E.

*Besides, what my first Pilgrim lest conceal'd,
Thou my brave Second Pilgrim, hast reveal'd;
What Christian lest lock'd up, and went his Way,
Sweet Christiana opens with her Key.*

4. O B J E C T.

But some love not the Method of your first;
Romance they count it, throw't away as Dust.
If I should meet with such, What should I say,
Must I slight them as they slight me, or nay?

A N S W E R.

*My Christiana, if with such thou meet,
By all Means in all loving-wise them greet;
Render them not Reviling for Revile;
But if they frown, I prithee on them smile:
Perhaps 'tis Nature, or some ill Report,
Has made them thus despise, or thus resort.*

*Some love no Fish, some love no Cbeefe, and some
Love not their Friends, nor their own House or Home.
Some start at Pig, slight Chickem, love not Fowl,
More than they love a Cuckow, or an Owl,
Leave such, my Christiana, to their Choice,
And seek those, who to find thee will rejoice;
By no Means strive, but in humble-wise,
Present thee to them in thy Pilgrim's-Guise.*

*Go then, my little Book, and shew to all
That entertain, and bid thee Welcome shall,
What thou shalt keep close, shut up from the rest,
And wish what thou shalt shew them may be best,
To them for Good, and make them chuse to be
Pilgrims by better far, than thee and me.*

P R E F A C E,

*Go then, I say, tell all Men who thou art,
Say, I am Christiana, and my Part
Is now with my Four Sons to tell you what
It is for Men to take a Pilgrim's Lot.*

*Go also, them who and what they be,
That now do go on Pilgrimage with thee:
Say, Here's my Neighbour Mercy, she is one,
That has long Time with me a Pilgrim gone:
Come, see her in her Virgin Face, and learn
'Twixt idle Ones, and Pilgrims, to discern.
Yea, let young Damsels learn of her to prize
The World which is to come in any wise:
When little tripping Maidens follow God,
And leave old doting Sinners to his Rod;
'Tis like those Days wherein the young ones cry'd
Hosanna, when the old Ones did deride.*

*Next tell them of old Honest, whom you found
With his white Hairs treading the Pilgrim's
Ground,
Yea, tell them how plain-hearted this Man was,
How after his good Lord he bare the Cross:
Perhaps with some grey Head this may prevail
With Christ to fall in Love, and Sin bewail.*

*Tell them also, how Master Fearing went
On Pilgrimage, and how the Time he spent
In Solitariness, with Fears and Cries;
And how, at last, he won the Joyful Prize.
He was a good Man, tho' much down in Spirit;
He is a good Man, and doth Life inherit.*

*Tell them of Master Feeble-mind also,
Who, not before, but still behind would go;
Shew them also how he'ad like t' have been slain,
And how one Great-Heart did his Life regain:*

This

P R E F A C E.

*This Man was true of Heart, tho' weak in Grace,
One might true Godliness read in his Face.*

*Then tell them of Master Ready-to-halt,
A Man with Crutches, but much without Fault:
Tell them how Master Feeble-mind and he
Did love, and in Opinion much agree,
And let all know, tho' Weakness was their Chance,
Yet sometimes one would Sing, the other Dance.*

*Forget not Master Valiant-for-the-Truth,
That Man of Courage, tho' a very Youth:
Tell every one his Spirit was so stout.
No Man could ever make him face about;
And how Great-Heart and he could not forbear;
But put down Doubting-Castle, slay Despair:*

*Overlook not Master Despondency,
Nor Much-afraid his Daughter, tho' they lie
Under such Mantles, as may make them look
(With some) as if their God had them forsok.
They softly went, but sure, and at the End
Found that the Lord of Pilgrims was their Friend.
When thou hast told the World of all these Things,
Then turn about; my Book, and touch these Strings;
Which, if but touched, will such Musick make,
They'll make a Cripple dance, a Giant quake.*

*Those Riddles that lie couch'd within thy Breast,
Freely propound, expound: And for the rest
Of thy Mysterious Lines, let them remain
For those whose nimble Fancies shall them gain.*

*Now may this Little-Book a Blessing be
To those who love this Little-Book and me:*

P R E F A C E.

*And may its Buyer have no Cause to say,
His Money is but lost, or thrown away;
Yea, may this Second Pilgrim yield that Fruit
As may with each good Pilgrim's fancy suit;
And may it some persuade that go Astray,
To turn their Foot and Heart to the right Way.*

Is the HEARTY PRAYER of

The AUTHOR,

John Bunyan.



T H E





Christiana and her Children set out on Pilgrimage.

(8)



T H E


Pilgrim's Progress:

In the SIMPLICITUDE of a

D R E A M.

P A R T II.

Courteous Companions,

OME Time since, to tell you my DREAM that I had of *Christian the Pilgrim*, and of his dangerous Journey towards the Coelestial Country, was pleasant to me, and profitable to you. I told you then also what I saw concerning his Wife and
Q 2 Children

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Children, and how unwilling they were to go with him on Pilgrimage; inſomuch that he was forced to go on his Progreſs without them; for he durſt not run the Danger of that Deſtruction, which he feared would come, by ſtaying with them in the City of *Deſtruction*. Wherefore, as I then ſhewed you, he left them and departed.

Now it hath ſo happened, thro' the Multiplicity of Buſineſs, that I have been much hindered and kept back from my wonted Travels into thoſe Parts where he went, and ſo could not, till now, obtain an Opportunity to make further Enquiry after whom he left behind, that I might give an Account of them. But having had ſome Concerns that Way of late, I went down again thitherward. Now having taken up my Lodgings in a Wood, about a Mile off the Place, as I ſlept, I dreamed again.

And as I was in my Dream, behold an aged Gentleman came by where I lay; and becauſe he was to go ſome Part of the Way that I was travelling, methought I got up and went with him. So as we walked, and as Travellers uſually do, I was as if we fell into a Diſcourſe, and our Talk happened to be about *Chriſtian*, and his Travels: For thus I began with the Old Man.

Sir, ſaid I, What Town is that there below, that lieth on the Left Hand of our Way?

Then ſaid Mr. *Sagacity*, for that was his Name, it is the City of *Deſtruction*, a
 Populous

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

3

Populous Place, but possess'd with a very ill-condition'd and idle Sort of People.

I thought that was that City, quoth I: I went once myself thro' that Town; and therefore I know that this Report you give of 'it is true.

Sag. Too true; I wish I could speak Truth in speaking better of them that dwell therein.

Well, Sir, quoth I, then I perceive you to be a well-meaning Man, and so one that takes Pleasure to hear and tell of that which is Good: Pray, did you never hear what happen'd to a Man some Time ago in this Town, (whose Name was *Christian*) that went on a Pilgrimage up towards the higher Regions?

Sag. Hear of him! *Alas*; and I also heard of the Molestations, Troubles, Wars, Captivities, Cries, Groans, Frights, and Fears that he met with and had in his Journey; besides, I must tell you, all our Country rings of him; there are but few Houses that have heard of him and his Doings, but have sought after, and got the Records of his Pilgrimage; yea, I think I may say, That this hazardous Journey has got many Well-wishers to his Ways: For tho' when he was here, *Christians are* he was *Fool* in every Man's Mouth, yet *well spoken of* now he is gone, he is highly commended *when gone,* of all. For, 'tis said, he lives bravely *tho' called* where he is: Yea, many of them that *Fools while they are here,* are resolv'd never to run his Hazards, yet have their Mouths water at his Gains.

Q. 3

They

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

They may, *quoth I*, well think, if they think any Thing that is true, that he liveth well where he is; for he now lives at, and in the Fountain of Life, and has what he has without Labour and Sorrow, for there is no Grief mixed therewith. But pray, what Talk have the People about him?

Sag. Talk! The People talk strangely about him: Some say, that he now walks in White! that he has a Chain of Gold about his Neck, that he has a Crown of Gold, beset with Pearls, upon his Head: Others say, That the shining Ones that sometimes shewed themselves to him in his Journey, are become his Companions, and that he is as familiar with them in the Place where he is, as here one Neighbour is with another. Besides, 'tis confidently affirmed concerning him, that the King of the Place where he is, has bestowed upon him already a very rich and pleasant Dwelling at Court, and that he every Day eateth and drinketh, and walketh and talketh with him, and receiveth the Smiles and Favours of him that is Judge of all there. Moreover, it is expected of some, that this Prince, the Lord of that Country, will shortly come into these Parts, and will know the Reason, if they can give any, why his Neighbours set so little by him, and had him so much in Derision, when they perceived that he would be a Pilgrim.

* For they say, That now he is so in the Affections of his Prince, and that his Sovereign is so much concern'd with the Indignities that were cast upon *Christian*, when he became a Pilgrim, that he will look

Rev. 3. 4.
Chap. 6. 11.

Zech. 3. 7.
Luke 14.

Judg. 14. 15.

* *Christian's
King will
take
Christian's
Part.*

look upon all as done to himself; and no marvel, for 'twas for the Love that he had to his Prince, that he ventured as he did.

I dare say, *quoth I*, I am glad on't; I am glad for the poor Man's Sake, for that now he has Rest from his Labour, and for Luke 10. 16. that he now reaps the Benefits of his Tears Rev. 14. 13. with Joy: And for that he has got beyond Psal. 126. the Gun-shot of his Enemies, and is out 5, 6. of the Reach of them that hate him. I also am glad, for that a Rumour of these Things is noised abroad in this Country; who can tell but that it may work some good Effect on some that are left behind? But, pray, Sir, while it is fresh in my Mind, do you hear any Thing of his Wife and Children? Poor Heart, I wonder in my Mind what they do!

Sag. Who! *Christiana* and her Sons! † They are like to do well, as did *Christi- †. Good Ti-* *stian* himself; for though they all play'd *things of Chri-* the Fool at first, and would by no Means *stian's Wife* be persuaded either the Tears or Entreaties *and Children.* of *Christian*, yet second Thoughts have wrought wonderfully with them; so they have pack'd up, and are also gone after him.

Better and better, *quoth I*: But, what! Wife and Children and all?

Sag. 'Tis true, I can give you an Account of the Matter, for I was upon the Spot at the Instant, and was thoroughly acquainted with the whole Affair.

Then, *said I*, a Man may report it for a Truth.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Sag. You need not fear to affirm it. I mean, that they are all gone on Pilgrimage, both the good Women and her four Boys. And being we are, as I perceive, going some considerable Way together, I will give you an Account of the whole Matter.

This *Christiana* (for that was her Name) from the Day that she with her Children betook themselves to a Pilgrim's Life, after her Husband was gone *over the River*, and she could hear of him no more, her Thoughts began to work in her Mind. *First*, for that she had lost her Husband, and for that the loving Bond of that Relation was utterly broken betwixt them. For you know, said he to me, Nature can do no less but entertain the Living with many a heavy Cogitation in the Remembrance of the Loss of loving Relations. This therefore of her Husband did cost her many a Tear. But this was not all, for *Christiana* did also begin to consider with herself, Whether her unbecoming Behaviour towards her Husband was not one Cause that she saw him no more; and that in such Sort he was taken away from her. And upon this, came into her Mind by *Swarms*, all her Unkind, Unnatural, and Ungodly Carriage to her dear Friend; which also clogg'd her Conscience, and did load her with Guilt. She was moreover much broken with calling to Remembrance the restless Groans, the brinish Tears, and Self-bemoaning of her Husband, and how she did harden her Heart against all his Entreaties, and loving Per-

Part I. page
205.

Mark this
you that are
civillish to
your goodly
Relations.

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

7

Persuasions (of her and her Sons) to go with him; yea, there was not any thing that *Christian* either said to her, or did before her, all the while that his Burden did hang on his Back, but it returned upon her like a Flash of Lightning, and rent the Caul of her Heart in funder; especially that bitter Out-cry of his, *What shall I do to be saved?* Part I. pag. 1. 3. did ring in her Ears most dolefully.

Then said she to her Children, Sons, we are all undone. I have sinned away your Father, and he is gone; he would have had us with him, but I would not go myself; I also hindered you of Life. With that the Boys fell into Tears, and cry'd to go after their Father. Oh! said *Christiana*, that it had been but our Lots to go with him, then it had fared well with us, beyond what it is like to do now. For tho' I formerly foolishly imagined concerned the Troubles of your Father, that they proceeded of a foolish Fancy that he had, or for that he was over-run with melancholy Humours; yet now it will not out of my Mind, but that they sprang from another Cause, to wit, for that the Light of Life was given him; by the Help of which, as I perceive, he has escaped the Snares of Death. Then they wept all again, and cry'd out, *Oh, Wo worth the Day!* James 1. 23, 24, 25.

The next Night, *Christiana* had a Dream; and behold, she saw as if a broad Parchment was opened before her, in which were recorded the Sum of her Ways, and the Crimes, as she thought, look'd *very black upon her.* Christiana's Dream. Luke 18. 13. Then she cry'd out aloud in her

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

her Sleep, *Lord have Mercy upon me, a Sinner*; and the little Children heard her.

* *Mark this, this is the Quintessence of Hell.*

After this, she thought she saw two very ill-favour'd Ones standing by her Bed-side and saying, * *What shall we do with this Woman? For she cries out for Mercy waking and sleeping: If she be suffer'd to go on as she begins, we shall lose her as we have lost her Husband.* Wherefore we must, by some Way, seek to take her off, from the Thoughts of what shall be hereafter, else all the World cannot help but she will become a Pilgrim.

† *Help against Discouragement.*

Now she awoke in a great Sweat, also a Trembling was upon her; but after a While she fell to sleeping again. † And then she thought she saw *Christian* her Husband in a Place of Bliss among many *Immortals*, with a *Harp* in his Hand, standing and playing upon it before one that sat on a Throne, with a Rainbow about his Head. She saw also as if he bowed his Head with his Face to the Paved-Work that was under his Prince's Feet, saying, *I heartily thank my Lord and King for bringing me into this Place.* Then shouted a Company of them that stood round about and harped with their Harps: But no Man living could tell what they said, but *Christian* and his Companions.

Next Morning, when she was up, had pray'd to God, and talked with her Children a While, one knock'd hard at the Door; to whom she spake out, saying, *If thou comest in God's Name, come in.* So he said *Amen*, and open'd the Door and saluted her with *Peace on this House.* The which,

which, when he had done, he said, *Christiana*, knowest thou wherefore I am come? Then she blushed and trembled, also her Heart began to wax warm with Desires to know from whence he came, and what his Errand was to her. So he said unto her, My Name is *Secret*, I dwell with those that are high. It is talked of where I dwell, as if thou hadst a Desire to go thither; also there is a Report that thou art aware of the Evil thou hast formerly done to thy Husband, in hardening of thy Heart against his Way, and in keeping of these Babes in their Ignorance. *Christiana*, the Merciful One has sent me to tell thee, That he is a God ready to forgive, and that he taketh Delight to multiply the Pardon of Offences. He also would have thee to know, That he inviteth thee to come into his Presence, to his Table, and that he will feed thee with the Fat of his House, and with the Heritage of *Jacob* thy Father.

There is *Christian* thy Husband, that was, with Legions more, his Companions, ever beholding that Face that doth minister Life to Beholders; And they will all be glad when they shall hear the Sound of thy Feet step over thy Father's Threshold.

Christiana at this was greatly abashed in herself, and bowed her Head to the Ground. This *Vision* proceeded, and said, *Christiana*, Here is also a Letter for thee, which I have brought from thy Husband's King; so she took it and opened it, but it smelt after the Manner of the best Perfume. Also it was written in Letters of Gold. The

Con-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Contents of the Letter was this; *That the King would have her to do as did Christian her Husband, for that was the Way to come to his City, and to dwell in his Presence with Joy for ever.* At this the good Woman was quite overcome: So she cried out to her Visiter, *Sir, will you carry me and my Children with you, that we may also go and worship the King?*

Christiana quite overcome.

Farther Instructions to Christiana.

Then said the Visiter, *Christiana! the Bitter is before the Sweet.* Thou must through Troubles, as he did that went before thee, enter this Coelestial City, Wherefore I advise thee to do as did *Christian* thy Husband: Go to the *Wicket-Gate* yonder over the Plain, for that stands in the Head of the Way up which thou must go, and I wish thee all good Speed. Also I advise thee, that thou put this Letter in thy Bosom: That thou read therein to thyself, and to thy Children, until they have got it by Heart: For it is one of the Songs that thou must sing while thou art in this House of thy Pilgrimage: Also this thou must deliver in at the farther Gate.

Psal. 119. 55.

Now I saw in my Dream, that this old Gentleman, as he told me this Story, did himself seem to be greatly affected therewith. He moreover proceeded and said: So *Christiana* called her Sons together, and began to address herself unto them: * My Sons, I have, as you may perceive, been of late under much Exercise in my Soul, about the Death of your Father; not for that I doubt at all of his Happiness; for I am satisfied now that he is well. I have

* Christiana prays well for her Journey.

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

11

have been also much affected with due Thoughts of mine own State and yours, which I verily believe is by Nature miserable. My Carriage also to your Father in his Distress, is a great Load to my Conscience: For I harden'd both my own Heart and yours against him, and refused to go with him on Pilgrimage.

The Thoughts of these Things would now kill me outright, but that for a Dream which I had last Night, and but that for the Encouragement that this Stranger has given me this Morning. Come my Children, let us pack up, and be gone to the Gate that leads to that Coelestial Country, that we may see your Father, and be with him and his Companions in Peace, according to the Laws of that Land.

Then did her Children burst out into Tears, for Joy that the Heart of their Mother was so inclined: So that Visiter bid them farewell: And they began to prepare to set out for their Journey.

But while they were thus about to be gone, two of the Women that were *Christiana's* Neighbours, came up to her House, and knocked at the Door. To whom she said as before. * At this the Women were stunn'd; for this kind of Language they used not to hear, or to perceive to drop from the Lips of *Christiana*. Yet they came in: But behold, they found the good Woman preparing to be gone from her House.

So they began, and said, Neighbour, pray what is your Meaning by this?

Chri-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Christiana answered, and said to the eldest of them, whose Name was Mrs. *Timorous*, I am preparing for a Journey. (This *Timorous* was Daughter to him that met *Christian* upon the Hill of *Difficulty*, and would have had him gone back for fear of the Lions.)

Part I. pag.
47.

Tim. For what Journey, I pray you?

Christ. Even to go after my old Husband; and with that she fell a weeping.

Timorous
comes to visit
Christiana
with *Mercy*,
one of her
Neighbours.

Tim. I hope not so, good Neighbour; pray, for your poor Childrens Sake, do not so unwomanly cast away yourself.

Christ. Nay, my Children shall go with me, not one of them is willing to stay behind.

Tim. I wonder in my Heart, what or who has brought you into this Mind.

Christ. Oh, Neighbour, knew you but as much as I do, I doubt not but that you would go along with me.

Tim. Prithee, what new Knowledge hast thou got, that so worketh off thy Mind from thy Friends, and that tempteth thee to go no body knows where?

Christ. Then *Christiana* reply'd, I have been sorely afflicted since my Husband's Departure from me; but especially since he went over the River. But that which troubleth me most, is my churlish Carriage to him, when he was under his Distress. Besides I am now as he was then; nothing will serve me, but going on Pilgrimage. I was dreaming last Night, that I saw him. O that my Soul was with him! He dwelleth in the Presence of the King of the Country; he sits and eats with

Death.

with him at his Table; he is become a Companion of *Immortals*, and has a House ^{1 Cor. 5.} now given him to dwell in, to which the ^{1, 2, 3, 4.} best Palaces on Earth, if compared, seem to me but as a Dunghil. The Prince of the Palace has also sent for me, with Promises of Entertainment, if I shall come to him; his Messenger was here even now, and brought me a Letter, which invites me to come. And with that she pluck'd out her Letter, and read it, and said to them, What now will you say to this?

Tim. Oh! the Madness that has possessed thee and thy Husband! to run yourselves upon such Difficulties! You have heard, I am sure, what your Husband did meet with, even in a Manner, at the first Step that he took on his Way, as our Neighbour *Obstinate* can yet testify, for he went along with ^{Part I. pag. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9.} him; yea, and *Pliable* too, until they, like *Wise-men*, were afraid to go any farther. We also heard over and above, how he met with the Lions, *Apollyon*, the Shadow of Death, and many other Things. Nor is the Danger that he met with at ^{*The Reason- Vanity-Fair*} to be forgotten by thee. For ^{ings of the Flesh.} if he, tho' a Man, was so hard put to it, what canst thou, being but a poor Woman, do? Consider also, that these four sweet Babes are thy Children, thy Flesh, and thy Bones. Therefore, tho' thou should'st be so rash as to cast away thyself; yet for the sake of the Fruit of thy Body, keep thou at home.

But *Christiana* said unto her, Tempt me not, my Neighbour: I have now a Prize put into my Hand to get again, and I should

*A Pertinent
Reply to fleshly
Reasonings.*

should be a Fool of the greatest sort, if I should have no Heart to strike in with the Opportunity. And for that you tell me of all these Troubles that I am like to meet with in the Way, they are so far from being to me a Discouragement, that they shew I am in the right. *The Bitter must come before the Sweet*, and that also will make the Sweet the sweeter. Wherefore since you came not to my House *in God's Name*, as I said; I pray you be gone, and do not disquiet me farther.

*Mercy's Bowels
yearn over
Christiana.*

Then *Timorous* also reviled her, and said to her Fellow, Come, Neighbour *Mercy*, let's leave her in her own Hands, she scorns our Counsel and Company. But *Mercy* was at a stand, and could not so readily comply with her Neighbour, and that for a twofold Reason, 1st, Her Bowels yearned over *Christiana*. So she said within herself, If my Neighbour will be gone, I will go a little way with her, and help her. 2dly, Her Bowels yearned over her own Soul, (for what *Christiana* had said, had taken some hold upon her Mind.) Wherefore she said within herself again, I will yet have more Talk with this *Christiana*, and if I find Truth and Life in what she shall say, myself with my Heart shall also go with her. Wherefore *Mercy* began thus to reply to her Neighbour *Timorous*.

*Timorous for-
sakes her, but
Mercy cleaves
to her.*

Mercy. Neighbour, I did indeed come with you to see *Christiana* this Morning; and since she is, as you see, a taking her last Farewel of the Country, I think to walk

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

15

walk this Sun-shiny Morning, a little with her, to help her on her Way. But she told her not of the second Reason, but kept it to herself.

Tim. Well, I see you have a Mind to go a Fooling too; but take heed in Time and be wise; while we are out of Danger, we are out; but when we are in, we are in. So Mrs. *Timorous* returned to her House, and *Christiana* betook herself to her Journey. But when *Timorous* was got home to her House, she sends for some of her Neighbours, to wit, Mrs. *Bar's-eyes*, Mrs. *Inconsiderate*, Mrs. *Light-mind*, and Mrs. *Know-nothing*. So when they were come to her House, she falls to telling of the Story of *Christiana*, and of her intended Journey. And thus she began her Tale.

Timorous acquaints her Friends, what the good *Christiana* intends to do.

Tim. Neighbours, having but little to do this Morning, I went to give *Christiana* a Visit; and when I came at the Door, I knocked, as you know it is our Custom: And she answered, *If you come in God's Name, come in.* So in I went, thinking all was well: But when I came in, I found her preparing herself to depart the Town, she, and also her Children. So I asked her, what was her Meaning by that? And she told me in short, That she was now of a Mind to go on Pilgrimage, as did her Husband. She told me also a Dream that she had, and how the King of the Country where her Husband was, had sent her an inviting Letter to come thither.

Then said Mrs. *Know-nothing*, and what do you think she will go?

Mrs. *Know-nothing.*

R

Tim.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Tim. Ay, go she will, whatever comes on't; and methinks I know it by this; for that which was my great Argument to persuade her to stay at home, (to wit, the Troubles she was like to meet with in the Way) is one great Argument with her, to put her forward on her Journey. For she told me in so many Words, *The Bitter goes before the Sweet*: Yea, and forasmuch as it doth, it makes the Sweet the Sweeter.

Mrs. Bat's-Eyes.

Mrs. Bat's-Eyes. Oh, this blind and foolish Woman, said she; and will she not take Warning by her Husband's Afflictions? For my part, I see, if he were here again, he would rest him content in a whole Skin, and never run so many Hazards for nothing.

Mrs. Inconsiderate.

Mrs. Inconsiderate also replied, saying, Away with such Fantastical Fools from the Town; a good Riddance, for my part, I say, of her; should she stay where she dwells, and retain this Mind, who could live quietly by her? for she will either be dumpish or unneighbourly, to talk of such Matters as no wise Body can abide: Wherefore, for my part, I shall never be sorry for her Departure; let her go, and let better come in her Room: It was never a good World since these whimsical Fools dwelt in it.

Mrs. Lightmind, Madam Wanton, she that had like to have been too hard for Faithful in time past, Part I. pag. 82.

Then *Mrs. Lightmind* added as followeth; Come, put this kind of Talk away. I was Yesterday at *Madam Wanton's*, where we were as merry as the Maids. For who do you think should be there, but I and *Mrs. Love-the-Flesh*, and three or four

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

17

four more, with Mrs. Lechery, Mrs. Pish, and some others: So there we had Musick, and Dancing, and what else was meet to fill up the Pleasure. And I dare say, my Lady herself is an admirable well-bred Gentlewoman, and Mr. Lechery is as pretty a Fellow. By this time *Christiana* was got on her Way, and *Mercy* went along with her: So as they went, her Children being there also, *Christiana* began to discourse. And, *Mercy*, said *Christiana*, I take this as an unexpected Favour, that thou should'st set Foot out of Doors with me, to accompany me a little in my Way.

Discourse between Mercy and good Christiana.

Mercy. Then said young *Mercy* (for she was but young) If I thought it would be to Purpose to go with you, I would never go near the Town.

Mercy inclines to go.

Christ. Well, *Mercy*, said *Christiana*, cast in thy Lot with me, I well know what will be the End of our Pilgrimage; my Husband is where he would not but be for all the Gold in the *Spanish* Mines. Nor shalt thou be rejected, tho' thou goest but upon *my Invitation*. The King who hath sent for me and Children, is one that delighteth in *Mercy*. Besides, if thou wilt, I will hire thee, and thou shalt go along with me as my Servant. Yet we will have all Things in common betwixt thee and me, only go along with me.

Christiana would have her Neighbour with her.

Mercy. But how shall I be ascertained that I also should be entertained? Had I this Hope from one that can tell, I would make no Stick at all, but would go, being helped by him that can help, tho' the Way was never so tedious.

Mercy doubts of acceptance.

Christiana allures her to the Gate, which is Christ, and promises there to enquire for her.

Christ. Well, loving *Mercy*, I will tell thee what thou shalt do; go with me to the *Wicket-gate*, and there I will further enquire for thee; and if there thou shalt not meet with Encouragement, I will be content that thou return to thy Place; I also will pay thee for thy Kindness which thou shewest to me and my Children in the accompanying of us in our Way as thou dost.

Mercy prays. *Mercy.* Then will I go thither, and will take what shall follow; and the Lord grant that my Lot may there fall, even as the King of Heaven shall have his Heart upon me.

Christiana glad of Mercy's Company.

Christiana then was glad at her Heart, not only that she had a Companion, but also for that she had prevailed with this poor Maid to fall in Love with her own Salvation. So they went on together, and *Mercy* began to weep. Then said *Christiana*, Wherefore weepeth my Sister so?

Mercy grieves for her Carnal Relations.

Mercy. Alas! said she, who can but lament, that shall but rightly consider what a State and Condition my poor Relations are in, that yet remain in our sinful Town: And that which makes my Grief the more, is because they have no Instruction, nor any to tell them what is to come.

Christian's Prayers were answered for his Relations, after he was dead.

Christ. Bowels become Pilgrims: And thou dost for thy Friends, as my good *Christian* did for me when he left me; he mourned for that I would not heed nor regard him, but his Lord and ours did gather up his Tears, and put them into his Bottle, and now both I and thou, and these my sweet Babes, are reaping the Fruit

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

19.

Fruit and Benefit of them. I hope, *Mercy*, that these Tears of thine will not be lost; for the Truth hath said, *that they that sow in Tears, shall reap in Joy and Singing.* Psal. 126 5
And he that goeth forth and weepeth, bearing precious Seed, shall doubtless come again with Rejoicing, bringing his Sheaves with him. ^{6.}

Then said *Mercy*.

*Let the most Blessed be my Guide,
If't be his blessed Will,
Unto his Gate, into his Fold,
Up to his holy Hill:
And let him never suffer me
To swerve or turn aside
From his Free-grace, and holy Ways,
Whate'er shall me betide.
And let him gather them of mine,
That I have left behind;
Lord, make them pray they may be thine,
With all their Heart and Mind.*

Now my old Friend proceeded, and Part I. Page said — But when *Christiana* came to the 9, 10. Slough of *Despond*, she began to be at a Their own Stand; for, said she, This is the Place Carnal Con- in which my dear Husband had like to clusions instead have been smothered with Mud. She of the Word perceived also, That notwithstanding the of Life. Command of the King to make this Place for Pilgrims good, yet it was rather worse than formerly: So I asked if that was true? Yes, said the old Gentleman, too true: For many there be, that pre-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

tend to be the King's Labourers, and say, They are for mending the King's Highway, that bring *Dirt* and *Dung* instead of Stones, and so marr instead of mending. Here *Christiana* therefore, and her

Boys, did make a Stand: But said *Mercy*, * Come let us venture, only let us be wary. Then they looked well to their Steps, and made a Shift to get staggering over.

* *Mercy the boldest at the Slough of Despond.*
Luke 1. 45.

Yet *Christiana* had like to have been in, and that not once or twice. Now they had no sooner got over, but they thought they heard Words that said unto them, *Blessed is she that believeth, for there shall be a Performance of what has been told her from the Lord.*

Then they went on again, and said *Mercy* to *Christiana*, Had I as good Ground to hope for a loving Reception at the Wicket-Gate, as you, I think no Slough of *Despond* would discourage me.

Well, said the other, you know your Sore, and I know mine; and, good Friend, we shall all have enough Evil before we come to our Journey's End.

For it cannot be imagined, That the People that design to attain such excellent Glories as we do, and that are so envied that Happiness as we are; but that we shall meet with what Fears and Snares, with what Troubles and Afflictions they can possibly assault us with, that hate us.

And now Mr. *Sagacity* left me to dream out my Dream by myself. Wherefore, methought I saw *Christiana* and *Mercy*, and the Boys, go all of them up to the Gate:

To

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.* 21

To which, when they came, they betook themselves to a short Debate, about *how* they must manage their Calling at the Gate; and what should be said unto him that did open unto them. So it was concluded, since *Christiana* was the Eldest, That she should knock for Entrance, and that she should speak to him that did open, for the rest. So *Christiana* began to knock, and as her poor Husband did, she knocked, and knocked again. But instead of any that answered, they all thought that they heard as if a Dog came barking upon them. A Dog, and a great one too, and this made the Women and Children afraid. Nor durst they for a while to knock any more, for fear the *Mastiff* should fly upon them. Now therefore they were greatly tumbled up and down in their Minds, and knew not what to do: Knock they durst not, for fear of the Dog; Go back they durst not, for fear the Keeper of that Gate should espy them as they so went, and be offended with them: At last they thought of knocking again, and knocking more vehemently than they did at first. Then said the Keeper of the Gate, Who is there? So the Dog left off to bark, and he opened unto them.

Then *Christiana* made low Obeifance, and said, Let not our Lord be offended with his Hand-maidens, for that we have knocked at his Princely Gate. Then said the Keeper, Whence came ye? And what is that you would have?

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Christiana answered, We are come from whence *Christian* did come, and upon the same Errand as he; to wit, to be, if it shall please you, graciously admitted, by this Gate, into the Way that leads unto the Cœlestial City. And I answer, my Lord, in the next Place, that I am *Christiana*, once the Wife of *Christian*, that now is gotten above.

With that the Keeper of the Gate did marvel, saying, What is she now become a Pilgrim, that but a while ago abhorred that Life? Then she bowed her Head, and said, Yea, and so are these my sweet Babes also.

How Christiana is entertained at the Gate.

Then he took her by the Hand, and let her in, and said also, *Suffer the little Children to come unto me*; and with that he shut up the Gate. This done, he called to a Trumpeter that was above, over the Gate, to entertain *Christiana* with Shouting, and Sound of Trumpet, for Joy. So he obey'd and founded, and fill'd the Air with his melodious Notes.

Now all this while poor *Mercy* did stand without, trembling and crying, for fear that she was rejected. But when *Christiana* had gotten Admittance for herself and her Boys, then she began to make Intercession for *Mercy*.

Christiana's Prayer for her Friend Mercy.

Christ. And she said, My Lord, I have a Companion of mine that stands yet without, that is come hither upon the same Account as myself: One that is much dejected in her Mind, for that she comes, as she thinks, without sending for; where-

as I was sent to by my Husband's King to come.

Now *Mercy* began to be very impatient, *The Delays* and each Minute was as long to her as an *make the hun-* Hour; wherefore she prevented *Christiana* *gring Soul the* from a fuller Interceding for her, by knock- *servanter.* ing at the Gate herself. And she knocked then so loud, that she made *Christiana* to start. Then said the Keeper of the Gate, Who is there? And *Christiana* said, It is my Friend.

So he opened the Gate and looked out, but *Mercy* was fallen down without in a *Mercy faints.* Swoon, for she fainted, and was afraid that no Gate would be opened to her.

Then he took her by the Hand, and said, *Damsel*, I bid thee arise.

O, Sir, said she, I am faint; there is scarce Life left in me. But he answered that one said, *When my Soul fainted within* *Jonah 2. 7.* *me, I remembered the Lord, and my Prayer came unto thee, into thy Holy Temple.* Fear not but stand upon thy Feet, and tell me wherefore thou art come.

Mercy. I am come for that unto which *The Cause of* I was never invited, as my Friend *Christiana* *her Fainting.* was. Hers was from the King, and mine was but from her. Wherefore I presume.

Did she desire thee to come with her to this Place?

Mercy. Yes; and as my Lord sees, I am come. And if there is any Grace or Forgiveness of Sins to spare, I beseech that thy poor Hand-maid may be Partaker thereof.

Then

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Mark xlii.

Then he took her again by the Hand and led her gently in, and said, I pray for all them that believe on me; by what Means soever they come unto me. Then said he to those that stood by, fetch something and give it *Mercy* to smell on, thereby to stay her Faintings: So they fetch'd her a Bundle of Myrrh; a while after, she was revived.

And now was *Christiana* and her Boys, and *Mercy*, received of the Lord at the Head of the Way, and spoke kindly unto by him. Then said they yet farther unto him, We are sorry for our Sins, and beg of our Lord his Pardon and farther Information what we must do.

Song 1. 2.
John 20. 20.

I grant Pardon, said he, by Word and Deed; by Word, in the Promise of Forgiveness; by Deed, in the Way I obtained it. Take the first from my Lips with a Kiss, and the other as it shall be revealed.

Christ Crucified seen afar off.

Now I saw in my Dream, that he spake many good Words unto them, whereby they were greatly gladdened. He also had them up to the Top of the Gate, and shew'd them by what Deed they were saved; and told them withal, That that Sight they would have again as they went along in the Way, to their Comfort.

Talk between the Christians.

So he left them a While in a Summer Parlour below, where they enter'd into Talk by themselves; and thus *Christiana* began: O Lord! how glad am I, that we are got in hither!

Mercy. So you well may; but I of all have Cause to leap for Joy.

Christ-

Christ. I thought one Time as I stood at the Gate, (because I had knock'd and none did answer) that all our Labour had been lost; especially when that ugly Cur made such a heavy Barking at us.

Mercy. But my worst Fear was, after I saw that you was taken into his Favour, and that I was left behind: Now, thought I, it is fulfilled which is written, *Two Wo-* Mat. 24. 41.
men shall be grinding together, the one shall be taken, and the other left. I had much ado to forbear crying out, *Undone!*

And afraid I was to knock any more; but when I looked up to what was written over the Gate, I took Courage. I also thought that I must either knock again, or die: So I knocked, but I cannot tell Part I. p. 23.
how; for my Spirit now struggled between Life and Death.

Christ. Can you not tell how you knock- Christiana
ed? I am sure your Knocks were so ear- thinks her
nest, that the very Sound made me start; Companion
I thought I never heard such Knocking in prays better
all my Life; I thought you would come than she.
in by a violent Hand, or take the Kingdom Mat. 11. 12.
by Storm.

Mercy. Alas! to be in my Case, who that so was, could but have done so? You saw that the Door was shut upon me, and that there was a most cruel *Dog* thereabout. Who, I say, that was so faint-hearted as I, would not have knocked with all their Might? But pray, What said my Lord unto my Rudeness? Was he not angry with me?

Christ. When he heard your lumbering Christ pleased
Noise, he gave a wonderful innocent with loud and
Smile: reflex Prayer.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Smile : I believe what you did, pleased him well, for he shewed no Sign to the contrary. But I marvel in my Heart why he keeps such a Dog ; had I known that before, I should not have had Heart enough to have ventured myself in this Manner. But now we are in, we are in, and I am glad with all my Heart.

Mercy. I will ask, if you please, next Time he comes down, why he keeps such a filthy Cur in his Yard ; I hope he will not take it amiss.

*The Children
are afraid of
the Dog.*

Do so, said the Children, and persuade him to hang him, for we are afraid he will bite us when we go hence.

So at last he came down to them again, and *Mercy* fell to the Ground on her Face, before him, and worshipped, and said, Let my Lord accept the Sacrifice of Praise which I now offer unto him with the Calves of my Lips.

*Jer. 12. 1, 2.
Mercy expo-
sulates about
the Dog.*

So he said unto her, *Peace be to thee, stand up.* But she continued upon her Face, and said, *Righteous art thou, O Lord, when I plead with thee, let me talk with thee of thy Judgments : Wherefore dost thou keep so cruel a Dog in thy Yard, at the Sight of which, such Women and Children, as we, are ready to fly from the Gate for Fear ?*

Devil.

Part I. p. 31.

He answered and said, *That Dog has another Owner ; he also is kept close in another Man's Ground, only my Pilgrims bear his Barking : He belongs to the Castle which you see there at a Distance, but can come up to the Walls of this Place. He has frighted many an honest Pilgrim from Worse to Better, by the great Voice of his Roaring. Indeed,*
be

be that owneth him, doth not keep him out of any Good-will to me or mine, but with Intent to keep the Pilgrims from coming to me, and that they may be afraid to come and knock at this Gate of Entrance. Sometimes also he has broken out, and has worried some that I loved; but I take all at present patiently. I also give my Pilgrims timely Help, so that they are not deliver'd up to his Power, to do to them what his Doggish Nature would prompt him to. A Check to the Carnal Fear of the Pilgrims. But what! my purchased One, I tro, hadst thou known never so much before-hand, thou wouldest not have been afraid of a Dog.

The Beggars that go from Door to Door, will, rather than they will lose a supposed Alms, run the Hazard of the Bawling, Barking, and Biting too of a Dog: And shall a Dog in another Man's Yard, a Dog whose Barking I turn to the Profit of Pilgrims, keep any from coming to me? I deliver them from the Lions, and my Darling from the Power of the Dog.

Mercy. Then said Mercy, I confess my Christians Ignorance: I speak what I understand not; I acknowledge that thou dost all Things well. when wise enough, acquiesce in the Wisdom of the Lord.

Christ. Then Christiana began to talk of their Journey, and to enquire after the Way. So he fed them and washed their Feet, and set them in the Way of his Steps, according as he had dealt with her Husband before. So I saw in my Dream, that they went on their Way, and the Weather was comfortable to them. Part I. p. 36.

Then

Then *Christiana* began to sing, saying,

Bless'd be the Day that I began

A Pilgrim for to be ;

And blessed also be the Man,

That thereunto moved me.

'Tis true, 'twas long e'er I began

To seek to live for ever :

But now I run fast as I can ;

'Tis better late, than never.

Our Tears to Joy, our Fears to Faith,

Are turned as we see ;

That our Beginning (as one saith)

Shows what our End will be.

Now there was on the other Side of the Wall, that fenced in the Way up which *Christiana* and her Companions were to go, a Garden, and that belong'd to him, whose was that *Barking Dog*, of whom Mention was made before. And some of the Fruit-Trees that grew in the Garden, shot their Branches upon the Wall ; and being mellow, they that found them did gather them up and eat of them to their Hurt. So *Christiana's* Boys, as Boys are apt to do, being pleas'd with the Trees, and with the Fruit that did hang thereon, did pluck them, and began to eat. Their Mother did also chide them for so doing, but still the Boys went on.

*The Devil's
Garden.*

*The Children
eat of the En-
emy's Fruit.*

Well, said she, my Sons, you transgress, for that Fruit is none of ours ; but she did not know that they did belong to the
Enemy :

Enemy: I'll warrant you, if she had, she would have been ready to die for Fear. But that passed, and they went on their Way. Now, by that they were gone about two Bows-shot from the Place that led them into the Way, they espied two very Ill-favour'd Ones coming down apace to meet them. *Two Ill-favour'd Ones assault Christiana.* With that *Christiana*, and *Mercy* her Friend, covered themselves with their Veils, and kept also on their Journey: The Children also went on before; so that at last they met together. Then they that came down to meet them, came just up to the Women, as if they would embrace them; but *Christiana* said, Stand back, or go peaceably as you should. Yet *The Pilgrims* these two, as Men that are deaf, regard-*struggle with them.* ed not *Christiana's* Words, but began to lay Hands upon them; at that *Christiana* waxed very wroth, and spurned at them with her Feet. *Mercy* also, as well as she could, did what she could to shift them. *Christiana* again said to them, Stand back, and be gone, for we have no Money to lose, being Pilgrims as you see, and such too as live upon the Charity of our Friends.

Ill-Fav. Then said one of the two Men, we make no Assault upon you for Money, but are come out to tell you, that if you will but grant one small Request which we shall ask, we will make Women of you for ever.

Christ. Now *Christiana* imagining what they should mean, made Answer again, *We will neither bear nor regard, nor yield to what you shall ask. We are in haste, and cannot*

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

cannot stay, our Blessed is of Life and Death:
So again she and her Companions made a
fresh Essay to go past them: But they
letted them in their Way.

Ill-Fav. And they said, we intend no
Hurt to your Lives, 'tis another Thing
we would have.

She cries out.

Cbr. Ay, quoth *Christiana*, you would
have us Body and Soul, for I know 'tis
for that you are come; but we will die
rather upon the Spot, than to suffer our-
selves to be brought into such Snares, as
shall hazard our Well-being hereafter.
And with that they both shrieked out, and
cry'd *Murder, Murder.* And so put them-
selves under those Laws that are provided
for the Protection of Women. But the
Men still made their Approach upon them,
with Design to prevail against them. They
therefore cried out again.

Deut. 22. 23,
26, 27.

*'Tis good to
cry out when
we are af-
saulted.*

Now they being, as I said, not far from
the Gate, in at which they came, their Voice
was heard from where they were, thither:
Wherefore some of the House came out,
and knowing that it was *Christiana's*
Tongue, they made haste to her Relief.
But by that they were got within Sight of
them, the Women were in a very great
Scuffle, the Children also stood crying by.

*The Reliever
comes.*

Then did he that came in for their Relief
call out to the Ruffians, saying, What is
that Thing you do? Would you make
my Lord's People to transgress? He also
attempted to take them, but they did
make their Escape over the Wall into the
Garden of the Man to whom the Great
Dog belonged; so the Dog became their
Protector.

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

31

Protector. This *Reliever* then came up *The ill Ones* to the Women, and asked them how they *fly to the Devil for Relief.* did. So they answered, we thank thy Prince, pretty well, only we have been somewhat affrighted; we thank thee also, for that thou camest in to our Help, for otherwise we had been overcome.

Reliever. So after a few more Words, this *Reliever* said, as followeth: I marvelled much when you was entertained at *The Reliever talks to the Women.* the Gate above, being ye know that ye were but weak Women, that you petition'd not the Lord for a Conductor: Then might you have avoided these Troubles and Dangers; he would have granted you one.

Christ. Alas! said *Christiana*, We were *Mark this.* so taken with our present Blessing, that Dangers to come were forgotten by us: Beside, who could have thought, that so near the King's Palace, there should have lurked such naughty Ones? Indeed, it had been well for us, had we asked our Lord for one; but since our Lord knew it would be for our Profit, I wonder he sent not one along with us!

Rel. It is not always necessary to grant *We lose for want of asking.* Things not asked for, lest by so doing they become of little Esteem; but when the Want of a Thing is felt, it then comes under, in the Eyes of him that feels it, that Estimate, that properly is its Due, and so consequently will be hereafter used. Had my Lord granted you a Conductor, you would not neither so have bewailed that Oversight of yours, in not asking for one, as now you have Occasion to do.

S

So

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

So all Things work for Good, and tend to make you more wary.

Christ. Shall we go back again to my Lord, and confess our Folly, and ask one ?

Rel. Your Confession of your Folly I will present him with : To go back again, you need not ; for in all Places where you shall come, you will find no Want at all ; for every of my Lord's Lodgings, which he has prepared for the Reception of his Pilgrims, there is sufficient to furnish them against all Attempts whatsoever. But as I said, he will be enquired of by them to do it for them. And it is a poor Thing that is not worth asking for. When he had thus said, he went back to his Place, and the Pilgrims went on their Way.

Ezek. 36. 37.

The Mistake of Mercy.

Mercy. Then said *Mercy*, What a sudden Blank is here : I made account we had been past all Danger, and that we should never sorrow more.

Christiana's Guilt.

Christ. Thy *Innocency*, my Sister, said *Christiana* to *Mercy*, may excuse thee much ; but as for me, my Fault is so much the greater, for that I saw this Danger before I came out of the Doors, and yet did not provide for it where Provision might have been had. I am much to be blamed.

Mercy. Then said *Mercy*, How knew you this before you came from Home ? Pray open to me this Riddle.

Christ. Why, I will tell you : Before I set Foot out of Doors one Night, as I lay in my Bed, I had a Dream about this : For methought I saw two Men, as like these as ever the World they could look,

look, stand at my Bed's Feet, plotting how they might prevent my Salvation. I will tell you their very Words: They said, (it was when I was in my Troubles) What *Christiana's* shall we do with this Woman? For she *Dream repeat-* cries out Waking and Sleeping for For- *ed.* giveness; if she be suffered to go on as she begins, we shall lose her as we have lost her Husband. This you know might have made me take heed, and have provided when Provision might have been had.

Mercy. Well, said *Mercy*, As by this *Mercy makes* Neglect we have an Occasion ministered *good Use of* unto us, to behold our Imperfections: So *their Neglect* our Lord has taken Occasion thereby *of Duty.* to make manifest the Riches of his Grace; for he, as we see, has followed us with unasked Kindness, and has deliver'd us from their Hands that were stronger than we, of his mere good Pleasure.

Thus now when they had talked away a little more Time, they drew near to a *Part I. pag.* House which stood in the Way, which *27. Sc.* House was built for the Relief of Pilgrims, as you will find more fully related in the First Part of the Records of the *Pilgrim's Progress*: So they drew on towards the House, (the House of the *Interpreter*) and when they came to the Door, they heard a great Talk in the House; then they gave ear, and heard, as they thought, *Christiana* mention'd by Name. For you must know, that there went along even before *Interpreter's* her a Talk of her and her Children *House about* going on Pilgrimage. And this was the *Christiana's* more pleasing to them, because they had heard that she was *Christian's* Wife, that

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

*She knocks at
the Door.*

Woman who was some Time ago so unwilling to hear of going on Pilgrimage. Thus therefore, they stood still, and heard the good People within commending her, who they little thought stood at the Door. At last, *Christiana* knock'd, 'as she had done at the Gate before. Now when she had knocked, there came to the Door, a young Damsel, named *Innocent*, and open'd the Door, and looked, and behold, two Women were there.

Damsel. Then said the Damsel to them, With whom would you speak in this Place?

*The Door is
opened to them
by Innocent.*

Christ. *Christiana* answered, We understand that this is a privileged Place for those that are become Pilgrims, and we now at this Door are such: Wherefore we pray that we may be Partakers of that for which we at this Time are come; for the Day, as thou seest, is very 'far spent, and we are loth to Night to go any farther.

Damsel. Pray, what may I call your Name, that I may tell it to my Lord within?

Christ. My Name is *Christiana*; I was the Wife of that Pilgrim that some Years ago did travel this Way, and these be his four Children. This Maiden is also my Companion, and is going on Pilgrimage too.

Innocent. Then ran *Innocent* in (for that was her Name) and said to those within, Can you think who is at the Door? There is *Christiana* and her Children, and her Companion, all waiting for Entertainment

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress. 35

ment here: Then they leaped for Joy, and went and told their Master. So he came to the Door, and looking upon her, he said, Art thou that *Christiana* whom *Christian* the good Man left behind him, when he betook himself to a Pilgrim's Life?

Joy in the House of the Interpreter, that Christiana is turned Pilgrim.

Christ. I am that Woman that was so hard-hearted as to slight my Husband's Troubles; and that left him to go on his Journey alone, and these are his four Children; but now I also am come, for I am convinced that no Way is right but this.

Inter. Then is fulfilled that which is written of the Man that said to his Son, *Matt. 21. 29.* Go work to-day in my Vineyard; and he said to his Father, I will not; but afterwards repented and went.

Christ. Then said *Christiana*, So be it, *Amen.* God make it a true Saying upon me, and grant that I may be found at the last of him in Peace, without Spot, and blameless.

Inter. But why standest thou at the Door? Come in, thou Daughter of *Abraham*; we were talking of thee but now, for Tidings have come to us before, how thou art become a Pilgrim. Come Children, come in; come, Maiden, come; so he had them all into the House.

So when they were within, they were bidden to sit down and rest them; the which when they had done, those that attended upon the Pilgrims in the House, came into the Room to see them. And one smiled, and another smiled, and another smiled, and they all smiled, for Joy

Old Saints glad to see the Young Ones walk in God's Ways.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

that *Christiana* was become a Pilgrim : They also looked upon the Boys ; they stroked them over their Faces, with their Hand, in Token of their kind Reception of them : They also carried it lovingly to *Mercy*, and bid them all welcome into their Master's House.

* *The Significant Rooms.*

After a While, because Supper was not ready, the * *Interpreter* took them into his *Significant Rooms*, and shewed them what *Christian*, *Christiana's* Husband, had seen some Time before. Here therefore they saw the Man in the Cage, the Man and his Dream, the Man that cut his Way through his Enemies, and the Picture of the biggest of all, together with the rest of those Things that were then so profitable to *Christian*.

The Man with the Muckrake, expounded.

This done, and after those Things had been somewhat digested by *Christiana* and her Company, the *Interpreter* takes them apart again, and has them first into a Room, where was a Man that could look no Way but downwards, with a Muckrake in his Hand : There stood also one over his Head with a Coelestial Crown in his Hand, and proffered him that Crown for his Muckrake ; but the Man did neither look up, nor regard, but raked to himself the Straws, the small Sticks, and Dust of the Floor.

Then said Christiana, I persuade myself, that I know somewhat the Meaning of this : For this is the Figure of a Man in this World : Is it not, good Sir ?

Inter. Thou hast said right, said he, and his Muckrake doth shew his Carnal Mind.
And

And whereas thou seest him rather give heed to rake up Straws and Sticks, and the Dust of the Floor, than do what he says that calls to him from above, with the Cœlestial Crown in his Hand; it is to shew, that Heaven is but as a Fable to some, and that Things here are couuted the only Things substantial. Now, whereas, it was also shewed thee, that the Man could look no Way but downwards: It is to let thee know that earthly Things, when they are with Power upon Men's Minds, quite carry their Hearts away from God.

Christ. Then said *Christiana*, Oh! deliver me from this Muckrake.

Inter. That Prayer, said the *Interpreter*, has lain by, 'till it is almost rusty; Give me not Riches, is scarce the Prayer of one of Ten Thousand. Straws and Sticks, and Dust, with most, are the great Things now looked after.

With that *Mercy* and *Christiana* wept, and said, it is, alas! too true.

When the *Interpreter* had shewed them this, he had them into the very best Room in the House; (a very brave Room it was) so he bid them look round about, and see if they could find any Thing profitable there. Then they looked round and round: For there was nothing to be seen but a very great Spider on the Wall; and that they over-look'd.

Mercy. Then said *Mercy*, Sir, I see nothing: But *Christiana* held her Peace.

Inter. But, said the *Interpreter*, look again: She therefore looked again, and

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

faid, Here is not any Thing but an ugly Spider, who hangs by his Hands upon the Wall. Then, faid he, is there but one Spider in all this spacious Room? Then the Water stood in *Christiana's* Eyes, for she was a Woman quick of Apprehension: And she faid, Yea, Lord, there is more here than one. Yea, and Spiders, whose Venom is far more destructive than that which is in her. The *Interpreter* then looked pleasantly on her, and faid, Thou hast faid the Truth. This made *Mercy* blush, and the Boys to cover their Faces, for they all began now to understand the Riddle.

*Talk about
the Spider.*

*The Interpre-
tation.*

Then faid the *Interpreter* again, *The Spider taketh hold with her Hands, as you see; and is in Kings Palaces.* And wherefore is this recorded, but to shew you, That how full of the Venom of Sin soever you be, yet you may, by the Hand of Faith, lay hold of, and dwell in the best Room that belongs to the King's House above?

Christ. I thought, faid *Christiana*, of something of this; but I could not imagine it all. I thought, that we were like *Spiders*, and that we look'd like ugly Creatures, in what fine Rooms soever we were: But that by this *Spider*, this venomous and ill-favour'd Creature, we were to learn *how to act Faith*, that came not into my Thoughts, That she worketh with Hands, and, as I see, dwells in the best Room in the House. God has made nothing in vain.

Then they seemed all to be glad; but the Water stood in their Eyes: Yet they looked

looked one upon another, and also bowed before the *Interpreter*.

He had them then into another Room, where was a Hen and Chickens, and bid ^{Of the Hen} them observe a While. So one of the ^{and Chickens.} Chickens went to the Trough to drink, and every Time she drank, she lifted up her Head, and her Eyes towards Heaven. See, said he, what this little Chick doth, and learn of her to acknowledge whence your Mercies come, by receiving them with looking up. Yet again, said he, observe and look; so they gave Heed, and perceived that the Hen did walk in a four-fold Method towards her Chickens. 1. She had a *common Call*, and that she hath all the Day long. 2. She had a *special Call*, and that she had but sometimes. 3. She ^{Matt. 23. 27.} had a *brooding Note*. And, 4. She had an *Out-Cry*.

Now, said he, compare this Hen to your King, and these Chickens to his obedient ones. For answerable to her, himself has his Methods, which he walketh in towards his People; by his common Call, he gives nothing; by his special Call, he always has something to give; he has also a Brooding Voice, for them that are under his Wing. And he has an Out-cry, to give the Alarm when he seeth the Enemy come. I chose, my Darlings, to lead you into the Room where such Things are, because you are Women, and they are easy for you.

Christ. And, Sir, said *Christiana*, pray let us see some more: So he had them into the Slaughter-House, where was a Butcher kil-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Of the Butcher
and his
Sheep.

killing a Sheep: And behold the Sheep was quiet, and took her Death patiently. Then said the *Interpreter*, you must learn of this Sheep to suffer, and to put up Wrongs without Murmurings and Complaints. Behold how quietly she takes her Death, and without objecting, she suffereth her Skin to be pulled over her Ears. Your King doth call you his Sheep.

Of the Gar-
den.

After this, he led them into his Garden, where was great Variety of Flowers: And he said, Do you see all these? So *Christiana* said, Yes. Then said he again, Behold the Flowers are divers in *Stature*, in *Quality*, and *Colour*, and *Smell*, and *Virtue*, and some are better than some: Also where the Gardener hath set them, there they stand, and quarrel not one with another.

Of the Field.

Again, he had them into his Field, which he had sown with Wheat and Corn: But when they beheld the Tops of all was cut off, only the Straw remained, he said again, This Ground was dunged, and ploughed, and sowed, but what shall we do with the Crop? Then said *Christiana*, burn some and make Muck of the rest. Then said the *Interpreter* again, Fruit, you see, is that Thing you look for, and for Want of that you condemn it to the Fire, and to be trodden under Foot of Men: Beware that in this you condemn not yourselves.

Of the Robin
and the
Spider.

Then as they were coming in from abroad, they espied a *Robin* with a great *Spider* in his Mouth: So the *Interpreter* said, look here: So they looked, and *Marcy* won-

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

241

wondered; but *Christiana* said, What a Disparagement is it to such a little pretty Bird as the *Robin-red-breast* is, he being also a Bird above many, that loveth to maintain a kind of Sociableness with Men; I had thought they had lived upon Crumbs of Bread, or upon other such harmless Matter; I like him worse than I did.

The *Interpreter* then reply'd, This *Robin* is an Emblem, very apt to set forth some Professors by; for to Sight they are, as this *Robin*, pretty of Note, Colour and Carriage: They seem also to have a very great Love for Professors that are sincere; and above all other to desire to sociate with them, and to be in their Company, as if they could live upon the good Man's Crumbs. They pretend also, that therefore it is, that they frequent the House of the Godly, and the Appointments of the Lord: But when they are by themselves, as the *Robin*, they can catch and gobble up *Sinners*, they can change their Diet, drink and swallow down Sin like Water.

So when they were come again into the *Pray*, and House, because Supper as yet was not ready, *Christiana* again desired that the *Interpreter* would either *show* or tell of some other Things that are profitable.

Then the *Interpreter* began and said: *The fatter the Sow is, the more she desires the Mire; the fatter the Ox is, the more gamefully he goes to the Slaughter; and the more healthy the lusty Man is, the more prone he is unto Evil.*

There

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

There is a Desire in Women to go neat and fine, and it is a comely Thing to be adorned with that, that in God's Sight is of great Price.

'Tis easier watching a Night or two, than to sit up a whole Year together: So 'tis easier for one to begin to profess well, than to hold out as he should to the End.

Every Ship-Master, when in a Storm, will willingly cast that over Board that is of the smallest Value in the Vessel; but who will throw the best out first? None but he that feareth not God.

One Leak will sink a Ship, and one Sin will destroy a Sinner.

He that forgets his Friend, is ungrateful unto him; but he that forgets his Saviour, is unmerciful to himself.

He that lives in Sin, and looks for Happiness hereafter, is like him that soweth Cockle, and thinks to fill his Barn with Wheat or Barley.

If a Man would live well, let him fetch his last Day to him, and make it always his Company-keeper.

Whispering and Change of Thoughts, prove that Sin is in the World.

If the World, which God sets light by, is counted a Thing of that Worth with Men, what is Heaven that God commendeth?

If the Life that is attended with so many Troubles, is so loth to be let go by us, what is the Life above?

Every Body will cry up the Goodness of Men: But who is there, that is, as he should be, affected with the Goodness of God?

We





Christiana and her Children at Supper in the Interpreter's House.

PART II.. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

43

We seldom sit down to meat, but we eat, and leave. So there is in Jesus Christ, more Merit and Righteousness, than the whole World has need of.

When the *Interpreter* had done, he takes them out into his Garden again, and had them to a Tree, whose Inside was all rotten and gone, and yet it grew and had Leaves. Then said *Mercy*, What means this? This Tree, said he, whose Outside is fair, and whose Inside is rotten, it is, to which many may be compared that are in the Garden of God: Who with their Mouths speak high in behalf of God, but indeed will do nothing for him; whose Leaves are fair, but their Heart good for nothing but to be Tinder for the Devil's Tinder-Box.

Now Supper was ready, the Table spread, and all Things set on Board; so they sat down and did eat, when one had given Thanks. And the *Interpreter* did usually entertain those that lodged with him with Musick at Meals; so the Minstrels play'd. There was also one that did sing, and a very fine Voice he had. His Song was this:

*The Lord is only my Support,
And he that doth me feed;
How can I then want any Thing
Whereof I stand in Need?*

When the Song and Musick was ended; the *Interpreter* asked *Christiana*, What it was that at first did move her thus to be-

Talk at Supper. A Repetition of Christiana's Experience.

betake herself to a Pilgrim's Life? *Christiana* answered, *First*, the Loss of my Husband came into my Mind, at which I was heartily grieved: But all that was natural Affection. Then, after that came the Troubles and Pilgrimage of my Husband into my Mind, and also how like a Churl I had carried it to him as to that. So Guilt took hold of my Mind, and would have drawn me into the Pond; but that opportunely I had a Dream of the Well-being of my Husband, and a Letter sent by the King of that Country where my Husband dwells to come to him. The Dream and the Letter together so wrought upon my Mind, that they forced me to this Way.

Inter. But met you with no Opposition before you set out of Doors?

Christ. Yes, a Neighbour of mine, one *Mrs. Timorous*, (she was a-kin to him that would have persuaded my Husband to go back, for fear of the Lions.) She also so befooled me, for, as she called it, my intended desperate Adventure; she also urged what she could to dishearten me from it, the Hardship and Troubles that my Husband met with in the Way; but all this I got over pretty well. But a Dream that I had of two ill-look'd Ones, that I thought did plot how to make me miscarry in my Journey, that hath troubled me: Yea, it still runs in my Mind, and makes me afraid of every one that I met, lest they should meet me to do me a Mischief, and turn me out of my Way. Yea, I may tell my *Lord*, tho' I would

would not every Body know it, that between this and the Gate by which we got into the Way, we were both so sorely assaulted, that we were made to cry out *Murder*; and the Two that made this Assault upon us, were like the Two that I saw in my Dream.

Then said the *Interpreter*, Thy Beginning is Good, thy latter End shall greatly increase. So he addressed himself to *Mercy*, and said unto her, And what moved thee to come hither, Sweet-heart? *A Question put to Mercy.*

Mercy. Then *Mercy* blushed and trembled, and for a While continued silent.

Inter. Then said he, Be not afraid, only believe, and speak thy Mind.

Mer. Then she began, and said, Truly, *Mercy's Answer.*
Sir, my Want of Experience is that which makes me covet to be in Silence, and that also that fills me with Fears of coming short at last. I cannot tell of Visions and Dreams, as my Friend *Christiana* can: Nor know I what it is to mourn for my refusing of the Counsel of those that were good Relations

Inter. What was it then, Dear Heart, that hath prevailed with thee to do as thou hast done?

Mercy. Why, when our Friend here was packing up to be gone from our Town; I and another went accidentally to see her. So we knocked at the Door, and went in. When we were within, and seeing what she was doing, we asked her what was her Meaning? She said, she was sent for to go to her Husband; and then she up and told us how she had seen him

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

him in a Dream, dwelling in a curious Place, among *Immortals*, wearing a Crown, playing upon a Harp, Eating and Drinking at his Prince's Table, and Singing Praises to him for bringing him thither, &c. Now methought while she was telling these Things unto us, my Heart burned within me. And I said in my Heart, If this be true, I will leave my Father and my Mother, and the Land of my Nativity, and will, if I may, go along with *Christiana*.

So I asked her farther of the Truth of these Things, and if she would let me go with her; for I saw now, that there was no dwelling, but with the Danger of Ruin, any longer in our Town. But yet I came away with a heavy Heart, not for that I was unwilling to come away, but for that so many of my Relations were left behind.

And I come with all the Desire of my Heart, and will go, if I may, with *Christiana*, unto her Husband, and his King.

Inter. Thy Setting out is Good, for thou hast given Credit to the Truth; thou art a *Ruth* who did for the Love she bare to *Naomi*, and to the Lord her God, leave Father and Mother, and the Land of her Nativity, to come out and go with a People that she knew not before, *Ruth. 2. 11, 12. The Lord recompence thy Work, and full Reward be given thee of the Lord God of Israel, under whose Wings thou art come to trust.*

Now Supper was ended, and Preparation was made for Bed; the Women were laid

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.* 47

laid singly alone, and the Boys by themselves. Now when *Mercy* was in Bed, she could not sleep for Joy, for that now her Doubts of missing at last, were removed farther from her than ever they were before. So she lay blessing and praising God, who had such Favour for her.

In the Morning they rose with the Sun, and prepared themselves for their Departure; but the *Interpreter* would have them tarry a While, for, said he, you must orderly go from hence. Then said he to the Damfel that first oponed unto them, Take them and have them into the Garden to the *Bath*, and there wash them and make them clean from the Soil, which they have gathered by Travelling. Then *Innocent* the Damfel took them, and led them into the Garden, and brought them to the *Bath*; so she told them, That there they must wash and be clean, for so her Master would have the Women to do, that called at his House as they were going on Pilgrimage. Then they went in and washed, yea, they and the Boys and all; and they came out of that *Bath*, not only sweet and clean, but also much enlivened and strengthened in their Joints. So when they came in, they looked fairer a deal, then when they went out to the Washing.

When they were returned out of the Garden from the *Bath*, the *Interpreter* took them, and looked upon them, and said unto them, *Fair as the Moon*. Then he called for the *Seal*, wherewith they used to be Sealed that are washed in his *Bath*.

T

So

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

So the *Seal* was brought, and he set his Mark upon them, that they might be known in the Places, whither they were yet to go: Now the Seal was the Contents and Sum of the Passover which the Children of *Israel* did eat, *Exod. 13. 8, 9, 10.* when they came out of the Land of *Egypt*; and the Mark was set between their Eyes. This *Seal* greatly added to their Beauty, for it was an Ornament to their Faces. It also added to their Gravity, and made their Countenance more like them of Angels.

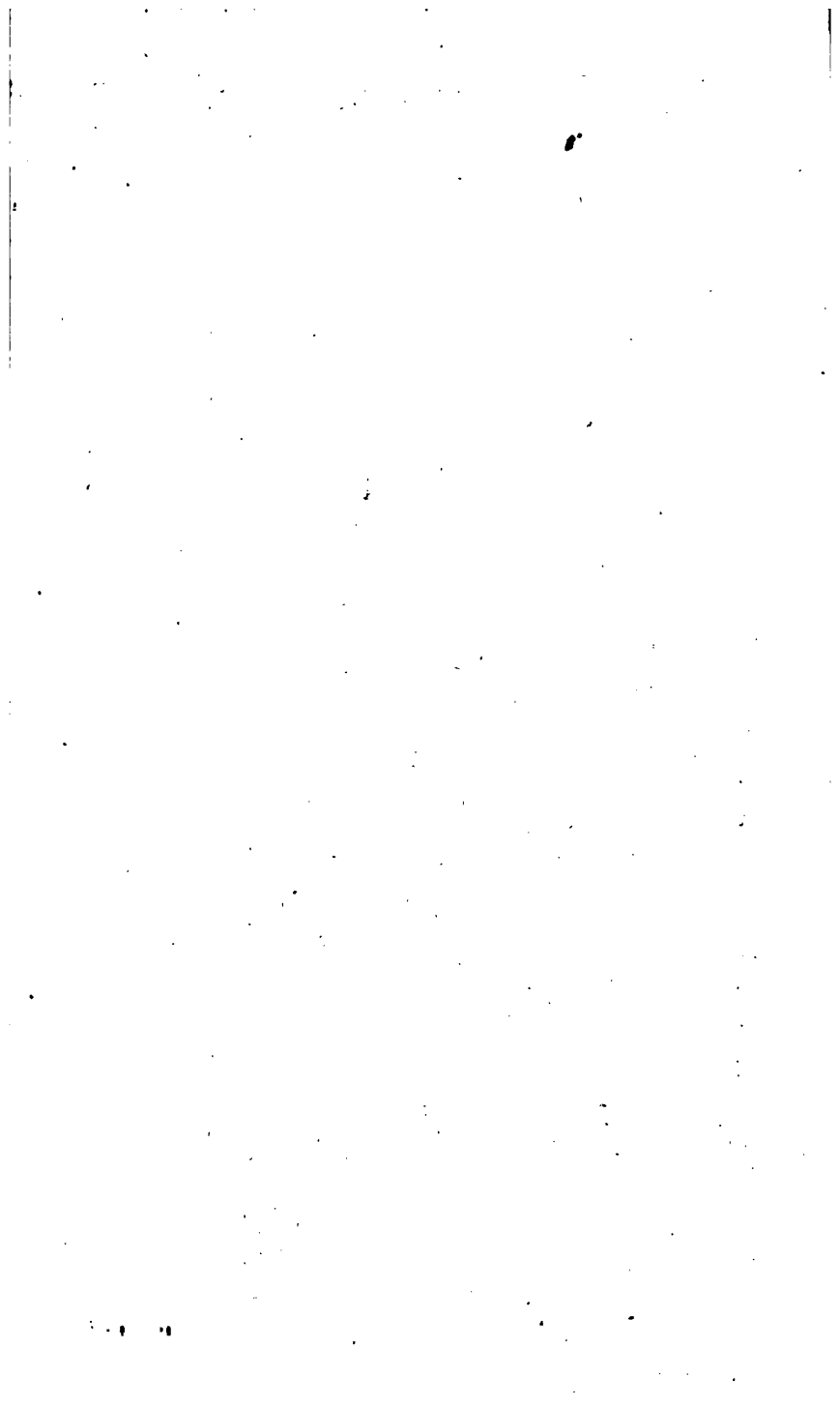
*They are
Hoasted.*

True Humility.

Then said the *Interpreter* again to the Damsel that waited upon the Women, Go into the Vestry, and fetch our Garments for these People: So he went and fetched out White Raiment, and laid it down before him; so he commanded them to put it on. *It was fine Linen white and clean.* When the Women were thus adorned, they seemed to be a Terror one to the other; for that they could not see that Glory each one in herself, which they could see in each other. Now therefore they began to esteem each other better than themselves. For you are fairer than I am, said one; and you are more comely than I am, said another. The Children also stood amazed, to see into what Fashion they were brought.

The *Interpreter* then called for a Man-Servant of his, one *Great-Heart*, and bid him take *Sword* and *Helmet*, and *Shield*, and take these my Daughters, said he, conduct them to the House called *Beautiful*, at which Place they will rest next.

So





Great-Heart conducts the Pilgrims to the House called Beautiful

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

49

So he took his Weapons and went before them; and the *Interpreter* said, God Speed. Those also that belong'd to the Family, sent them away with many a good Wish. So they went on their Way, and sang;

*This Place has been our Second Stage,
Here we have heard, and seen
Those good Things, that from Age to Age
To others hid have been.*

*The Dungbil-raker, Spider, Hen,
The Chicken too, to me,
Hath taught a Lesson, let me then
Conformed to it be.*

*The Butcher, Garden, and the Field,
The Robin, and his Bait,
Also the Rotten Tree doth yield
Me Argument of Weight;
To move me for to Watch and Pray,
To strive to be Sincere;
To take my Cross up Day by Day,
And serve the Lord with Fear.*

Now I saw in my Dream, That those went on, and *Great-heart* before them; so they went and came to the Place where *Christian's* Burden fell off his Back, and

T 2 tumbled

*Behold here, how the Slothful are a Sign
Hung up, 'cause Holy Ways they did decline
See here too, how the Child doth play the Man,
And weak grows strong, when Great-heart leads
the Van.*

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

tumbled into a Sepulchre. Here then they made a Pause; here also they blessed God. Now, said *Christiana* it comes to my Mind, what was said to us at the Gate, to wit, That we should have Pardon by *Word* and *Deed*; by *Word*, that is, by the Promise; by *Deed*, to wit, in the Way it was obtained. What the Promise is, of that I know something: But what it is to have Pardon by *Deed*, or in the Way that it was obtained, Mr. *Great-heart*, I suppose you know; which, if you please, let us hear your Discourse thereof.

A Comment upon what was said at the Gate, or a Discourse of our being justified by Christ.

Great-heart. Pardon by the Deed done, is Pardon obtained by some one for another that hath Need thereof: Not by the Person pardoned, but in the Way, *saitb another*, in which I have obtained it. So then to speak to the Question more at large, the Pardon that you and *Mercy*, and these Boys have attained by another; to wit, by him that let you in at that Gate: And he hath obtained it in this double Way. He has perform'd Righteousness to cover you, and spilt Blood to wash you in.

Christ. But if he parts with his Righteousness to us, what will he have for himself?

Great-heart. He has more Righteousness than you have Need of, or than he needeth himself.

Christ. Pray make that appear.

Great-heart. With all my Heart; but first I must premise, That he of whom we are now about to speak, is one that has not his Fellow. He has two Natures in
one

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

one Person, plain to be *distinguish'd, impossible to be divided*. Unto each of these Natures a Righteousness belongeth, and each Righteousness is Essential to that Nature. So that one may as easily cause the Natures to be extinct, as to separate its Justice or Righteousness from it. Of *these* Righteousnesses therefore we are not made Partakers, so as that they, or any of them should be put upon us, that we might be made Just, and live thereby. Besides these, there is a Righteousness which this Person has as these two Natures are joined in one. And this is not the Righteousness of the *God-head*, as distinguish'd from the *Manhood*; nor the Righteousness of the *Manhood*, as distinguish'd from the *God-head*, but a Righteousness which standeth in the Union of both Natures; and may properly be called the Righteousness that is essential to his being prepared of God to the Capacity of the Mediator Office, which he was entrusted with. If he parts with his first Righteousness, he parts with his *Godhead*: If he parts with his second Righteousness, he parts with the Purity of his *Manhood*: If he parts with his third, he parts with that Perfection which capacitates him to the Office of Mediation. He has therefore another Righteousness, which standeth in *Performance*, or Obedience to a revealed Will: And that is that he puts upon Sinners, and that by which their Sins are covered. Wherefore he saith,
As by one Man's Disobedience, many were

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.
*made Sinners: So by the Obedience of one shall
 many be made Righteous, Rom. 5. 19.*

Christ. But are the other Righteousnesses
 of no Use to us?

Great-heart. Yes; for tho' they are essential to his Natures and Offices, and cannot be communicated unto another, yet it is by virtue of them, that the Righteousness that justifies, is for that Purpose, efficacious. The *Righteousness* of his *Godhead* gives *Virtue* to his Obedience; the *Righteousness* of his *Manhood* giveth *Capability* to his Obedience to justify, and the *Righteousness* that standeth in the Union of these two Natures to his *Office*, giveth *Authority* to that *Righteousness* to do the Work for which it was ordained.

So then here is a *Righteousness* that *Christ*, as *God*, has no *Need* of; for he is *God* without it; Here is a *Righteousness*, that *Christ*, as *Man*, has no *Need* of to make him so, for he is perfect *Man* without it. Again, here is a *Righteousness*, that *Christ*, as *God-Man*, has no *Need* of; for he is perfectly so without it. Here then is a *Righteousness*, that *Christ*, as *God*, and as *God-Man*, has no *Need* of, with *Reference* to himself, and therefore he can spare it a justifying *Righteousness*, that he for himself wanteth not, and therefore giveth it away. Hence it is called *the Gift of Righteousness*. The *Righteousness*, since *Christ Jesus the Lord* has made himself under the *Law*, must be given away; for the *Law* doth not only bind that is under it, to do justly, but to use *Charity*. *Rom. 5. 17.* Wherefore he
 must,

must, or ought by the Law, if he hath two Coats, to give one to him that hath none. Now our Lord indeed hath two Coats, one for himself, and one to spare: Wherefore he freely bestows one upon those that have none. And thus *Christiana* and *Mercy*, and the rest of you that are here, doth your Pardon come by Deed, or by the Work of another Man. Your Lord Christ is he that worked, and hath given away what he wrought for, to the next poor Beggar he meets.

But again, in order to pardon by *Deed*, there must something be paid to God as a *Price*, as well as something prepared to cover us withal. Sin has delivered us up to the just Course of a Rightsous Law: Now from this Course we must be justified by Way of Redemption, a Price being paid for the Harms we have done; and this is by the Blood of your Lord, who came and stood in your Place and Stead, and died your Death for your Transgressions. Thus has he ransomed you from your Transgressions, by Blood, and covered your polluted and deformed Souls with Righteousness, *Rom. 8. 34.* For the Sake of which, God passeth by you, and will not hurt you, when he comes to judge the World, *Gal. 3. 13.*

Christ. This is brave: Now I see that there was something to be learned by our being pardoned by *Word* and *Deed*. Good *Mercy*, let us labour to keep this in Mind; and, my Children, do you remember it also. But, Sir, was not this it that made my good *Christian's* Burden fall from off

Christiana
affected with
this Way of
Redemption.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

his Shoulder, and that made him give three Leaps for Joy?

How the Strings that bound Christian's Burden to him were cut.

Great-heart. Yes, it was the Belief of this that cut off those Strings, that could not be cut by other Means; and it was to give him a Proof of the Virtue of this, that he was suffer'd to carry his Burden to the Cross.

Christ. I thought so; for tho' my Heart was lightsome and joyous before, yet it is ten times more lightsome and joyous now. And I am perswaded by what I have felt, tho' I have felt but little as yet, that if the most burden'd Man in the World was here, and did see and believe as I now do, it would make his Heart the more merry and blithe.

How Affection to Christ is begot in the Soul.

Great-heart. There is not only Comfort, and the Ease of a Burden brought to us, by the Sight and Consideration of these, but an endear'd Affection begot in us by it: For who can (if he doth but once think that Pardon comes not only by Promise, but thus) but be affected with the Way and Means of Redemption, and so with the Man that hath wrought it for him?

Part I. pag. 40.

Cause of Admiration.

Christ. True; methinks it makes my Heart bleed to think that he should bleed for me. Oh! thou loving One: Oh! thou blessed One. Thou deservest to have me; thou hast bought me: Thou deservest to have me all; thou hast paid for me ten thousand Times more than I am worth. No Marvel that this made the Water stand in my Husband's Eyes, and that it made him trudge so nimbly on; I
am

am persuaded he wished me with him; but vile Wretch that I was, I let him come all alone. O *Mercy*, that thy Father and Mother were here; yea, and Mrs. *Timorous* also: Nay, I wish now with all my Heart that here was Madam *Wanton* too. Surely, surely, their Hearts would be affected; nor could the Fear of the one; nor the powerful Lusts of the other, prevail with them to go Home again, and refuse to become good Pilgrims.

Great-heart. You speak now in the Warmth of your Affections: Will it, think you, be always thus with you? Besides, this is not communicated to every one, nor to every one that did see your *JESUS* bleed. There were that stood by, and that saw the Blood run from the Heart to the Ground, and yet were so far off this, that instead of lamenting, they laugh'd at him; and instead of becoming his Disciples, did harden their Hearts against him. So that all that you have, my Daughters, you have by peculiar Impression made by a divine contemplating upon what I have spoken to you. Remember that 'twas told you, That the *Hen*, by her common Call, gives no Meat to her Chickens. This you have therefore by a Special Grace.

Now I saw still in my Dream, That they went on until they were come to the Place, that *Simple*, and *Sloth*, and *Presumption*, lay and slept in, when *Christian* went by on Pilgrimage: And behold they were hanged up in Irons a little Way off on the other Side.

To be affected with Christ, and with what he has done, is a Thing Special.

Simple, Sloth, and Presumption hang'd, and why.

Mercy.

Mercy. Then said *Mercy* to him that was their Guide and Conductor, What are these three Men? And for what are they hanged there?

Their Crime. *Great-heart.* These three Men were Men of bad Qualities; they had no Mind to be Pilgrims themselves, and whomsoever they could, they hinder'd; they were for *Sloth* and *Folly* themselves, and whomsoever they could persuade, they made so too; and withal taught them to presume that they should do well at last. They were asleep when *Christian* went by, and now you go by, they are hang'd.

Mercy. But could they persuade any one to be of their Opinion?

Whom they prevailed upon to turn out of the Way. *Great-heart.* Yes, they turned several out of the Way. There was *Slow-pace* that they persuaded to do as they. They also prevailed with one *Short-wind*, with one *No-heart*, with one *Linger-after-Lust*, and with one *Sleepy-head*, and with a young Woman, her Name was *Dull*, to turn out of the Way, and become as they. Besides, they brought up an ill Report of your Lord, persuading others that he was a hard Task-Master. They also brought up an evil Report of the Good Land, saying, It was not half so good as some pretended it was. They also began to vilify his Servants, and to count the best of them meddlesome, troublesome, Busy-bodies: Farther, They would call the Bread of God *Husks*; the *Comforts* of his Children *Fancies*; the Travel and Labour of Pilgrims, *Things to no Purpose*.

Christ.

PART II. The Virgin's Progress.

57

Christ. Nay, said *Christians*, if they were fush, they should never be bewailed by me: They have but what they deserve; and I think it well that they stand so near the Highway, that others may see and take Warning. But had it not been well if their Crimes had been engraven on some Pillar of Iron or Brass, and left here where they did their Mischiefs, for a Caution to other bad Men?

Great-heart. So it is, as you may well perceive, if you will go a little to the Wall.

Mercy. No, no; let them hang, and their Names rot, and their Crimes live for ever against them: I think it is a high Favour that they are hanged before we came hither; Who knows else what they might have done to such poor Women as we are? *Then she turned it into a Song, saying,*

Now then you three hang there, and be a

Sign

To all that shall against the Truth combine,

And let him that comes after, fear this End,

If unto Pilgrims he is not a Friend.

And thou, my Soul, of all such Men beware,

That unto Holiness Opposers are.

Thus they went on, till they came at *Part I. pag.* the Foot of the Hill *Difficulty*, where ^{45.} again their good Friend, Mr. *Great-heart* ^{Ezek. 34. 18.} took an Occasion to tell them what hap- ^{'Tis difficult} pen'd there when *Christian* himself went ^{getting of good} ^{Doctrine in er-} ^{by roneous Times.}

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II:

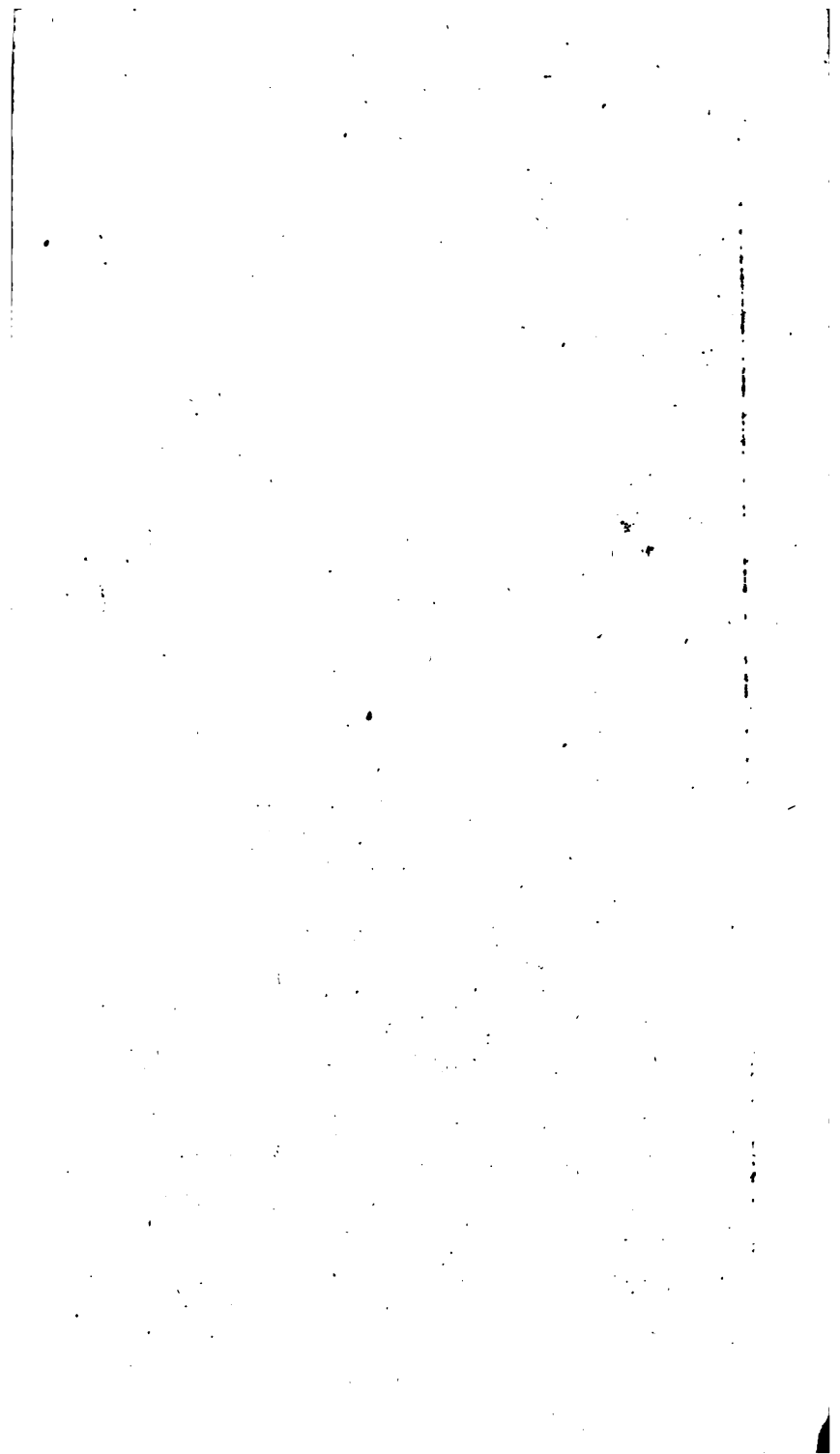
by. So he had them first to the Spring; *Lo*, saith he, *This is the Spring that Christian drank of* before he went up this Hill, then it was clear and good, but now it is dirty with the Feet of some that are not desirous that Pilgrims here should quench their Thirst: Thereat *Mercy* said, *And why so envious trow?* But, said the Guide, it will do, if taken up and put into a Vessel that is sweet and good; for then the Dirt will sink to the Bottom, and the Water come out by itself more clear. Thus therefore *Christiana* and her Companions were compelled to do. They took it up, and put it into an Earthen Pot, and so let it stand till the Dirt was gone to the Bottom, and then they drank thereof.

Next he shewed them the two *By-ways* that were at the Foot of the Hill, where *Formality* and *Hypocrisy* lost themselves. And, said he, these are dangerous Paths; Two were here cast away when *Christian* came by. And altho' you see these Ways are since stopped up with *Chains*, *Posts*, and a *Ditch*, yet there are them that will choose to adventure here, rather than take the Pains to go up this Hill.

By Paths, tho' barred up, will not keep all from going in them.

Christ. The Way of Transgressors is hard, *Prov.* 13. 15. It is a Wonder that they can get into those Ways without Danger of breaking their Necks.

Great-heart. They will venture, yea, if at any time any of the King's Servants do happen to see them, and doth call upon them, and tell them, That they are in the wrong Way, and do bid them beware of the Danger; then they will railingly return them





The Pilgrims going up the hill Difficulty.

them Answer, and say, *As for the Word that thou hast spoken unto us in the Name of the King, we will not hearken unto thee; but we will certainly do whatsoever Thing goeth out of our Mouths, &c. Jer. 44. 16, 17.* Nay, if you look a little farther, you shall see that these Ways are made Cautionary enough, not only by these *Posts, and Ditch, and Chain,* but also by being hedged up, yet they will choose to go there.

Christ. They are idle; they love not to take Pains; up-hill Way is unpleasant to them. So it is fulfilled unto them as it is written; *The Way of the Slothful Man is a Hedge of Thorns: Yea, they will rather choose to walk upon a Snare, than to go up this Hill, and the rest of this Way to the City.*

Then they set forward, and began to go up the Hill, and up the Hill they went; but before they got up to the Top, *Cristiana* began to pant, and said, I dare say, this is a Breathing Hill; no marvel if they that love their Ease more than their Souls, choose to themselves a smoother Way. Then said *Mercy*, I must sit down; also the least of the Children began to cry; Come, come, said *Great-heart*, sit not down here, for a little above is the Prince's *Arbour*. Then he took the little Boy by the Hand, and led him up thereto.

When they were come to the *Arbour*, they were very willing to sit down, for they were all in a pelting Heat. Then said *Mercy*, *How sweet is Rest to them that labour?* And how good is the Prince of Pilgrims to provide such Resting Places for them? Of this *Arbour* I have heard much;

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

much; but I never saw it before. But here let us beware of Sleeping: For as I have heard, for that it cost poor *Christian* dear.

The little Boy's Answer to the Guide, and also to Mercy.

Then said Mr. *Great-heart* to the little Ones, Come, my pretty *Boys*, how do you do? What think you now of going on Pilgrimage? Sir, said the least, I was almost beat out of Heart; but I thank you for lending me a Hand at my Need. And I remember now what my Mother hath told me, namely, That the Way to Heaven is as a Ladder, and the Way to Hell is as down a Hill. But I had rather go up the Ladder to Life, than down the Hill to Death.

Which is hardest, up Hill or down Hill?

Then said *Mercy*, But the Proverb is, *To go down the Hill is easy*: But *James* said, (for that was his Name). The Day is coming, when in my Opinion, *going down the Hill will be the hardest of all*. 'Tis a good Boy, said his Master, thou hast given her a right Answer. Then *Mercy* smiled, but the little Boy did blush.

They refresh themselves.

Christ. Come, said *Christiana*, will you eat a Bit, to sweeten your Mouths while you sit here to rest your Legs?

For I have here a Piece of Pomegranate, which Mr. *Interpreter* put into my Hand just when I came out of his Doors; he gave me also a Piece of an Honey-Comb, and a little Bottle of Spirits; I thought he gave you something, said *Mercy*, because he call'd you aside. Yes, so he did, said the other: But, said *Christiana*, it shall be still as I said it should, when at first we came from Home; thou shalt be

be a Sharer in all the Good that I have, because thou so willingly didst become my Companion. Then she gave to them, and they did eat, both *Mercy* and the Boys. And said *Christiana* to Mr. *Great-heart*, Sir, Will you do as we? But he answered, You are going on Pilgrimage, and presently I shall return: Much Good may what you have do to you. At Home I eat the same every Day. Now when they had eaten and drank, and had chatted a little longer, their Guide said to them, The Day wears away, if you think good let us prepare to be going. So they got up to go, and the little Boys went before: But *Christiana* forgot to take her Bottle of Spi-^{Christiana}rits with her; so she sent her little Boy ^{forgets her} back to fetch it. Then said *Mercy*, I think ^{Bottle of Spi-}this is a *losing* Place. Here *Christian* lost ^{rits.} his *Roll*; and here *Christiana* left her Bottle behind her; Sir, What is the Cause of this? So their Guide made Answer, and said, the Cause is *Sleep* or *Forgetfulness*; some *sleep* when they should keep *awake*; and some *forget* when they should *remember*; and this is the very Cause, why often at the Resting Places, some Pilgrims, in some Things, come off Losers. Pilgrims should watch, and remember what they have already received under their greatest Enjoyments; but for want of doing so, oftentimes their Rejoicing Ends in Tears, ^{Mark this.} and their Sun-shine in a Cloud; witness ^{Part I. p. 41.} the Story of *Christian* at this Place.

When they were come to the Place where *Mistrust* and *Timorous* met *Christian* to persuade him to go back for fear of
the

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART H.

the Lions, they perceived as it were a Stage, and before it, towards the Road, a broad Plate, with a Copy of Verses written thereon, and underneath, the Reason of raising up of that Stage in that Place, render'd. The Verses were these:

*Let him that sees this Stage, take heed
Unto his Heart and Tongue:
Lest if he do not, here he speed
As some have long agon.*

The Words underneath the Verses were, *This Stage was built to punish such upon, who, through Timorousness or Mistrust, shall be afraid to go farther on Pilgrimage: Also on this Stage, both Mistrust and Timorous were burnt through the Tongue with a hot Iron, for endeavouring to binder Christian on his Journey.*

Then said *Mercy*, This is much like to the Saying of the Beloved, *Psal. 120. 3, 4. What shall be given unto thee? Or what shall be done unto thee, thou false Tongue? Sharp Arrows of the Mighty, with Coals of Juniper.*

*Part I. p. 50.
An Emblem of
those that go
on bravely
when there is
no Danger,
but shrink
when Troubles
come.*

So they went on, till they came within Sight of the Lions. Now *Mr. Great-heart* was a strong Man, so he was not afraid of a Lion: But yet, when they were come up to the Place where the Lions were, the Boys that went before, were glad to cringe behind, for they were afraid of the Lions, so they stept back, and went behind. At this, their Guide smiled,

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

63

smiled, and said; How now, my Boys, do you love to go before when no Danger doth approach, and love to come behind so soon as the Lions appear?

Now, as they went on, Mr. *Great-Heart* drew his Sword, with Intent to make a Way for the Pilgrims in Spight of the Lions. Then there appeared one that, it seems, had taken upon him to back the Lions; and he said to the Pilgrims Guide, What is the Cause of your coming hither? Now the Name of that Man was *Grim*, or *Bloody-Man*, because of his slaying of Pilgrims, and he was of the Race of the *Giants*.

Of Grim the Giant, and of his backing the Lions.

Great-heart. Then said the Pilgrims Guide, These Women and Children are going on Pilgrimage, and this is the Way they must go, and go it they shall, in spight of thee and the Lions.

Grim. This is not their Way, neither shall they go therein. I am come forth to withstand them, and to that End will back the Lions.

Now, to say the Truth, by reason of the Fierceness of the Lions, and of the *Grim* Carriage of him that did back them, this Way had of late lain much unoccupied, and was almost all grown over with Grass.

Christ. Then said *Christiana*, though the Highways have been unoccupied heretofore, and tho' the Travellers have been made in Times past to walk through By-paths, it must not be so now I am risen, *Now I am risen a Mother in Israel*, Judges 5. 6, 7.

U

Grim.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Grim. Then he swore *by the Lions*, but it should, and therefore bid them turn aside, for they should not have Passage there.

Great-heart. But their Guide made first his Approach unto *Grim*, and laid so heavily at him with his Sword, that he forced him to retreat.

*A Fight be-
twixt Grim
and Great-
Heart.*

Grim. Then, said he, (that attempted to back the Lions) Will you slay me upon my own Ground?

Great-heart. It is the King's High-way that we are in, and in this Way it is that thou hast placed the Lions; but these Women, and these Children, tho' weak, shall hold on their Way in spite of thy Lions. And with that he gave him again a downright Blow, and brought him upon his Knees. With this Blow he also broke his Helmet, and with the next cut off an Arm. Then did the Giant roar so hideously, that his Voice frightened the Women, and yet they were glad to see him lie sprawling upon the Ground. Now the Lions were chained, and so of themselves could do nothing. Wherefore, when old *Grim*, that intended to back them, was dead, Mr. *Great-heart* said to the Pilgrims, Come now, and follow me, and no Hurt shall happen to you from the Lions. They therefore went on, but the Women trembled as they passed by them; the Boys also looked as if they would die, but they all got by without further Hurt.

The Victory.

*They pass by
the Lions.*

Now, when they were within Sight of the *Porter's* Lodge, they soon came up unto it; but they made the more Haste after this to go thither, because it is dangerous

rous

rous Travelling there in the Night. So when they were come to the Gate, the Guide knocked, and the Porter cry'd, *Who is there?* But as soon as the Guide had said, *It is I,* he knew his Voice, and came down; (for the Guide had oft before that come thither as a *Conduſtor of Pilgrims*) when he was come down, he opened the Gate, and ſeeing the Guide ſtanding juſt before it, (for he ſaw not the Women, for they were behind him) he ſaid unto him, How now, Mr. *Great-heart*, what is your Buſineſs here ſo late at Night? I have brought, ſaid he, ſome Pilgrims hither, where, by my Lord's Commandment, they muſt lodge: I had been here ſome time ago, had I not been oppoſed by the Giant that did uſe to back the Lions. But I, after a long and tedious Combat with him, have cut him off, and have brought the Pilgrims hither in Safety.

Porter. Will you not go in, and ſtay till Morning?

Great heart. No. I will return to my Lord to Night.

Chriſt. Oh, Sir, I know not how to be willing you ſhould leave us in our Pilgrimage, you have been ſo faithful and ſo loving to us, you have fought ſo ſtoutly for us, you have been ſo hearty in counſelling of us, that I ſhall never forget your Favour towards us.

Mercy. Then ſaid *Mercy*, O that we might have thy Company to our Journey's End! How can ſuch poor Women as we, hold out in a Way ſo full of Troubles as

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

this Way is, without a Friend and Defender?

James. Then said *James*, the youngest of the Boys, Pray, Sir, be persuaded to go with us, and help us, because we are so weak, and the Way so dangerous as it is.

Great-heart. I am at my Lord's Commandment: If he shall allot me to be your Guide quite through, I will willingly wait upon you; but here you failed at first; for when he bid me come thus far with you, then you should have begged me of him to have gone quite through with you, and he would have granted your Request. However at present I must withdraw, and so, good *Christiana*, *Mercy*, and my brave Children, Adieu.

Then the Porter, Mr. *Watchful*, asked *Christiana* of her Country, and of her Kindred, and she said, *I come from the City of Destruction; I am a Widow Woman and my Husband is dead, his Name was Christian the Pilgrim.* How said the Porter, was he your Husband? Yes, said she, and these are his Children; and this, pointing to *Mercy*, is one of my Town's Women. Then the Porter rang his Bell, as at such Times he is wont, and there came to the Door one of the Damsels, whose Name was *Humble-mind*. And to her the Porter said, Go tell it within, That *Christiana*, the Wife of *Christian*, and her Children are come hither on Pilgrimage. She went in therefore, and told it. But, oh, what Noise for Gladness was there, when the Dam-
fel

*Joy at the
Noise of the
Pilgrims
coming.*

fel did but drop that Word out of her Mouth!

So they came with Haste to the Porter, for *Christiana* stood still at the Door. Then some of the most grave said unto her, *Come in, Christiana, come in, thou Wife of that good Man; come in, thou blessed Woman, come in, with all that are with thee.* So she went in, and they followed her that were her Children and her Companions. Now, when they were gone in, they were had into a very large Room, where they were bidden to sit down: So they sat down, and the Chief of the House was called to see and welcome the Guests. Then they ^{*Christiana's*} came in, and understanding who they ^{*Love is kind-*} were, did salute each other with a Kiss, ^{*led at the*} and said, Welcome, ye Vessels of the ^{*Sight of one*} Grace of God; Welcome to us your faith- ^{*another,*} ful Friends.

Now, because it was somewhat late, and because the Pilgrims were weary with their Journey, and also made faint with the Sight of the Fight, and of the terrible Lions, therefore they desired, as soon as might be, to prepare to go to Rest, *Exod.* 12. 31. Nay, said those of the Family, refresh yourselves with a Morfel of Meat: For they had prepared for them a Lamb, with the accustomed Sauce belonging thereto, *John* 1. 29. For the Porter had heard before of their Coming, and had told it to them within. So when they had supped, and ended their Prayer with a Psalm, they desired they might go to Rest. But let us, said *Christiana*, if we may be so bold as to choose, be in that Chamber that was

Part I. p. 61.

my Husband's, when he was here; so they had them up thither, and they lay all in a Room. When they were at Rest, *Christiana* and *Mercy* enter'd into Discourse about Things that were convenient.

Christ's Bosom is for all Pilgrims.

Christ. Little did I think once, when my Husband went on Pilgrimage, that I should ever have followed him.

Mercy. And you as little thought of lying in his Bed, and in his Chamber to rest, as you do now.

Christ. And much less did I ever think of seeing his Face with Comfort, and of worshipping the Lord the King with him; and yet now I believe I shall.

Mercy. Hark! Don't you hear a Noise?

Christ. Yes, it is, as I believe, a Noise of Musick, for Joy that we are here.

Musick.

Mercy. Wonderful Musick in the House, Musick in the Heart, and Musick also in Heaven, for Joy that we are here!

Thus they talked a while, and then betook themselves to Sleep. So in the Morning, when they were awaked, *Christiana* said to *Mercy*.

Mercy did laugh in her Sleep.

Christ. What was the Matter that you did laugh in your Sleep to Night? I suppose you was in a Dream.

Mercy. So I was, and a sweet Dream it was; but are you sure I laughed?

Christ. Yes; you laughed heartily; but prithee, *Mercy*, tell me thy Dream.

Mercy's Dream.

Mercy. I was a dreaming that I sat all alone in a solitary Place, and was bemoaning of the Hardness of my Heart.

Now I had not sat there long, but methought many were gathered about me to see

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

69

see me, and to hear what it was that I said. So they hearkened, and I went on bemoaning the Hardness of my Heart. At this some of them laughed at me; some called me Fool, and some began to thrust me about. With that, methought I look'd up, and saw one coming with Wings towards me. *What her Dream was.* So he came directly to me, and said, *Mercy*, What aileth thee? Now when he had heard me make my Complaint, he said, *Peace be to thee*: He also wiped mine Eyes with his Handkerchief, and clad me in *Silver and Gold*, Ezek. 16. 8, 9, 10, 11. He put a Chain about my Neck, and Ear-rings in mine Ears, and a beautiful Crown upon my Head. Then he took me by the Hand, and said, *Mercy*, Come after me. So he went up, and I followed, till we came at a Golden Gate. Then he knocked, and when they within had opened, the Man went in, and I follow'd him up to a Throne, upon which one sat; and he said to me, *Welcome, Daughter*. The Place look'd bright and twinkling, like the Stars, or rather like the Sun, and I thought that I saw your Husband there; so I awoke from my Dream. But did I laugh?

Christ. Laugh! ay, and well you might, to see yourself so well. For you must give me Leave to tell you, that it was a good Dream; and that as you have begun to find the first Part true, so you will find the second at last. *God speaks once, yea twice, yet Man perceiveth it not, in a Dream, in a Vision of the Night, when deep Sleep falleth upon Men, in Slumbering upon*

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

the Bed, Job. 33: 14, 15. We need not, when a Bed, to lie awake to talk with God, he can visit us while we sleep, and cause us then to hear his Voice. Our Heart oft-times wakes when we sleep, and God can speak to that, either by Words, by Proverbs, by Signs and Similitudes, as well as if one was awake.

Mercy glad of her Dream. *Mercy.* Well, I am glad of my Dream, for I hope, e'er long, to see it fulfilled, to the making me laugh again.

Christ. I think it is now high Time to rise, and to know what we must do.

Mercy. Pray, if they invite us to stay a while, let us willingly accept of the Proffer. I am the willinger to stay a while here, to grow better acquainted with these Maids; methinks *Prudence*, *Piety* and *Charity*, have very comely and sober Countenances.

Christ. We shall see what they will do. So when they were up and ready, they came down, and they asked one another of their Rest, and if it was comfortable or not.

Mercy. Very good, said *Mercy*, it was one of the best Night's Lodgings that ever I had in my Life.

They stay some Time. Then said *Prudence* and *Piety*, if you will be persuaded to stay here a while, you shall have what the House will afford.

Prudence desires to see Christiana's Children. *Char.* Ay, and that with a very good Will, said *Charity*. So they consented and staid there about a Month or above, and became very profitable one to another. And because *Prudence* would see how *Christiana* had brought up her Children, she asked

Leave

Leave of her to Catechise them: So she gave her free Consent; Then she began with the youngest, whose Name was James.

Prudence. And she said, Come, James, James Catechised. canst thou tell me who made thee?

James. God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost.

Prud. Good Boy. And canst thou tell who saved thee?

James. God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost.

Prud. Good Boy still. But how doth God the Father save thee?

James. By his Grace.

Prud. How doth God the Son Save thee?

James. By his *Illumination*, by his *Renovation*, and by his *Preservation*.

Then said *Prudence* to *Christiana*, You are to be commended for thus bringing up your Children. I suppose I need not ask the rest these Questions; since the youngest of them can answer them so well. I will therefore now apply myself to the next youngest.

Prud. Then she said, come, *Joseph*, (for *Joseph* Catechised. his Name was *Joseph*) will you let me Catechise you?

Joseph. With all my Heart.

Prud. What is Man?

Joseph. A reasonable Creature, made so by God, as my Brother said.

Prud. What is supposed by this Word *Saved*?

Joseph. That Man, by Sin, has brought himself into a State of Captivity and Misery.

Prud.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Prud. What is supposed by his being saved by the Trinity ?

Joseph. That Sin is so great and mighty a Tyrant, that none can pull us out of its Clutches, but God ; and that God is so good and loving to Man, as to pull him indeed out of this miserable State.

Prud. What is God's Design in saving poor Man ?

Joseph. The Glorifying of his Name, of his Grace, and Justice, &c. and the everlasting Happiness of his Creature.

Prud. Who are they that must be saved ?

Joseph. Those that accept of his Salvation.

Prud. Good Boy, *Joseph*, thy Mother hath taught thee well, and thou hast hearkened to what she has said unto thee.

Then said *Prudence* to *Samuel*, who was the eldest Son but one :

Samuel Catechised.

Prud. Come, *Samuel*, are you willing that I should Catechise you ?

Samuel. Yes, forsooth, if you please.

Prud. What is Heaven ?

Sam. A Place and State most Blessed, because God dwelleth there.

Prud. What is Hell ?

Sam. A Place and State most Woful, because it is the Dwelling-place of Sin, the Devil and Death.

Prud. Why wouldst thou go to Heaven ?

Sam. That I may see God, and serve him without Weariness ; that I may see Christ, and love him everlastingly ; that I may have that Fulness of the Holy Spirit
in

in me, that I can by no Means here enjoy.

Prud. A very good Boy also, and one that has learned well.

Then she address'd herself to the eldest, *Matthew Co-* whose Name was *Matthew*; and she said *tecbifed.* to him, Come, *Matthew*, shall I also Catechise you?

Matt. With a very good Will.

Prud. I ask then if there was ever any Thing that had a Being antecedent to or before God?

Matt. No; for God is Eternal; nor is there any Thing, excepting Himself, that had a Being, until the Beginning of the First Day. *For in Six Days the Lord made Heaven and Earth, the Sea, and all that in them is.*

Prud. What do you think of the Bible?

Matt. It is the Holy Word of God.

Prud. Is there nothing written therein, but what you understand?

Matt. Yes, a great deal.

Prud. What do you do when you meet with Places therein that you do not understand?

Matt. I think God is wiser than I. I pray also that he will please to let me know all therein that he knows will be for my good.

Prud. How believe you as touching the Resurrection of the Dead?

Matt. I believe they shall rise, the same that was buried; the same in *Nature*, tho' not in *Corruption*. And I believe this upon a double Account, *First*, Because
God

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

God hath promised it. *Secondly*, because he is able to perform it.

Then said *Prudence* to the Boys, You must still hearken to your Mother, for she can learn you more. You must also diligently give Ear to what good Talk you shall hear from others; for your Sakes do they speak good Things. Observe also, and that with Carefulness, what the Heavens and the Earth do teach you; but especially be much in the Meditation of that Book that was the Cause of your Father's becoming a Pilgrim. I, for my Part, my Children, will teach you what I can while you are here, and shall be glad if you will ask me Questions that tend to Godly Edifying.

*Prudence's
Conclusion up-
on the Cate-
chizing of the
Boys.*

Nows by that these Pilgrims had been at this Place a Week, *Mercy* had a Visiter that pretended some good Will unto her; and his Name was *Mr. Brisk*; a Man of some Breeding, and that pretended to Religion, but a Man that stuck very close to the World. So he came once or twice, or more, to *Mercy*, and offer'd Love unto her. Now *Mercy* was of a fair Countenance, and therefore the more alluring.

*Mercy's Tem-
per.*

Her Mind also was, To be always busying of herself in doing, for when she had nothing to do for herself, she would be making of Hose and Garments for others, and would bestow them upon them that had Need. And *Mr. Brisk* not knowing where, or how he disposed of what she made, seemed to be greatly taken, for that he found her never idle. I will warrant
you

her a good Housewife, quoth he to himself.

Mercy then revealed the Business to the Maidens that were of the House, and enquired of them concerning him, for they did know him better than she. So they told her, That he was a very busy young Man, and one that pretended to Religion; but was, as they feared, a Stranger to the Power of that which is good.

Nay then, said *Mercy*, I will look no more on him; for I purpose never to have a Clog to my Soul.

Prudence then replied, That there needed no great Matter of Discouragement to be given to him, for continuing so as she had begun to do for the Poor, would quickly cool his Courage.

So the next Time he comes, he finds her at her old Work, a making of Things for the Poor. Then said he, What ways at it? Yes, said she, either for myself or for others: And what canst thou earn a Day, quoth he? I do these Things, said she, *That I may be rich in good Works, laying a good Foundation against the Time to come, that I may lay hold of Eternal Life,* 1 Tim. 6. 17, 18, 19. Why, Prithee, what dost thou with them? said he. Cloath the Naked, said she. With that his Countenance fell. So he forebore to come at her again. And when he was asked the Reason why, he said, *That Mercy was a pretty Lass, but troubled with ill Conditions.*

*Talk betwixt
Mercy and
Mr. Briik.*

*He forsakes
her, and why.*

When

Mercy in the Practice of Mercy rejected, while Mercy in the Name of Mercy is liked.

When he had left her, *Prudence* said, Did I not tell thee, That *Mr. Bristle* would soon forsake thee? yea, he will raise up an ill Report of thee: For notwithstanding his Pretence to Religion, and his seeming Love to *Mercy*, yet *Mercy* and he are of Tempers so different, that I believe they will never come together.

Mercy. I might have had Husbands before now, tho' I spoke not of it to any; but they were such as did not like my Conditions, tho' never did any of them find Fault with my Person. So they and I could not agree.

Prud. *Mercy* in our Days is little set by, any further than as to its Name: The Practice, which is set forth by the Conditions, there are but few that can abide.

Mercy's Resolutions.

Mercy. Well, said *Mercy*, if no Body will have me, I will die a Maid, or my Conditions shall be to me as a Husband. For I cannot change my Nature; and to have One that lies cross to me in this, that I purpose never to admit of as long as I live. I had a Sister named *Bountiful*, married to One of these Churls; but he and she could never agree; but because my Sister was resolved to do as she had begun, that is, to shew Kindness to the Poor, therefore her Husband first cried her down at the Cross, and then turned her out of his Doors.

How Mercy's Sister was served by her Husband.

Prud. And yet he was a Professor, I warrant you.

Mercy. Yes, such a one as he was, and of such as the World is now full: but I am for none of them all.

Now

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

77

Now *Matthew*, the eldest Son of *Christiana*, fell sick, and his Sickness was fore upon him, for he was much pained in his Bowels, so that he was with it, at Times, pulled as it were both Ends together. There dwelt also not far from thence, one Mr. *Skill*, an ancient and well-approved Physician. So *Christiana* desired it, and they sent for him, and he came: When he was entered the Room, and had a little observed the Boy, he concluded that he was sick of the Gripes. Then he said to his Mother, What Diet has *Matthew* of late fed upon? Diet, said *Christiana*, nothing but what is wholesome. The Physician answered, This Boy has been tampering with something that lies in his Maw undigested, and that will not away without Means. And I tell you he must be purged, or else he will die.

Sam. Then said *Samuel*, Mother, what was that which my Brother did gather and eat, so soon as we were come from the Gate that is at the Head of this Way? You know that there was an Orchard on the Left-hand, on the other Side of the Wall, and some of the Trees hung over the Wall, and my Brother did pluck and did eat.

Christiana. True, my Child, said *Christiana*, he did take thereof, and did eat; naughty Boy as he was, I chid him, and yet he would eat thereof.

Skill. I know he had eaten something that was not wholesome Food, and that Food, to wit, that Fruit, is even the most hurtful of all. It is the Fruit of
Beel-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.
Beelzebub's Orchard. I do marvel that none did warn you of it; many have died thereof.

Christ. Then *Christiana* began to cry, and she said, O naughty Boy, and O careless Mother, what shall I do for my Son?

Skill. Come, do not be too much dejected; the Boy may do well again, but he must Purge and Vomit.

Christ. Pray, Sir, try the utmost of your Skill with him, whatever it costs.

Skill. Nay, I hope I shall be reasonable; *Heb.* 10. 1, 2, 3, 4. So he made him a Purge, but it was too weak; it was said, it was made of the Blood of a Goat, the Ashes of a Heifer, and with some of the Juice of Hyssop, &c. When Mr. *Skill* had seen that that Purge was too weak, he made him one to the Purpose:

*Potion prepared.
 The Latin
 I borrow.*

It was made *Ex Carne, Ex Sanguine Christi*, *Joh.* 6. 54, 55, 56, 57. *Mark* 9. 49. *Heb.* 9. 14. (you know Physicians give strange Medicines to their Patients) and it was made into Pills, with a Promise or two, and a proportionable Quantity of Salt. Now he was to take them three at a Time fasting, in half a Quarter of a Pint of the Tears of Repentance. When this Portion was prepared, and brought to the Boy, he was loth to take it, tho' torn with the Gripes, as if he should be pull'd in Pieces. Come, come, said the Physician, you must take it. It goes against my Stomach, said the Boy. *I must have you take it*, said his Mother, *Zeck.* 12. 10. I shall vomit it up again, said the Boy. Pray, Sir,

*The Boy loth
 to take the
 Physick.*

Sir, said *Christiana* to Mr. *Skill*, how does it taste? It has no ill Taste, said the Doctor; and with that she touched one of the Pills with the Tip of her Tongue. *The Mother tastes it, and persuades him.* Oh, *Matthew*, said she, this Potion is sweeter than Honey. If thou lovest thy Mother, if thou lovest thy Brothers, if thou lovest *Mercy*, if thou lovest thy Life, take it. So with much ado, after a short Prayer for the Blessing of God upon it, he took it, and it wrought kindly with him. It caused him to purge, to sleep, and rest quietly: it put him into a fine Heat and breathing Sweat, and rid him of his Gripes.

So in a little Time he got up, and walked about with a Staff, and would go from Room to Room, and talk with *Prudence*, *Piety* and *Charity*, of his Distemper, and how he was healed.

So when the Boy was healed, *Christiana* *A Word of God* asked Mr. *Skill*, saying, Sir, What will content you for your Pains and Care to me, *in the Hand of Faith.* and of my Child? And he said, you must pay the *Master of the College of Physicians*, Heb. 13. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, according to Rules made in that Case and provided.

Christ. But, Sir, said she, what is this Pill good for else?

Skill. It is an universal Pill; it is good *This Pill an* against all Diseases that *Pilgrims* are inci- *Universal Re-* dent to; and when it is well prepared, will *medy.* keep good, Time out of Mind.

Christ. Pray, Sir, make me up twelve Boxes of them: For if I can get these, I will never take other Physick.

Skill. These Pills are good to prevent Diseases, as well as to cure when one is Sick. Yea, I dare say it, and stand to it, That if a Man will but use this Physick as he should, *it will make him live for ever*: Joh. 6. 50. But good *Christiana*, thou must give these Pills *no other Way*, but as I have prescribed: For if you do, they will do no Good. So he gave unto *Christiana* Physick for herself, and her Boys, and for *Mercy*, and bid *Matthew* take heed how he eat any more *Green-Plumbs*, and kissed them, and went his Way.

In a Glass of the Tears of Repentance.

It was told you before, that *Prudent* bid the Boys, that if at any Time they would, they should ask her some Questions that might be profitable, and she would say something to them.

Matt. Then *Matthew*, who had been sick, asked her, Why for the most Part Physick should be bitter to our Palates?

Of Physick.

Prud. To shew how unwelcome the Word of God and the Effects thereof, are to a Carnal Heart.

Of the Effect of Physick.

Matt. Why does Physick, if it does good, purge, and cause to vomit?

Prud. To shew that the Word, when it works effectually, cleanseth the Heart and Mind. For look, what the one doth to the Body, the other doth to the Soul.

Of Fire, and of the Sun.

Matt. What should we learn by seeing the Flame of our Fire go upwards? And by seeing the Beams and sweet Influences of the Sun strike downwards?

Prud. By the going up of the Fire, we are taught to ascend to Heaven, by fervent and hot Desires. And by the Sun's send-

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress. 81

sending his Heat, Beams, and sweet Influences downwards, we are taught, That the Saviour of the World, tho' high, reacheth down with his Grace and Love to us below.

Matt. Where have the Clouds their Water? *Of the Clouds.*

Prud. Out of the Sea.

Matt. What may we learn from that?

Prud. That Ministers should fetch their Doctrine from God.

Matt. Why do they empty themselves upon the Earth?

Prud. To shew that Ministers should give out what they know of God to the World.

Matt. Why is the Rain-Bow caused by the Sun? *Of the Rain-Bow.*

Prud. To shew that the Covenant of God's Grace is confirmed to us in Christ.

Matt. Why do the Springs come from the Sea to us through the Earth?

Prud. To shew that the Grace of God comes to us through the Body of Christ.

Matt. Why do some of the Springs rise out of the Top of high Hills? *Of the Springs.*

Prud. To shew, that the Spirit of Grace shall spring up in some that are Great and Mighty, as well as in many that are Poor and Low.

Matt. Why doth the Fire fasten upon the Candle-wick? *Of the Candle.*

Prud. To shew, that unless Grace doth kindle upon the Heart, there will be no true Light of Life in us.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Matt. Why is the Wick and Tallow, and all spent, to maintain the Light of the Candle ?

Prud. To shew that Body and Soul, and all should be at the Service of, and spend themselves to maintain in good Condition, that Grace of God that is in us.

Of the Pelican.

Matt. Why doth the *Pelican* pierce her own Breast with her Bill ?

Prud. To nourish her young Ones with her Blood, and thereby to shew that Christ the Blessed so loveth his Young, his People, as to save them from Death by his Blood.

Of the Cock.

Matt. What may one learn by hearing of the Cock crow ?

Prud. Learn to remember *Peter's* Sin and *Peter's* Repentance. The Cock's Crowing shews also, that Day is coming on ; let then the Crowing of the Cock put thee in Mind of that last and terrible Day of Judgment.

The Weak may call the Strong sometimes to Prayers.

Now about this Time their Month was out ; wherefore they signified to those of the House, that it was convenient for them to up and be going. Then said *Joseph* to his Mother, it is convenient that you forget not to send to the House of Mr. *Interpreter*, to pray him to grant that Mr. *Great-heart* should be sent unto us, that he may be our Conductor, the rest of our Way. Good Boy, said she, I had almost forgot. So she drew up a Petition, and prayed Mr. *Watchful* the Porter, to send it by some fit Man, to her good Friend Mr. *Interpreter* ; who, when it was come, and he had seen the Contents of the
Pe-

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

83

Petition, said to the Messenger, Go tell them that I will send him.

When the Family where *Christiana* was, saw that they had a Purpose to go forward, *They provide* they called the whole House together, to ^{to be gone on} give Thanks to their King for sending of ^{their Way.} them such profitable Guests as these. Which done, they said unto *Christiana*, And shall we not shew thee something according as our Custom is to Pilgrims, on which thou may'st meditate, when thou art on the Way? So they took *Christiana*, her Children, and *Mercy* into the Closet, and shewed them one of the *Apples* that *Eve's Apple*. *Eve* eat of, and that she also did give to her Husband; and for the eating of which, they were both turned out of Paradise, and asked her what she thought that was? Then *Christiana* said, *It is Food or Poison. I know not which.* So they opened the Matter to her, and she held up her Hands and wondered, *Gen. 3. 6. Rom. A Sight of Sin is amazing.*
7. 24.

Then they had her to a Place, and shewed her *Jacob's Ladder*. Now at that *Jacob's Ladder* Time there were some Angels ascending upon it. So *Christiana* look'd and look'd to see the Angels go up, so did the rest of the Company. Then they were going into another Place, to shew them something else: But *James* said to his Mother, Pray bid them stay a little longer, for this is a curious Sight. So they turned again, and stood feeding their Eyes with this ^{*A Sight of Christ is so pleasant a Prospect.*} *so* pleasant a Prospect. After this they had them into a Place where did hang up a *Golden Anchor*, so they bid *Christiana* take *Golden Anchor*.
X 3 it

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

it down; for, said they, you shall have it with you, *Gen. 28: 12.* for it is of absolute Necessity that you should, that you may lay hold of that within the Veil, and stand stedfast in case you should meet with turbulent Weather: So they were glad thereof, *John 1. 15. Heb. 6. 19. Gen. 28. 12.* Then they took them, and had them to the Mount upon which *Abraham* our Father had offered up to *Isaac* his Son, and shewed them the *Altar*, the *Wood*, the *Fire*, and the *Knife*, for they remain to be seen to this very Day. When they had seen it, they held up their Hands, and blest themselves, and said, Oh! What a Man for Love to his Master, and for Denial to himself was *Abraham*? After they had shewed them all these Things, *Prudence* took them into a Dining-Room, where stood a Pair of excellent *Virginals*; so she played upon them, and turned what she had shewed them into this excellent Song, saying,

Of Abraham
offering up
Isaac. 1

Prudence's
Virginals.

*Eve's Apple we have shew'd to you;
Of that be you aware:
You have seen Jacob's Ladder too,
Upon which Angels are.
An Anchor you received have,
But let not this suffice,
Until with Abra'm you have gave
Your Best of Sacrifice.*

Now

! Now about this Time one knock'd at the Door: So the Porter open'd, and behold Mr. *Great-beart* was there; but when he was come in, what Joy was there! For it came now afresh again in their Minds, how but a while ago he had slain Old *Grim* *Bloody-man*, the Giant, and had delivered them from the Lions. *Mr. Great-beart comes again.*

Then said Mr. *Great-beart* to *Christiana*, and to *Mercy*, My Lord has sent each of you a Bottle of Wine, and also some parched Corn, together with a Couple of Pomegranates: He also sent the Boys some Figs and Raisins, to refresh you in your Way. *He brings a Token from his Lord with him.*

Then they address'd themselves to their Journey; and *Prudence* and *Piety* went along with them. When they came at the Gate, *Christiana* asked the Porter, if any of late went by. He said, No, only one some Time since, who also told me, that of late there had been a great Robbery committed on the King's Highway as you go: But, saith he, the Thieves are taken, and will shortly be tried for their Lives. Then *Christiana* and *Mercy* were afraid; but *Matthew* said, Mother, Fear nothing, as long as Mr. *Great-beart* is to go with us, and to be our Conductor. *Robbery.*

Then said *Christiana* to the Porter, Sir, I am much obliged to you for all the Kindnesses that you have shewed to me since I came hither; and also that you have been so Loving and Kind to my Children; I know not how to gratify your Kindness: Wherefore, pray, as a Token of my Respects to you, accept of *Christiana takes her Leave of the Porter.*

*The Porter's
Blessing.*

this small Mite : So she put a Gold Angel in his Hand, and he made her a low O-beyfance, and said, Let thy Garments be always white, and let thy Head want no Ointment. Let *Mercy* live and not die, and let not her Works be few. And to the Boys he said, Do you fly Youthful Lusts, and follow after Godliness with them that are Grave and Wise ; so shall you put Gladness into your Mother's Heart, and obtain Praise of all that are Sober-minded : So they thanked the Porter, and departed.

Now I saw in my Dream, that they went forward until they were come to the Brow of the Hill, where *Piety* bethinking herself, cry'd out, Alas ! I have forgot what I intended to bestow upon *Christiana* and her Companions ; I will go back and fetch it ; so she ran and fetched it. When she was gone, *Christiana* thought she heard in a Grove a little Way off on the Right Hand, a most curious melodious Note, with Words much like these :

*Tbro' all my Life thy Favour is
So frankly shew'd to me,
That in thy House for evermore
My Dwelling-place shall be.*

And listening still, she thought she heard another answer, saying,

For

For why? The Lord our God is Good;
 His Mercy is for ever sure:
 His Truth at all Times firmly stood,
 And shall from Age to Age endure.

So *Christiana* asked *Prudence* what it was that made those curious Notes, *Song* 2. 11, 12. They are, said she, our Country Birds: They sing these Notes but seldom, except it be at the Spring, when the Flowers appear, and the Sun shines warm, and then you may hear them all the Day long. I often, said she, go to hear them; we also oft-times keep them tame in our House. They are very fine Company for us when we are melancholy; also they make the Woods and Groves, and Solitary Places, Places desirous to be in.

By this Time *Piety* was come again; so *Piety* bestowed she said to *Christiana*, Look here, I have brought thee a Scheme of all those Things that thou hast seen at our House, upon which thou may'st look when thou findest thyself forgetful, and call those Things again to Remembrance for thy Edification and Comfort.

Now they began to go down the Hill into the Valley of *Humiliation*. It was a steep Hill and the Way was slippery; but they were very careful, so they got down pretty well. When they were down in the Valley, *Piety* said to *Christiana*, this is the Place where your Husband met with the foul Fiend *Apollyon*, and where they had the great Fight that they had;

I know

I know you cannot but have heard thereof. But be of good Courage, as long as you have here Mr. *Great-heart* to be your Guide and Conductor, we hope you will fare the better. So when these two had committed the Pilgrims unto the Conduct of their Guide, he went forward and they went after.

Mr. *Great-heart* at the Valley of Humiliation.

Great-heart. Then said Mr. *Great-heart*, We need not to be so afraid of this Valley, for here is nothing to hurt us, unless we procure it ourselves. It is true, *Christian* did here meet with *Apolhyon*, with whom he had also a fore Combat; but that *Frey* was the Fruit of those Slips that he got in his going down the Hill: For they that get *Slips there*, must look for *Combats here*. And hence it is that this Valley has got so hard a Name. For the common People, when they hear that some frightful Thing has befallen such a One in such a Place, are of Opinion that that Place is haunted with some foul Fiend, or Evil Spirit; when, alas! it is for the Fruit of their Doing, that such Things do befall them there.

Part I. page 65.

The Reason why *Christian* was so beset here.

This Valley of *Humiliation* is of itself as fruitful a Place, as any the Crow flies over; and I am persuaded, if we could hit upon it, we might find somewhere hereabout something that might give us an Account why *Christian* was so hardly beset in this Place.

Then *James* said to his Mother, Lo, yonder stands a Pillar, and it looks as if somewhat was written thereon; let us go and see what it is. So they went and found there

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress. 89

there written; *Let Christian's Slips, before A Pillar with;*
he came hisher, and the Burden that he met ^{an Inscription}
with in this Place, be a Warning to those ^{on it.}
that come after. Lo, said their Guide, Did
 I not tell you that there was something
 hereabouts that would give Intimation of
 the Reason why *Christian* was so hard beset
 in this Place: Then turning to *Christiana*,
 he said, No Disparagement to *Christian*
 more than to many others whose Hap and
 Lot it was. For it is easier going up than
 down this Hill, and that can be said but
 of few Hills in all these Parts of the
 World. But we will leave the good Man,
 he is at Rest, he also had a brave Victory
 over his Enemy: Let him grant that
 dwelleth above, that we fare no worse when
 we come to be try'd than he.

But we will come again to this Valley ^{*This Valley a*}
 of *Humiliation*. It is the best and most ^{*brave Place.*}
 useful Piece of Ground in all these Parts.
 It is a fat Ground, and, as you see, con-
 sisteth much in Meadows; and if a Man
 was to come here in the Summer Time, -as
 we do now, if he knew not any thing be-
 fore thereof, and if he also delighted him-
 self in the Sight of his Eyes, he might
 see that which would be delightful to
 him. Behold how green this Valley is,
 also how beautified with *Lillies*, *Song* 2.
 1 *Jam.* 4. 6. 1 *Pet.* 5. 5. I have also
 known many labouring Men that have
 got good Estates in this Valley of *Humi-*
liation. (For God resisteth the Proud, but
 gives more Grace to the Humble;) for ^{*Men strive in*}
 indeed it is a very fruitful Soil, and doth ^{*the Valley of*}
 bring forth by Handfuls. Some also have ^{*Humiliation.*}
 wished,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

wished, that the next Way to their Father's House were here, that they might be troubled no more with either Hills or Mountains to go over; but the Way is the Way, and there is an End.

Now as they were going along, and talking, they espied a Boy feeding his Father's Sheep. The Boy was in very mean Cloaths, but of a fresh and well-favour'd Countenance; and as he sat by himself, he sung. Hark, said Mr. *Great-heart*, to what the Shepherd's Boy saith; so they hearken'd, and he said,

He that is down, needs fear no Fall;

Phil. 4. 12.

He that is low, no Pride:

43-

He that is humble, ever shall

Have God to be his Guide.

I am content with what I have,

Little be it or much:

And, Lord, Contentment still I crave,

Because thou savest such.

Heb. 13. 5.

Fulness to such a Burden is,

That go on Pilgrimage:

Here little, and hereafter Bliss,

Is best from Age to Age.

Then said the Guide, Do you hear him? I will dare to say, this Boy lives a merrier Life, and wears more of the Herb call'd
Heart's-

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

91

Heart's-Ease in his Bosom, than he that is clad in Silk and Velvet; but we will proceed in our Discourse.

In this Valley our Lord formerly had his Country-House, he loved much to be here: He loved also to walk in these Meadows, and he found the Air was pleasant: Besides, here a Man shall be free from the Noise, and from the Hurryings of this Life: All States are full of Noise and Confusion, only the Valley of Humiliation is that empty and solitary Place. Here a Man shall not be let and hinder'd in his Contemplation, as in other Places he is apt to be. This is a Valley that no body walks in, but those that love a Pilgrim's Life. And tho' *Christian* had the hard Hap to meet with *Apollyon*, and to enter with him in a brisk Encounter, yet I must tell you, that in former Times Men have met with Angels here, have found Pearls here, and have in this Place found the Words of Life. *Hof.* 12. 4, 5.

Did I say our Lord had here in former Days his Country-House, and that he loved here to walk? I will add, in this Place, and to the People that live and trace these Grounds, he has left a yearly Revenue to be faithfully paid them at certain Seasons for their Maintenance by the Way, and for their farther Encouragement to go on their Pilgrimage, 11. 29.

Samuel. Now as they went on, *Samuel* said to Mr. *Great-heart*: Sir, I perceive that in this Valley, my Father and *Apollyon* had their Battle; but whereabouts was he

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

the Fight, for I perceive this Valley is large?

*Forgetful
Green.*

Great-heart. Your Father had the Battle with *Apollyon*, at a Place yonder before us, in a narrow Passage, just beyond *Forgetful-Green*. And indeed that Place is the most dangerous Place in all these Parts. For if at any time Pilgrims meet with any Brunt, it is when they forget what Favours they have received, and how unworthy they are of them: This is the Place also where others have been hard put to it: But more of the Place when we are come to it; for I persuade myself, that to this Day there remains either some Sign of the Battle, or some Monument to testify that such a Battle there was fought.

*Humility a
Sweet Grace.*

Mercy. Then said *Mercy*, I think I am as well in this Valley as I have been any where else in all my Journey: The Place methinks, suits with my Spirit. I love to be in such Places where there is no Rattling with Coaches, nor Rumbling with Wheels: Methinks, here one may, without much Molestation, be thinking what he is, whence he came, what he has done, and to what the King has call'd him: Here one may think and break at Heart, and melt in one's Spirit, until one's Eyes become as the *Fish-Pools of Hesbon*, *Song 7. 5 Psal. 84. 5, 6, 7. Hof. 2. 15.* They that go rightly through this Valley of *Baccha*, make it a Well, the Rain that God sends down from Heaven upon them that are here, also *filleth the Pools*. This Valley is that from whence also the King will give to their Vineyards, and they that go through

PART II. The Pilgrims's Progress.

93

through it, shall sing, as *Christian* did, for all he met *Apollyon*.

Great-heart. It is true, said their Guide, I have gone through this Valley many a Time, and never was better than when here. An Experiment of it.

I have also been a Conductor to several Pilgrims, and they have confessed the same: *To this Man will I look, saith the King, even to him that is Poor, and of a Contrite Spirit, and that trembles at my Word.*

Now they were come to the Place where the afore-mention'd Battle was fought. Then said the Guide to *Christiana*, her Children and *Mercy*, This is the Place, on this Ground *Christian* stood, and up there came *Apollyon* against him: And look, did not I tell you, Here is some of your Husband's Blood upon these Stones to this Day: Behold, also, how here and there are yet to be seen upon the Place some of the Shivers of *Apollyon*'s broken Darts: See also how they did beat the Ground with their Feet as they fought, to make good their Places against each other; how also with their By-blows, they did split the very Stones in Pieces: Verily *Christian* did here play the Man, and shewed himself as stout as *Hercules* could, had he been there, even he himself. When *Apollyon* was beat, he made his Retreat to the next Valley, that is call'd, *The Valley of the Shadow of Death*, unto which we shall come anon. The Place where Christian and the Fiend did fight: Some Signs of the Battle remains.

Lo, yonder also stands a Monument on which is engraven this Battle, and *Christian*'s Victory, to his Fame, throughout

out all Ages : So because it stood juſt on the Way-side before them, they ſtepp'd to it, and read the Writing, which Word for Word was this :

*A Monument
of Chriſtian's
Victory.*

Part I. p. 70.

Hard-by here was a Battle fought,

Moſt ſtrange, and yet moſt true ;

Chriſtian and Apollyon fought

Each other to ſubdue.

The Man ſo bravely play'd the Man,

He made the Fiend to fly :

Of which a Monument I ſtand,

The ſame to teſtify.

When they had paſſed by this Place, they came upon the Borders of the Shadow of Death, and this Valley was longer than the other, a Place alſo moſt ſtrange-ly haunted with Evil Things, as many are able to teſtify : But theſe Women and Children went the better through it, be- cauſe they had Day-light, and becauſe Mr. *Great-heart* was their Conductor.

When they were enter'd upon this Val- ley, they thought that they heard a Groaning, as of dead Men ; a very great Groaning. They thought alſo they did hear Words of Lamentation, ſpoken as of ſome in extreme Torment. Theſe Things made the Boys to quake, the Women alſo looked pale and wan ; but their Guide bid them be of good Comfort.

*Groanings
heard.*

*The Ground
ſhakes.*

So they went on a little farther, and they thought that they felt the Ground begin

begin to shake under them; as if some ^{The Ground} hollow Place was there; they heard also ^{shakes.} a Kind of Hissing, as of Serpents, but nothing as yet appear'd. Then said the Boys, Are we not yet at the End of this doleful Place? But the Guide also bid them be of good Courage, and look well to their Feet, lest haply, said he, you be taken in some Snare.

Now *James* began to be sick, but I think ^{James sick} the Cause thereof was Fear; so his Mo-^{with Fear.}ther gave him some of that Glass of Spirits that she had given her at the *Interpreter's* House, and three of the Pills that *Mr. Skill* had prepared, and the Boy began to revive. Thus they went on, till they came to about the Middle of the Valley; and then *Christiana* said, Methinks I see some-^{A Fiend ap-}thing yonder upon the Road before us, ^{pears.} a Thing of such a Shape as I have not seen. Then said *Joseph*, Mother, What is it? An ugly Thing, Child; an ugly Thing, said she: But, Mother, What is it like? said he. 'Tis like I cannot tell ^{The Pilgrims} what, said she. And now it is but a little ^{are afraid.} Way off: Then, said she, it is nigh.

Well, said *Mr. Great-heart*, Let them that are most afraid, keep close to me: So the *Fiend* came on, and the Conductor met it; but when it was just come to him, it vanished to all their Sights: Then remember'd they what had been said some Time ago; *Resist the Devil, and he will flee from you.*

They went therefore on, as being a ^{Great-heart} little refresh'd; but they had not gone ^{encourages} far, before *Mercy*, looking behind her, ^{them.}

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

saw, as she thought, something almost like a Lion, and it came a great padding Pace after; and it had a hollow Voice of roaring; and at every Roar that it gave, it made the Valley echo, and all their Hearts to ake, save the Heart of him that was their Guide. So it came up, and Mr. *Great-heart* went behind, and put the Pilgrims all before him. The Lion also came on apace, and Mr. *Great-heart* addressed himself to give him Battle, *1 Pet.* 5. 8. But when he saw that it was detest-
 mined, that Resistance should be made, he also drew back, and came no farther.

Then they went on again, and their Conductor did go before them, till they came to a Place where was cast up a Pit, the whole Breadth of the Way, and before they could be prepared to go over that, a great Mist and a Darkness fell upon them, so that they could not see. Then said the Pilgrims, Alas! Now what shall we do? But their Guide made Answer, Fear not, stand still, and see what an End will be put to this also; so they staid there, because their Path was marr'd. They then also thought that they did hear more apparently the Noise and Rushing of the Enemies; the Fire also, and Smoak of the Pit, was much easier to be discerned. Then said *Christiana* to *Mercy*, Now I see what my poor Husband went through; I have heard much of this Place, but I never was here afore now; poor Man, he went here all alone in the Night; he had Night almost quite through the Way; also these Fiends were busy about him, as if they would
 have

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress. 97

have torn him in Pieces. Many have spoke of it, but none can tell what the Valley of *The Shadow of Death* should mean until they came in themselves. *The Heart* ^{Christiana now knows what her Husband felt.} *knows its own Bitterness, a Stranger intermeddeth not with its Joy.* To be here, is a fearful Thing.

Great-heart. This is like doing Business in great Waters, or like going down into the Deep; this is like being in the Heart of the Sea, and like going down to the Bottoms of the Mountains: Now it seems as if the Earth, with its Bars, were about us for ever. *But let them that walk in Darkness, and have no Light, trust in the Name of the Lord, and stay upon their God.* For my Part, as I have told you already, I have gone often through this Valley, and have been much harder put to it than now I am; and yet you see I am alive. I would not boast, for that I am not my own Saviour. But I trust we shall have a good Deliverance. Come, pray for Light to him that can lighten our Darkness, and that can rebuke, not only these, but all the Satans in Hell.

So they cried and prayed, and God sent Light and Deliverance, for there was now no Let in their Way; no not there, where but now they were stopt with a Pit. Yet they were not got through the Valley; so they went on still, and behold great Stinks and loathsome Smells, to the great Annoyance of them. Then said *Mercy to Christiana,* There is not such pleasant Being here as at the Gate, or at

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.
the *Interpreter's*, or at the House where we lay last.

*One of the
Boy's Reply.*

O but, said one of the Boys, it is not so bad to go thro' here, as it is to abide here always; and for ought I know, one Reason why we must go this Way to the House prepared for us, is, That our Home might be made the sweeter to us.

Well said *Samuel*, quoth the Guide, thou hast now spoke like a Man. Why, if ever I get out here again, said the Boy, I think I shall prize Light and good Way, better than ever I did in in all my Life. Then said the Guide, We shall be out by and by.

So on they went, and *Joseph* said, Cannot we see to the End of this Valley as yet? Then said the Guide, Look to your Feet, for we shall presently be among Snares; So they looked to their Feet, and went on; but they were troubled much with the Snares. Now when they were come among the Snares, they espied a Man cast into the Ditch on the Left Hand, with his Flesh all rent and torn. Then said the Guide, That is one *Heedless*, that was going this Way; he has lain there a great while: There was one *Takeheed* with him, when he was taken and slain; but he escaped their Hands. You cannot imagine how many are killed hereabouts, and yet Men are so foolishly venturous, as to set out lightly on Pilgrimage, and to come without a Guide. Poor *Christian!* it was a Wonder that he here escaped; but he was beloved of his God: Also he had a good Heart of his own, or else
he

*Heedless
slain, and
Takeheed
Preserved.*

he could never have done it. Now they drew towards the End of the Way, and just there where *Christian* had seen the Cave when he went by, out thence came forth *Maul a Giant*. This *Maul* did use to spoil young Pilgrims with Sophistry, and he called *Great-beart* by his Name, and said unto him, How many Times have you been forbidden to do these Things? Then said Mr. *Great-beart*, What Things? What Things? quoth the Giant; You know what Things; but I will put an End to your Trade. But, pray, said Mr. *Great-beart*, before we fall to it, let us understand wherefore we must fight. (Now the Women and Children stood trembling, and know not what to do.) Quoth the Giant, you rob the Country, and rob it with the worst of Thieves. These are but Generals, said Mr. *Great-beart*; come to Particulars, Man.

Then said the Giant, Thou practisest the Craft of a *Kidnapper*, thou gatherest up Women and Children, and carriest them into a strange Country, to the weakening of my Master's Kingdom. But now *Great-beart* reply'd, I am a Servant of the *God of Heaven*; my Business is to persuade Sinners to *Repentance*: I am commanded to do my Endeavour to turn Men, Women, and Children, from Darkness to Light, and from the Power of Satan to God; and if this be indeed the Ground of thy Quarrel, let us fall to it as soon as thou wilt.

Then the Giant came up, and Mr. *Great-beart* went to meet him; and as he

Part I. page 78.

Maul a Giant.

He quarrels with Great-beart.

God's Ministers counted as Kidnappers.

The Giant and Mr. Great-beart must fight.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

went, he drew his Sword, but the Giant had a Club. . . So without more ado they fell to it, and at the first Blow the Giant struck Mr. *Great-heart* down upon one of his Knees; with that the *Women and Children* cried: So Mr. *Great-heart* recovering himself, laid about him in full lusty Manner, and gave the Giant a Wound in his Arm; that he fought for the Space of an Hour, to that Height of Heat, that the Breath came out of the Giant's Nostrils, as the Heat doth out of a boiling Cauldron.

*Weak Folks
Prayers at
some Times
help strong
Folks Crisis.*

Then they sat down to rest them, but Mr. *Great-heart* betook himself to Prayer; also the Women and Children did nothing but sigh and cry all the Time that the Battle did last.

When they had rested them, and taken Breath, they both fell to it again, and Mr. *Great-heart* with a full Blow fetch'd the Giant down to the Ground: Nay, hold, let me recover, quoth he. So Mr. *Great-heart* let him fairly get up: So to it they went again, and the Giant missed but little of breaking Mr. *Great-heart's* Skull with his Club.

*The Giant
struck down.*

Mr. *Great-heart* seeing that, runs to him in the full Heat of his Spirit, and pierced him under the fifth Rib; with that the Giant began to faint, and could hold up his Club no longer. Then Mr. *Great-heart* seconded his Blow, and smit the Head of the Giant from his Shoulders. Then the Women and Children rejoiced, and Mr. *Great-heart* also praised God, for the Deliverance he had wrought,

*He is slain,
and his Head
disposed of.*

When

When this was done, they among themselves erected a *Pillar*, and fastened the *Giant's Head* thereon, and wrote under it in Letters that Passengers might read :

*He that did wear this Head, was one
That Pilgrims did refuse ;
He stop't their Way, he spared none,
But did them all abuse :
Until that I Great-heart arose,
The Pilgrims Guide to be ;
Until that I did him oppose,
That was their Enemy.*

Now I saw that they went to the Ascent that was a little Way off cast up to be a Prospect for *Pilgrims*, (that was the Place from whence *Christian* had the first Sight *Part I. page 79.* of *Faithful* his Brother.) Wherefore here they sat down, and rested, they also here did eat and drink, and make merry ; for that they had gotten Deliverance from this so dangerous an Enemy. As they sat thus and did eat, *Christiana* ask'd the Guide, *If he had caught no Hurt in the Battle?* Then said Mr. *Great-heart*, No, save a little on my Flesh ; yet that also shall be so far from being to my Detriment, that it is at present a Proof of my Love to my Master and you, and shall be a Means, by Grace, to increase my Reward at last.

But was you not afraid, good Sir, when you saw him come with his Club ?

It is my Duty, said he, to mistrust my own Ability, that I may have Reliance,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

2 Cor. 4.
Discourse of
the Fight.

ance on him that is Stronger than all. But what did you think, when he fetch'd you down to the Ground at the first Blow? Why, I thought, quoth he, that so my Master himself was served, and yet he it was that conquered at last.

Matthew here
admires God's
Goodness.

Matt. When you all have thought what you please, I think God has been wonderful good unto us, both in bringing us out of this Valley, and in delivering us out of the Hand of this Enemy; for my Part, I see no Reason why we should distrust our God any more, since he has *Now*, and in *Such* a Place as this, given us such Testimony of his Love as this.

Old Honest
asleep under
the Oak.

Then they got up, and went forward: Now a little before them stood an Oak, and under it when they came to it, they found an old Pilgrim fast asleep, they knew that he was a Pilgrim by his *Cloaths*, and his *Staff* and his *Girdle*.

So the *Guide*, *Mr. Great-beart*, awaked him, and the old Gentleman, as he lift up his *Eyes*, cried out, What's the Matter? Who are you? And what is your Business here?

One Saint
sometimes
takes another
for his Enemy.

Great-beart. Come, Man, be not so hot, here is none but Friends: Yet the old Man gets up, and stands upon his Guard, and will know of them what they were. Then said the *Guide*, my Name is *Great-beart*, I am the *Guide* of these Pilgrims, which are going to the *Cælestial Country*:

Honest. Then said *Mr. Honest*, I cry you Mercy; I fear'd that you had been of the Company of those that some Time ago did rob *Little-Faith* of his Money, but
now

now I look better about me, I perceive *Talk between*
you are honest People. *Great-heart*
and him.

Great-heart. Why what would, or could you have done, or have help'd yourself, if we indeed had been of that Company?

Hon. Done! Why, I would have fought as long as Breath had been in me; and had I so done, I am sure you could never have given me the worst on't; for a *Christian* can never be overcome, unless he should yield of himself.

Great-heart. Well said, Father *Honest*; quoth the *Guide*; for by this I know thou art a Cock of the right Kind, for thou hast said the Truth.

Hon. And by this also I know that thou knowest what true Pilgrimage is; for all others do think, that we are the soonest overcome of any.

Great-heart. Well, now we are happily met, pray let me crave your Name, and the Name of the Place you came from?

Hon. My Name I cannot, but I came *Whence Mr.*
from the Town of *Stupidity*; it lieth about *Honest came.*
four Degrees beyond the City of *De-*
struction.

Great-heart. Oh! Are you that Countryman? Then I deem I have half a Guess of you, your Name is old *Honesty*, is it not? So the old Gentleman blush'd, and said, not *Honesty* in the *Abstract*, but *Honesty* is my Name, and I wish that my *Nature* may agree to what I am called.

Hon. But, Sir, said the old Gentleman, how could you guess that I am such a Man, since I came from such a Place?

Great-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Great-heart. I had heard of you before, by my Master; for he knows all Things that are done on the Earth: But I have often wondered that any should come from your Place, for your Town is worse than is the City of Destruction itself.

Stupified Ones are worse than those merely Carnal.

Hon. Yea, we lie more off from the Sun, and so are more cold and senseless; but was a Man in a Mountain of Ice, yet if the Sun of Righteousness will arise upon him, his frozen Heart shall feel a Thaw; and thus it has been with me.

Great-heart. I believe it, Father *Humble*, I believe it; for I know the Thing is true.

Then the Old Gentleman saluted all the Pilgrims with a Holy Kiss of Charity, and asked them of their Names, and how they had fared since they set out on their Pilgrimage.

Old Honesty and Christiana talk. *Christ.* Then said *Christiana*, My Name I suppose you have heard of; good *Christian* was my Husband, and these Four were his Children. But can you think how the Old Gentleman was taken, when she told him who she was! He skipped, he smiled, and blessed them with a thousand good Wishes, saying:

Hon. I have heard much of your Husband, and of his Travels and Wars, which he underwent in his Days. Be it spoken to your Comfort, the Name of your Husband rings all over these Parts of the World; his Faith, his Courage, his Enduring, and his Sincerity under all, has made his Name famous. Then he turned

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.* 105

ed to the Boys, and asked them of their He also talks
Names, which they told him: And then with the Boys;
 said he unto them, *Matthew*, be thou like Old Mr. Ho-
Matthew the Publican, not in Vice, but in nefty's Blessing
 Vertue. *Samuel*, saith he, be thou like on them.
Samuel the Prophet, a Man of Faith and Mat. 10. 3.
 Prayer. *Joseph*, saith he, be thou like Psal. 99. 6.
Joseph in *Potiphar's* House, Chaste, and Gen. 39.
 one that flies from Temptation. And Acts 1, 14.
James, be thou like *James the Just*, and
 like *James* the Brother of our Lord. Then
 they told him of *Mercy*, and how she had
 left her Town and her Kindred to come
 along with *Christiana*, and with her Sons.
 At that the old Honest Man said, *Mercy* He blefseth
 is thy Name: By *Mercy* shalt thou be suf- Mercy.
 tain'd, and carried through all those Diffi-
 culties that shall assault thee in thy Way,
 till thou shalt come thither, where thou
 shalt look the *Fountain of Mercy in the Face*
with Comfort.

All this While the Guide, *Mr. Great-
 heart*, was very well pleased, and smiled
 upon his Companion.

Now, as they walked together, the Talk of our
 Guide asked the old Gentleman, If he did Mr. Fearing.
 not know one *Mr. Fearing*, that came on
 Pilgrimage out of his Parts?

Hon. Yes, very well said he. He was a
 Man that had the Root of the Matter in
 him, but he was one of the most trouble-
 some Pilgrims that I ever met with in all
 my Days.

Great-heart. I perceive you knew him,
 for you have given a very right Character
 of him.

Hon.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Hon. Knew him! I was a great Companion of his; I was with him most an end; when he first began to think of what would come upon us hereafter, I was with him.

Great-beart. I was his Guide from my Master's House to the Gate of the Cœlestial City.

Hon. Then you knew him to be a troublesome one.

Great-beart. I did so; but I could very well bear it: for Men of my Calling are oftentimes intrusted with the Conduct of such as he was.

Hon. Well then, pray let us hear a little of him, and how he managed himself under your Conduct.

*Mr. Fearing's
troublesome
Pilgrimage.*

Great-beart. Why he was always afraid that he should come short whither he had a Desire to go. Every thing frightened him that he heard any Body speak of, that had but the least Appearance of Opposition in it. I hear that he lay roaring at the *Slough of Despond*, for above a Month together; nor durst he, for all he saw several go over before him, venture, tho' they many of them offered to lend him their Hands. He would not go back neither. The Cœlestial City, he said he should die if he came not to it, and yet was dejected at every Difficulty, and stumbled at every Straw that any body cast in his Way. Well, after he had lain at the *Slough of Despond* a great While, as I have told you, one Sun-shine Morning, I don't know how, he ventured, and so got over: But when he was over, he would

*His Behaviour
at the Slough
of Despond.*

would scarce believe it. He had, I think, a *Slough of Despond* in his Mind, a *Slough* that he carry'd every where with him, or else he could never have been as he was. So he came up to the Gate, you know what I mean, that stands at the Head of this Way, and there also he stood a good While before he would venture to knock. When the Gate was opened, he would give back and give Place to others, and say, that he was not worthy: For all he got before some to the Gate, yet many of them went in before him. There the poor Man would stand shaking and shrinking; I dare say it would have pitied one's Heart to have seen him: Nor would he go back again: At last he took the Hammer that hang'd at the Gate in his Hand, and gave a small Rap or two; then one opened to him, but he shrunk back as before. He that open'd, stept out after him, and said, Thou trembling One, what wantest thou? With that he fell down to the Ground. He that spoke to him wonder'd to see him so faint. He said to him, *Peace be to thee*, up, for I have set open the Door to thee; come in, for thou art blest. With that he got up, and went in trembling; and when that he was in, he was ashamed to shew his Face. Well, after he had been entertained there a While, as you know how the Manner is, he was bid go on his Way; and also told the Way he should take. So he came till he came to our House, but as he behaved himself at the Gate, so he did at my Master the

*His Behaviour
at the Gate.*

*His Behaviour
at the Inter-*

preter's Door.
Inter-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Interpreter's Door. He lay thereabouts in the Cold a good While, before he would adventure to call; *yet he would not go back.* And the Nights were long and cold then. Nay he had a Note of *Necessity* in his Bosom to my Master to receive him, and grant him the Comfort of his House, and also to allow him a stout and valiant Conductor, because he was himself so *Chicken-hearted* a Man; and yet for all that, he was afraid to call at the Door. So he lay up and down thereabouts, till, poor Man, he was almost starv'd; yea, so great was his Dejection, that tho' he saw several others for knocking got in, yet he was afraid to venture. At last I think, I looked out of the Window, and perceiving a Man to be up and down about the Door, I went out to him, and asked what he was; but, poor Man, the Water stood in his Eyes: So I perceived what he wanted. I went therefore in, and told it in the House, and we shewed the Things to our Lord: So he sent me out again, to entreat him to come in; but I dare say, I had hard Work to do it. At last he came in, and I will say that for my Lord, he carry'd it wonderful loving to him. There were but a few good Bits at the Table, but some of it was laid upon his Trencher. Then he presented the *Note*, and my Lord looking thereon, and said, his Desire should be granted. So when he had been there a good While, he seemed to get some Heart, and to be a little more comforted. For my Master, you must know, is one of very tender Bowels,

How he was entertained there.

He is a little encouraged at the Interpreter's House.

Bowls, especially to them that are afraid; wherefore he carried it so towards him, as might tend most to his Encouragement. Well, when he had a Sight of the Things of the Place, and was ready to take his Journey to go to the City, my Lord, as he did to *Christian* before, gave him a Bottle of Spirits, and some comfortable Things to eat. Thus we set forward, and I went before him; but the Man was but of few Words, only he would sigh aloud.

When we were come to where the *He was* three Fellows were hanged, he said, That *frightened as* he doubted that that would be his End *the Gibbet,* also. Only he seemed glad when he saw *comforted at* the *Cross* and the *Sepulchre*. There I confessed he desired to stay a little to look; and he seemed for a While after to be a little comforted. When we came at the Hill *Difficuly* he made no stick at that, nor did he much fear the Lions: For you must know, *That his Troubles were not about such Things as these;* his Fear was about his *Acceptance at last.*

I got him in at the House *Beautiful*, I think, before he was willing; also when he was in, I brought him acquainted with the Damfels that were of the Place, but he was ashamed to make himself much *Dumpeish at* for Company; he desired much to be *the House* alone, yet he always loved good Talk, *Beautiful.* and often would get behind the Skreen to hear it: He also loved much to see *Ancient Things*, and to be pondering them in his Mind. He told me afterwards, That he loved to be in those two Houses from

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

from which he came last, to wit, at the Gate, and that of the *Interpreter*, but that he durst not be so bold as to ask.

He went down into, and was very pleasant in the Valley of Humiliation.

When we went also from the House Beautiful, down the Hill, into the Valley of Humiliation, he went down as well as ever I saw a Man in my Life, for he cared not how mean he was, so he might be happy at last. Yea, I think there was a kind of Sympathy betwixt that Valley and him: For I never saw him better in all his Pilgrimage, than he was in that Valley.

Here he would lie down, embrace the Ground, and kiss the very Flowers that grew in this Valley; *Lam. 3. 27, 28, 29.* He would now be up every Morning by Break of Day, tracing and walking to and fro in the Valley.

Much perplexed in the Shadow of Death.

But when he was come to the Entrance of the Valley of the *Shadow of Death*, I thought I should have lost my Man; not for that he had any Inclination to go back, that he always abhorred; but he was ready to die for Fear. O! the *Hobgoblins* will have me, the *Hobgoblins* will have me, cried he; and I could not beat him out on't. He made such a Noise, and such an Outcry here, that had they but heard him; 'twas enough to encourage them to come and fall upon us.

But this I took very great Notice of, That this Valley was as quiet when we went through it, as ever I knew it before or since. I suppose those Enemies here had now a special Check from our Lord, and

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

and a Command not to meddle until Mr. *Fearing* was pass'd over it.

It would be too tedious to tell you of all; we will therefore only mention a Passage or two more. When he was come to *Vanity-Fair*, I thought he would have fought with all the Men in the Fair; I feared there we should both have been knock'd on the Head, so hot was he against *Fooleries*; upon the enchanted Ground he was also very wakeful. But when he was come at the River, where was no Bridge, there again he was in a heavy Case: Now, now, he said, he should be drowned for ever, and so never see that Face with Comfort, that he had come so many Miles to behold.

His Behaviour at Vanity-Fair.

And here also I took Notice of what was very remarkable; The Water of that River was lower at this Time, than ever I saw it in all my Life; so he went over at last, not much above wet-shod. When he was going up to the Gate, Mr. *Great-beart* began to take his Leave of him, and to wish him a good Reception above, so he said, *I shall, I shall*: Then parted we asunder, and I saw him no more.

His Boldness at last.

Hon. Then it seems he was well at last.

Great-beart. Yes, yes, I never had Doubt about him, he was a Man of a choice Spirit, only he was always kept very low,

Z and

Behold Vanity-Fair! the Pilgrims there

Are Chain'd, and Stoned beside:

Even so it was our Lord pass'd here,

And on Mount Calvary dy'd.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

and that made his Life so burdensome to himself, and so very troublesome to others. *Psal.* 83. *Rom.* 14. 21. *1 Cor.* 8. 13. He was above many, tender of Sin; he was so afraid of doing Injuries to others, that he often would deny himself of that which was lawful, because he would not offend.

Hon. But what should be the Reason that such a good Man should be all his Days so much in the Dark?

*Reason good
Men are so in
the Dark.
Matt 11. 16,
17, 18.*

Great-heart. There are two Sorts of Reasons for it; one is, The wise God will have it so, some must *Pipe*, and some must *Weep*: Now Mr. *Fearing* was one that played upon the *Bass*. He and his Fellows sound the *Sackbut*, whose Notes are more doleful than Notes of other Musick are: Though indeed some say, The *Bass* is the Ground of Musick. And for my Part, I care not at all for that Profession, that begins not in Heaviness of Mind. The first String that the Musician usually touches, is the *Bass*, when he intends to put all in Tune; God also plays upon this String first, when he sets the Soul in Tune for himself. Only there was the Imperfection of Mr. *Fearing*, he could play upon no other Musick but this, till towards his latter End.

I make bold to talk thus Metaphorically, for the ripening of the Wits of *Young Readers*, and because in the Book of the *Revelations*, the Saved are compared to a Company of Musicians that play upon their *Trumpets and Harps*, and sing their Songs before the Throne, *Rev.* 8. chap. 14. 2, 3,

Hon.

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

113

Hon. He was a very zealous Man, as one may see by what Relation you have given of him; Difficulties, Lions, or Vanity-Fair, he feared not at all; it was only Sin, Death, and Hell, that was to him a Terror; because he had some Doubts about his Interest in that Coelestial Country.

Great-heart. You say right: *Those were* A Clofe about the Things that were his Troubles, and him. they, as you have well observed, arose from the Weakness of his Mind thereabout, not from Weakness of Spirit as to the Practical Part of a Pilgrim's Life. I dare believe, that as the Proverb is, *He could have bit a Firebrand, had it stood in his Way:* But those Things with which he was oppress'd, no *Man* ever yet could shake off with Ease.

Christiana. Then said *Christiana*, This Christiana's Relation of Mr. *Fearing* has done me Sentence. good: I thought no Body had been like me; but I see there was some Semblance 'twixt this good Man and I, only we differ in two Things. His Troubles were so great, that they brake out, but mine I kept within. His also lay so hard upon him, they made him that he could not knock at the Houses provided for Entertainment; but my Troubles were always such, as made me knock the louder.

Mercy. If I might also speak my Mind, Mercy's I must say, that something of him has Sentence. also dwelt in me. For I have ever been more afraid of the *Lake*, and the Loss of a Place in *Paradise*, then I have been at the Loss of other Things. O! thought I,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

may I have the Happiness to have a Habitation there, 'tis enough, though I part with all the World to win it.

Matthew's
Sentence.

Matt. Then said *Matthew*, Fear was one Thing that made me think that I was far from having that within that accompanies Salvation; but if it was so with such a good Man as he, why may it not also go well with me?

James's
Sentence.

James. No Fears, no Grace, said *James*. Though there is not always Grace where there is the Fear of Hell, yet to be sure there is no Grace where there is no Fear of God.

Great-heart. Well said, *James*, thou hast hit the Mark; for the Fear of God is the Beginning of Wisdom; and to be sure they that want the Beginning, have neither Middle nor End. But we will here conclude our Discourse of Mr. *Fearing*, after we have sent after him his Farewel.

Their Farewel
about him.

Whilst, Master Fearing, thou didst fear

Tky God, and wast afraid

Of doing any Thing, while here,

That would have thee betray'd.

And didst thou fear the Lake and Pit?

Would others do so too!

For, as for them that want tky Wit,

They do themselves undo.

Now I saw, That they all went on in their Talk. For after Mr. *Great-heart* had made an End with Mr. *Fearing*, Mr.

Honest

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

115

Honest began to tell them of another, but his Name was Mr. *Self-will*. He pretended himself to be a *Pilgrim*, said Mr. *Honest*; but I persuade myself, he never came in at the Gate that stands at the Head of the Way.

Great-beart. Had you ever any Talk with him about it ?

Hon. Yes, more than once or twice; but he would always be like himself, *Self-willed*. He neither cared for Man, nor Argument, nor Example; what his Mind prompted him to, that he would do, and nothing else could he be got to.

Great-beart. Pray what Principles did he hold ? For I suppose you can tell.

Hon. He held, That a Man might follow the Vices as well as the Virtues of the Pilgrims; and that if he did both, he should be certainly saved.

Great-beart. How ! if he had said, It is possible for the Best to be guilty of the Vices as well as partake of the Virtues of Pilgrims, he could not much have been blamed. For indeed we are exempted from no Vice absolutely, but on Condition that we watch and strive. But this I perceive is not the Thing: But if I understand you right, your Meaning is, that he was of that Opinion, That it was allowable so to be.

Hon. Ay, ay, so I mean, and so he believed and practised.

Great-beart. But what Grounds had he for his so saying ?

Hon. Why, he said he had the Scripture for his Warrant.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Great-heart. Prithee, Mr. *Honest*, present us with a few Particulars.

Hon. So I will. He said, To have to do with other Mens Wives, had been practised by *David*, God's Beloved, and therefore he could do it. He said, To have more Women than one, was a Thing that *Solomon* practised, and therefore he could do it. He said, That *Sarab* and the Godly Midwives of *Egypt* lyed, and so did *Rabab*, and therefore he could do it. He said, That the Disciples went at the Bidding of their Master, and took away the Owner's *Ass*, and therefore he could do so too. He said, That *Jacob* got the Inheritance of his Father, in a Way of Guile and Dissimulation, and therefore he could do so too.

Great-heart. High Base ! Indeed. And are you sure he was of this Opinion ?

Hon. I have heard him plead for it, bring Scripture for it, bring Arguments for it, &c.

Great-heart. An Opinion that is not fit to be with any Allowance in the World.

Hon. You must understand me rightly : He did not say that any Man might do this ; but that those that had the Vertues of those that did such Things, might also do the same.

Great-heart. But what more false than such a Conclusion ? For this is as much as to say, That because good Men heretofore have sinned of Infirmity, therefore he had Allowance to do it of a presumptuous Mind : Or if because a Child, by the Blast of the Wind, or for that it stumbled

at a Stone, fell down and defiled itself in Mire, therefore he might wilfully lie down and wallow like a Boar therein. Who could have thought that any one could so far have been blinded by the Power of Lust : But what is written must be true : *They stumble at the Word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed,* 1 Peter 2. 8.

His supposing that such may have the Godly Mens Vertues, who addict themselves to their Vices, is also a Delusion as strong as the other. It is just as if the Dogs should say, I have, or may have the *Qualities of the Child*, because I lick up its stinking Excrements. To eat up the Sin of God's People, *Hos. 4. 8.* is no Sign of one that is possessed with their Vertues. Nor can I believe, that one that is of this Opinion, can at present have Faith or Love in him. But I know you have made some strong Objections against him, Prithee what can he say for himself?

Hon. Why, he says, To do this by Way of Opinion, seems abundant more honest than to do it, and yet hold contrary to it in Opinion.

Great-beart. A very wicked Answer; for though to let loose the Bridle to Lusts, while our Opinions are against such Things, is bad ; yet, to sin, and plead a Toleration so to do, is worse ; the one stumbles Beholders accidentally, the other pleads them into the Snare.

Hon. There are many of this Man's Mind, that have not this Man's Mouth,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

and that makes going on Pilgrimage of so little Esteem as it is.

Great-beart. You have said the Truth, and it is to be lamented : But he that feareth the King of *Paradise*, shall come out of them all.

Christ. There are strange Opinions in the World. I know one that said, it was Time enough to repent when we come to die.

Great-beart. Such are not otherwise : That Man would have been loth, might he have had a Week to run twenty Miles in his Life, to have deferr'd that Journey to the last Hour of that Week.

Hon. You say right, and yet the Generality of them that count themselves Pilgrims, do indeed do thus. I am, as you see, an old Man, and have been a Traveller in this Road many a Day ; and I have taken Notice of many Things.

I have seen some that have set out as if they would drive all the World afore them, who yet have in few Days died as they in the Wilderness, and so never got Sight of the *Promised Land*.

I have seen some that have promised Nothing at first setting out to be Pilgrims, and that one would have thought could not have lived a Day, that have yet proved very good Pilgrims.

I have seen some who have run hastily forward, that again have, after a little Time, run as fast just back again.

I have seen some who have spoke very well of a Pilgrim's Life at first, that after a while have spoken as much against it.

I have

I have heard some, when they first set out for *Paradise*, say positively, There is such a Place, who when they have been almost there, have come back again, and said there is none.

I have heard some vaunt what they would do in case they should be opposed that have even at a false Alarm fled Faith, the Pilgrim's Way, and all.

Now as they were thus in their Way, ^{*Fresh News of Trouble*} there came one running to meet them, and said, *Gentlemen, and you of the weaker Sort, if you love Life, shift for yourselves, for the Robbers are before you.*

Great-beart. Then said Mr. *Great-beart*, they be the Three that set upon *Little-Faith* heretofore. Well, said he, we are ^{*Part I. p. 161.*} ready for them; so they went on their ^{*Great-beart's*} Way: Now they looked at every Turning ^{*Resolution.*} when they should have met with the Villains: But whether they heard of Mr. *Great-beart*, or whether they had some other Game, they came not up to the Pilgrims.

Christ. *Christiana* then wished for an ^{*Christiana*} Inn for herself and her Children, because ^{*wisbeth for an*} they were weary. Then said Mr. *Honest,* ^{*Inn.*} There is one a little before us, where a very honourable Disciple, one *Gaius*, dwells. So they all concluded to turn in thither, *Rom. 16. 23.* and the rather, because the old Gentleman gave him so good a Report. So when they came to the ^{*Gaius they en-*} Door, they went in, not knocking, ^{*ter into his*} for ^{*House.*} Folks use not to knock at the Door of an Inn. Then they called for the Master of the

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

the House, and he came to them: So they asked if they might lie there that Night?

Gaius enters them, and bows.

Gaius. Yes, Gentlemen, if you be true Men, for my House is for none but Pilgrims. Then was *Christiana*, *Mercy*, and the *Boys*, the more glad, for that the Inn-keeper was a Lover of Pilgrims. So they call'd for Rooms, and he shew'd them one for *Christiana* and her Children, and *Mercy*, and another for Mr. *Great-beart* and the old Gentleman.

Great-beart. Then said Mr. *Great-beart*, good *Gaius*, What hast thou for Supper? for these Pilgrims have come far To-day, and are weary.

Gaius. It is late, said *Gaius*, so we cannot conveniently go out to seek Food; but such as we have you shall be welcome to, if that will content you.

Great-beart. We will be content with what thou hast in the House; forasmuch as I have proved thee, thou are never destitute of that which is convenient.

Gaius's Cook. Then he went down and spake to the Cook, whose Name was, *Taste that which is Good*, to get ready Supper for so many Pilgrims. This done, he comes up again, saying, Come, my good Friends, you are welcome to me, and I am glad that I have a House to entertain you; and while Supper is making ready, if you please, let us entertain one another with some good Discourse: So they all said, *Content*.

Talk between Gaius and his Guests. *Gaius.* Then said *Gaius*, Whose Wife is this aged Matron? and whose Daughter is this young Damfel?

Great-

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

121

Great-heart. The Woman is the Wife of one *Christian*, a Pilgrim of former Times; and these are his four Children. The Maid is one of her Acquaintance; one that she hath persuaded to come with her on Pilgrimage. The Boys take all after *Mark this.* their Father, and convert to tread in his Steps: Yea, if they do but see any Place where the old Pilgrim hath lain, or any Print of his Foot, it ministereth Joy to their Hearts, and they covet to lie or tread in the same.

Gaius. Then said *Gaius*, Is this *Christian's* Wife, and are these *Christian's* Children? I knew your Husband's Father, yea, also his Father's Father. Many have been good of this Stock, their Ancestor's dwelt first at *Antioch*. *Christiana's* Progenitors (I Acts 11. 12. suppose you have heard your Husband Of Christiana's talk of them) were very worthy Men. Ancestors. They have, above any that I know, shewed themselves Men of great Virtue and Courage, for the Lord of the Pilgrims, his Ways, and them that loved him. I have heard of many of your Husband's Relations that have stood all Trials for the Sake of the Truth. *Stephen*, that was one of the first of the Family from whence your Husband sprang, was knocked on the Head with Stones, *Acts* 7. 59, 60. *Chap.* 12. 8. *James*, another of this Generation, was slain with the Edge of the Sword. To say nothing of *Paul* and *Peter*, Men anciently of the Family from whence your Husband came: There was *Ignatius*, who was cast to the Lions: *Romanus*, whose Flesh was cut by Pieces from his Bones; and

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II:

and *Polycarp*, that play'd the Man in the Fire. There was he that was hang'd up in a Basket in the Sun, for the Wasps to eat; and he who they put into a Sack, and cast him into the Sea to be drown'd. It would be utterly impossible to count up all that Family that have suffer'd Injuries and Death, for the Love of a Pilgrim's Life. Nor can I but be glad, to see that thy Husband has left behind him four such Boys as these. I hope they will bear up their Father's Name, and tread in their Father's Steps, and come to their Father's End.

Great-heart. Indeed, Sir, they are likely Lads; they seem to choose heartily their Father's Ways.

*Advice to
Christiana
about her
Boys.*

Gaius. That is it that I said, wherefore *Christiana's* Family is like still to spread abroad upon the Face of the Ground, and yet to be numerous upon the Face of the Earth: Wherefore, let *Christiana* look out some Damsels for her Sons, to whom they may be betrothed, &c. that the Name of their Father, and the House of his Progenitors may never be forgotten in the World.

Hon. It is Pity his Family should fall and be extinct.

Gaius. Fall it cannot, but be diminish'd it may; but let *Christiana* take my Advice, and that's the Way to uphold it.

*Mercy and
Matthew
marry.*

And *Christiana*, said this Inn-keeper, I am glad to see thee and thy Friend *Mercy* together here, a lovely Couple. And may I advise, Take *Mercy* into a nearer Relation to thee: If she will, let her be given to *Matthew* thy eldest Son: It is the Way
to

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

123

to preserve a Posterity in the Earth. So this Match was concluded, and in Process of Time they were married: But more of that hereafter.

Gaius also proceeded, and said, I will now speak on the Behalf of Women, to take away their Reproach. For as Death and the Curse came into the World by a Woman, *Gen. 3.* so also did Life and Health: *God sent forth his Son, made of a Woman, Gal. 4.* Yea, to shew how much those that came after did abhor the Act of the Mother, this Sex in the Old Testament coveted Children, if happily this or that Woman might be the Mother of the Saviour of the World. I will say again, That when the Saviour was come, Women rejoiced in him, before either Man or Angel, *Luke 2. Chap. 8. 2, 3. Chap. 7. 37, 50. John 11. 2. Chap. 2. 3. Luke 23. 27. Mat. 27. 55, 56, 60. Luke 24. 22, 23.* I read not, ever Man did give unto Christ so much as one Groat, but the Women followed him, and ministred to him of their Substance. It was a Woman that washed his Feet with Tears, and a Woman that anointed his Body to the Burial. They were Women that wept when he was going to the Cross; and Women that followed him from the Cross, and that sat by his Sepulchre when he was buried: They were Women that were first with him at his Resurrection-Morn; and Women that brought Tidings first to his Disciples, that he was risen from the Dead: Women therefore are highly favour'd, and shew by these Things, that they are Sharers with us in the Grace of Life.

Now

Supper ready.

Now the Cook sent up to signify that Supper was almost ready, and sent one to lay the Cloth, and the Trenchers, and to set the Salt and Bread in Order.

Then said *Matthew*, the Sight of this Cloth, and of this Fore-runner of the Supper, begetteth in me a greater Appetite to my Food than I had before.

What is to be gathered from laying of the Bread with the Cloth and Trenchers.

Gaius. So let all ministring Doctrines to thee in this Life, beget in thee a greater Desire to sit at the Support of the Great King in his Kingdom; for all Preaching, Books and Ordinances here, are but as the laying of the Trenchers, and as setting of Salt upon the Board, when compared with the Feast that our Lord will make us when we come to his House.

*Levit. 7. 32,
33, 34. Cb.
10. 14, 15.
Psaln 25.
1 Heb. 13. 15.
Deut. 32. 14.
Judg. 9. 13.
Job. 15. 5.*

So Supper came up, and first a *Heave-Shoulder*, and a *Weave-Breast* were set on the Table before them: To shew that they must begin the *Meal* with Prayer and Praise to God. The *Heave-Shoulder David* lifted his Heart up to God with, and with the *Weave-Breast*, where his Heart lay, with that he used to lean upon his Harp, when he play'd. These two Dishes were very fresh and good, and they all eat heartily thereof.

The next they brought up, was a Bottle of Wine, as Red as Blood. So *Gaius* said to them, Drink freely, this is the true Juice of the Vine, that makes glad the Heart of God and Man. So they drank and were merry.

A Dish of Milk.

The next was a Dish of Milk well crumbled: But *Gaius* said, *Let the Boys have*

have that, that they may grow thereby, 1 Pet.

2. 1, 2.

Then they brought up in Course a *Dish of Honey, of Butter and Honey.* Then said *Gaius,* *Butter.*

Eat freely of this, for this is good to cheer up, and strengthen your Judgments and Understandings: This was our Lord's Dish when he was a Child: *Butter and Honey* *Mat. 7. 15.* *shall be eat, that he may know how to refuse the Evil, and choose the Good.*

Then they brought him up a *Dish of Apples,* and they were very good tasted *Apples.* Then said *Matthew,* may we eat Apples, since they were such, by and with which the Serpent beguiled our first Mother?

Then said *Gaius,*

*Apples were they with which we were be-
guiled,*

*Yet Sin, not Apples, hath our Souls defiled;
Apples forbid, if eat, corrupt the Blood:*

*To eat such, when commanded, does us good;
Drink of his Flaggons then, thou Church
his Dove,*

And eat his Apples, who are sick of Love.

Then said *Matthew,* I made the Scruple, because I a while since was Sick with eating of Fruit.

Gaius, Forbidden Fruit will make you Sick, but not what our Lord has tolerated.

While they were thus talking, they were *Song 6. 11.* presented with another Dish, and it was a *Dish of Nuts.*

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Dish of *Nuts*. Then said some at the Table, *Nuts* spoil tender Teeth, especially the Teeth of the Children : Which when *Gaius* heard, he said :

*Hard Texts are Nuts, (I will not call them
Cheaters)*

*Whose Shells do keep their Kernels from
the Eaters)*

*Open then the Shells, and you shall have
the Meat,*

*They here are brought, for you to Crack and
Eat.*

Then were they very merry, and sat at the Table a long Time, talking of many Things : Then said the Old Gentleman, My good Landlord, while ye are here cracking your *Nuts*, if you please, do you open this Riddle.

[A Riddle put forth by Old *Honest*.]

*A Man there was, tho' some do count him
Mad,*

The more he cast away the more he had.

Then they all gave good Heed, wondering what good *Gaius* would say ; so he sat still a while, and then thus reply'd :

[*Gaius* opens it.]

*He who thus bestows his Goods upon the Poor,
Shall have as much again, and ten times more.*

Then

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

127

Then said *Joseph*, I dare say, Sir, I did not think you could have found it out. *Joseph wonders.*

Oh! said *Gaius*, I have been trained up in this Way a great While: Nothing teaches like Experience; I have learned of my Lord to be kind, and have found by Experience, that I have gained thereby. *There is that scattereth, yet increaseth*; Prov. 11. 24. *and there is that withholdeth more than is meet,* Chap. 13. 7. *but it tendeth to Poverty: There is that maketh himself Rich, yet hath nothing; there is that maketh himself Poor, yet hath great Riches.*

Then *Samuel* whispered to *Christiana*, his Mother, and said Mother, This is a very good Man's House, let us stay here a good While, and let my Brother *Matthew* be married here to *Mercy*, before we go any farther.

The which *Gaius* the Host over-hearing, said, *With a very good Will, my Child.*

So they staid here more than a Month, *Matthew and Mercy are marry'd.* and *Mercy* was given to *Matthew* to Wife.

While they stay'd here, *Mercy*, as her Custom was, would be making Coats and Garments to give to the Poor by which she brought a very good Report upon Pilgrims.

But to return again to our Story: After Supper, the Lads desired a Bed, for they were weary with Travelling: Then *Gaius* called to shew them their Chamber; but said *Mercy*, I will have them to Bed. So she had them to Bed, and they slept well, but the rest sat up all Night: For *Gaius* and they were such suitable Company, that they could not tell how to part. Then after much Talk of their Lord, them-

A a selves,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Old Honest
nods.

selves, and their Journey, Old Mr. *Honest*, he that puts forth the Riddle to *Gaius*, began to nod. Then said *Great-heart*, What, Sir, you begin to be drowfy; Come, rub up, now here is a *Riddle* for you. Then said Mr. *Honest*, Let us hear it.

Then said Mr. *Great-heart*.

[A Riddle.]

*He that will kill, must first be overcome :
Who live abroad would, first must die at home.*

Ha ! said Mr. *Honest*, it is a hard One, hard to expound, and harder to practise. But come, Landlord, said he, I will, if you please, leave my Part to you, do you expound it, and I will hear what you say.

No, said *Gaius*, it was put to you, and it is expected you should answer it.

Then said the old Gentleman,

[The Riddle opened.]

*He first by Grace must conquer'd be,
That Sin would mortify :
Who, that be lives, would convince me,
Unto himself must die.*

It is right, said *Gaius*, good Doctrine and Experience teach this. For first, until Grace displays itself, and overcomes the Soul with its Glory, it is altogether without Heart to oppose Sin ; besides, if
Sin

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

129

Sin is Satan's Cords, by which the Soul lies bound, how should it make Resistance, before it is loosed from that Infirmity?

Secondly, Nor will any, that knows either Reason or Grace, believe that such a Man can be a living Monument of Grace, that is a Slave to his own Corruption.

And now it comes in my Mind, I will tell you a Story worth the Hearing. There were two Men that went on Pilgrimage, the One began when he was Young, the other when he was old: The Young Man had strong Corruptions to grapple with, the Old Man's were weak with the Decays of Nature: The Young Man trod his Steps as even as did the old One, and was every way as light as he: Who now, or which of them had their Graces shining clearest, since both seem'd to be alike?

A Question worth the minding.

Hon. The Young Man's, doubtless. For that which heads it against the greatest Opposition, gives best Demonstration that it is strongest; especially when it also holdeth Pace with That that meets not with half so much; as to be sure old Age does not.

A Comparison.

Besides, I have observed, That old Men have blessed themselves with this Mistake; Namely, taking the Decays of Nature for a gracious Conquest over Corruptions, and so have been apt to beguile themselves. Indeed old Men that are Gracious, are best able to give Advice to them that are Young, because they have seen most of the Emptiness of Things: But yet, for an Old and a Young Man to set out together, the Young one has the Advantage

A Mistake.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

tage of the fairest Discovery of a Work of Grace within him, though the old Man's Corruptions are naturally the weakest.

Thus they sat talking till Break of Day. Now when the Family was up, *Christiana* bid her Son *James* that he should read a Chapter; so he read the 53d of *Isaiab*: When he had done, *Mr. Honest* asked why it was said, *That the Saviour is said to come out of a dry Ground, and also that he had no Form or Comeliness in Him?*

Another
Question.

Great-heart. Then said *Mr. Great-heart*; To the first I answer; Because the Church of the *Jews*, of which Christ came, had then almost lost all the Sap, and Spirit of Religion. To the second I say, the Words are spoken in the Person of the Unbeliever, who because they want the Eye that can see into our Prince's Heart, therefore they judge of him by the Meanness of his Outside.

Just like those, that know not that Precious Stones are covered over with a homely Crust; who when they have found one, because they know not what they have found, cast it again away, as Men do a common Stone.

Giant Slay-
Good assault-
ed and slain.

Well, said *Gains*, now you are here, and since, as I know, *Mr. Great-heart* is good at his Weapons, if you please, after we have refreshed ourselves, we will walk into the Fields, to see if we can do any Good. About a Mile from hence, there is one *Slay-good*, a Giant that does much annoy the King's Highway in these Parts; And I know whereabout his Haunt

is,

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

131

is, he is Master of a Number of Thieves; it would be well if we could clear these Parts of him.

So they consented and went, Mr. *Great-beart* with his *Sword, Helmet, and Shield*; and the rest with *Spears and Staves*.

When they came to the Place where he was, they found him with one *Feeble-*^{He is found with one Fee-}*mind* in his Hand, whom his Servants had ^{ble-mind in} brought unto him, having taken him in ^{his Hand.} the Way; now the *Giant* was rifling him, with a Purpose, after that, to pick his Bones; for he was of the Nature of *Flesh-Eaters*.

Well, so soon as he saw Mr. *Great-beart* and his Friends at the Mouth of his Cave, with their Weapons, he demanded what they wanted.

Great. We want thee, for we are come to revenge the Quarrels of the many that thou hast slain of the Pilgrims, when thou hast dragged them out of the King's Highway; wherefore come out of thy Cave. So he armed himself and came out, and to Battle they went, and fought for above an Hour, and then stood still to take Wind.

Slay. Then said the Giant, Why are you here on my Ground?

Great-beart. To revenge the Blood of Pilgrims, as I told thee before; so they went to it again, and the Giant made Mr. *Great-beart* give back; but he came up again, and in the Greatness of his Mind he let fly with such Stoutness at the Giant's Head and Sides, that he made him let his Weapon fall out of his Hand;

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Feeble mind
rescued from
the Giant.

so he smote him, and slew him, and cut off his Head, and brought it away to the *Inn*. He also took *Feeble-mind* the Pilgrim, and brought him with him to his Lodgings. When they were come Home, they shewed his Head to the Family, and set it up as they had done others before, for a Terror to those that shall attempt to do as he, hereafter.

Then they asked Mr. *Feeble-mind*, how he fell into his Hands?

How Feeble-
mind came to
be a Pilgrim.

Feeble-mind. Then said the poor Man, I am a sickly Man, as you see, and because *Death* did usually once a Day knock at my Door, I thought I should never be well at Home: So I betook myself to a Pilgrim's Life; and have travelled hither from the Town of *Uncertain*, where I and my Father were born. I am a Man of no Strength at all of Body, nor yet of Mind, but would, if I could, though I can but *crawl*, spend my Life in the Pilgrim's Way. When I came at the Gate that is at the Head of the Way, the Lord of that Place did entertain me freely; neither objected he against my weakly Looks, nor against my *feeble Mind*; but gave me such Things that were necessary for my Journey, and bid me hope to the End. When I came to the House of the *Interpreter*, I received much Kindness there; and because the Hill of *Difficulty* was judged too hard for me, I was carried up that by one of his Servants. Indeed I have found much Relief from Pilgrims, though none was willing to go so softly as I am forced to do: Yet still as they
came

came on, they bid me be of good Cheer, and said, That it was the Will of their Lord, that Comfort should be given to the *Feeble-minded*, and so went on their own Pace. When I was come to *Affault-Lane*, then this Giant met with me, and bid me prepare for an *Encounter*: But alas! feeble one that I was, I had more Need of a *Cordial*: So he came up and took me: I conceived he should not kill me: Also when he had got me into his Den, since I went not with him willingly, I believed I should come out alive again: For I have heard, That not any Pilgrim that is taken Captive by violent Hands, if he keeps Heart-whole towards his Master, is, by the Laws of Providence, to die by the Hand of the Enemy. Robb'd I look'd to be, and robb'd to be sure I am; but I am, as you see, escaped with Life, for the which I thank my King as Author, and you as the Means. Other Brunts I also look for, but this I have resolv'd on, to wit, to run when I can, to go when I cannot run, and to creep when I cannot go. As to the Main, I thank him that loved me, I am fix'd; my Way is before me, my Mind is beyond the River that has no Bridge, tho' I am, as you see, but of a *feeble Mind*.

Hon. Then said old Mr. *Honest*, Have not you some Time ago been acquainted with one M.: *Fearing*, a Pilgrim?

Feebl. Acquainted with him, Yes; he came from the Town of *Stupidity*, which lieth four Degrees *Northward* of the City of *Destruction*, and as many off of where

where I was born; yet we were well acquainted, for indeed he was my Uncle, my Father's Brother; he and I have been much of a Temper, he was a little shorter than I, but yet we were much of a Complexion.

Feeble-mind has some of Mr. Fearing's Features.

Hon. I perceive you know him, and I am apt to believe also, That you were related one to another; for you have his whitely Look, a Cast like his with your Eye, and your Speech is much alike.

Feebl. Most have said so, that have known us both; and besides, what I have read in him, I have for the most Part found in myself.

Gaius comforts him.

Gaius. Come, Sir, said good *Gaius*, be of good Cheer, you are welcome to me, and to my House, and what thou hast a Mind to, call for freely; and what thou would'st have my Servants do for thee, they will do it with a ready Mind.

Notice to be taken of Providence.

Then said Mr. *Feeble-mind*, This is an unexpected Favour, and as the Sun shining out of a very dark Cloud: Did Giant *Slay-good* intend me this Favour when he stopped me, and resolved to let me go no farther? Did he intend, that after he had rifled my Pocket, I should go to *Gaius* mine Host? Yet so it is.

Tidings how one Not-right was slain by a Thunderbolt, and Mr. Feeble-mind's Comments upon it.

Now, just as Mr. *Feeble-mind* and *Gaius* were thus in Talk, there comes one running, and call'd at the Door, and told, That about a Mile and a half off, there was one Mr. *Not-right*, a Pilgrim, struck dead upon the Place where he was, with a *Thunderbolt*.

Feebl,

Feebl. Alas! said Mr. *Feeble-mind*, is he slain? He overtook me some Days before I came so far as hither, and would be my Company-keeper: He also was with me when *Slay-good* the Giant took me, but he was nimble of his Heels and escaped: But it seems he escaped to Die, and I was took to Live.

*What, one would think, doth seek to slay
out-right,
Oft-times delivers from the saddest Plight.
That very Providence, whose Faith is Death,
Doth oft-times to the Lowly Life bequeath:
I taken was, he did escape and flee;
Hands cross, gave Death to him, and Life
to me.*

Now about this Time, *Matthew* and *Mercy* were married; also *Gaius* gave his Daughter *Phebe* to *James*, *Matthew's* Brother, to Wife; after which Time, they yet staid about ten Days at *Gaius's* House; spending their Time, and the Seasons like as Pilgrims used to do.

When they were to depart, *Gaius* made *The Pilgrims* them a Feast, and they did eat and drink, *prepare to go forward.* and were merry. Now the Hour was come that they must be gone; wherefore Mr. *Great-heart* call'd for a Reckoning. But *Gaius* told him, That at his House it was not the Custom of Pilgrims to pay for their Entertainment. He boarded them by the Year, but looked for his *Luke 10. 34* Pay from the good *Samaritan*, who had *53.*
pro-

*How they
greet one another
at parting.*

promised him, at his Return, whatsoever Charge he was at with them, faithfully to repay him. Then said Mr. *Great-heart* to him.

3 John 5. 6.

Great-heart. Beloyed, thou dost faithfully, whatsoever thou dost, to the Brethren and to Strangers, which have borne Witness of thy Charity before the Church, whom if thou (yet) bring forward on their Journey, after a Godly Sort, thou shalt do well.

*Gaius's last
Kindness to
Feeble-mind.*

Then *Gaius* took his Leave of them all, and his Children, and particularly of Mr. *Feeble-mind*. He also gave him something to drink by the Way.

Now Mr. *Feeble-mind*, when they were going out of the Door, made as if he intended to linger. The which when Mr. *Great-heart* espied, he said, Come, Mr. *Feeble-mind*, pray do you go along with us, I will be your Conductor, and you shall fare as the rest.

*Feeble-mind.
for going behind.*

Feebl. Alas! I want a suitable Companion; you are all lusty and strong, but I, as you see, am weak; I choose therefore rather to come behind, lest by Reason of my many Infirmities, I should be both a Burden to myself and to you. I am, as I said, a Man of a weak and feeble Mind, and shall be offended and made weak at that which others can bear. I shall like no Laughing: I shall like no gay Attire: I shall like no unprofitable Questions. Nay, I am so weak a Man, as to be offended with that which others have a Liberty to do. I do not know all the Truth: I am a very ignorant Christian

*His Excuse for
it.*

Christian

stian Man: Sometimes, if I hear any re-
joice in the Lord, it troubles me, because
I cannot do so too. It is with me, as it is
with a weak Man among the Strong, or Job. 12. 5.
as a Lamp despised, (he that is ready to
flip with his Feet, is as a *Lamp* despised
in the Thought of him that is at *Ease*;))
so that I know not what to do.

Great-heart. But Brother, said Mr. *Great-heart's*
heart, I have it in Commission to comfort *Commission.*
the *Feeble-minded*, and to support the Weak.
You must needs go along with us; we ¹Thes. 5. 15.
will wait for you, we will lend you our ^{Rom. 14.}
Help; we will deny ourselves of some ¹Cor. 8. 9,
Things both *Opinionative* and *Practical*, for ^{22.} *A Christian.*
your Sake: We will not enter into doubt-
ful Disputations before you; we will be ^{Spirit.} *Spirit.*
made all Things to you, rather than you
shall be left behind. ^{Psalms 38. 16.}

Now all this While they were at *Gaius's*
Door; and behold, as they were thus in
the Heat of their Discourse, Mr. *Ready-*
to-halt came by, with his Crutches in his
Hand, and he also was going on Pilgri-
mage.

Feebl. Then said Mr. *Feeble-mind* to him,
How camest thou hither? I was but now
complaining that I had not a suitable Com-
panion, but thou art according to my
Wish. Welcome, welcome, good Mr.
Ready-to-halt, I hope thou and I may be
some Help.

Ready-to-halt. I shall be glad of thy *Feeble-mind*
Company, said the other; and good Mr. ^{glad to see}
Feeble-mind, rather than we will part, ^{Ready-to-}
since we are thus happily met, I will lend ^{halt come.}
thee one of my Crutches.

Feebl.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Feebl. Nay, said he, tho' I thank thee for thy Good-will, I am not inclined to halt before I am lame. Howbeit, I think, when Occasion is, it may help me against a Dog.

Ready-to-balt. If either myself, or my Crutches can do thee a Pleasure, we are both at thy Command, good Mr. *Feeble-mind*.

Thus therefore they went on. Mr. *Great-heart* and Mr. *Honest* went before, *Christiana* and her Children went next, and Mr. *Feeble-mind* and Mr. *Ready-to-balt* came behind with his Crutches. Then said Mr. *Honest*.

New Talk.

Hon. Pray, Sir, now we are upon the Road, tell us some profitable Things of some that have gone on Pilgrimage before us.

*Part I. from
pag. 65. to
pag. 120.*

Great-heart. With a good Will: I suppose you have heard how *Christian* of Old did meet with *Apollyon* in the Valley of *Humiliation*, and also what hard Work he had to go thorough the Valley of the *Shadow of Death*. Also I think you cannot but have heard how *Faithful* was put to it by *Madam Wanton*, with *Adam* the First, with one *Discontent* and *Shame*: Four as deceitful Villains, as a Man can meet with upon the Road.

Hon. Yes, I believe I heard of all this; but indeed good *Faithful* was hardest put to it with *Shame*; he was an unwearied one.

Great-heart. Ay, for as the Pilgrim well said, He of all Men had the wrong Name.

Hon.

Hon. But pray, Sir, where was it that *Christian* and *Faithful* met *Talkative*? That same was also a Notable One.

Great-heart. He was a confident Fool, yet many follow his Ways.

Hon. He had like to have beguiled *Faithful*.

Great-heart. Ay, but *Christian* put him into a Way quickly to find him out. Thus they went on till they came at the Place *Part I. page* where the *Evangelist* met with *Christian* ^{106.} and *Faithful*, and prophesied to them what should befall them at *Vanity-Fair*.

Great-heart. Then said their Guide, Hereabouts did *Christian* and *Faithful* meet with *Evangelist*, who prophesied to them of what Troubles they should meet with at *Vanity-Fair*.

Hon. Say you so! I dare say it was a hard Chapter that then he did read unto them.

Great-heart. It was so, but he gave them *Part I. p. 108.* Encouragement withal. But what do we talk of them, they were a Couple of Lion-like Men; they had set their Faces like Flints. Do not you remember how undaunted they were when they stood before the Judge?

Hon. Well, *Faithful* bravely suffer'd.

Great-heart. So he did, and as brave Things came on't: For *Hopeful* and some others, as the Story relates it, were con- *Part I. p. 120.* verted by his Death.

Hon. Well, but pray go on; for you are well acquainted with Things.

Great.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Great-heart. Above all that *Christian* met with after he had passed thro' *Vanity-Fair*, one *By-Ends* was the Arch-one.

Hon. *By-Ends*, what was he?

Great-heart. A very Arch-Fellow, a down-right Hypocrite; one that would be religious which Way ever the World went; but so Cunning, that he would be sure never to lose or suffer for it.

He had his Mode of Religion for every fresh Occasion, and his Wife was as good at it as he. He would turn from Opinion to Opinion; yea, and plead for so doing too. But as far as I could learn, he came to an ill End with his *By-Ends*; nor did I ever hear that any of his Children were ever of any Esteem with any that truly feared God.

They come within Sight of Vanity-Fair.

Psal. 21. 16.

Now by this Time they were come within Sight of the Town of *Vanity*, where *Vanity-Fair* is kept. So when they saw that they were so near the Town, they consulted with one another how they should pass through the Town, and some said one Thing, and some another. At last *Mr. Great-heart* said, I have, as you may understand, often been a Conductor of Pilgrims thorough this Town; now I am acquainted with one *Mr. Mnason*, a *Cyprian* by Nation, an old Disciple, at whose House we may lodge. If you think good, said he, we will turn in there.

They enter in to Mr. Mnason's to lodge.

Content, said *Old Honest*; *Content*, said *Christiana*; *Content*, said *Mr. Feeble-mind*; and so they said all. Now, you must think, it was Even-tide by that they got

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

141

got to the Out-side of the Town; but Mr. *Great-heart* knew the Way to the old Man's House. So thither they came; and he called at the Door, and the old Man within knew his Tongue so soon as ever he heard it; so he opened, and they all came in. Then said *Manson*, their Host, How far have ye come To-day? So they said, from the House of *Gains* your Friend. I promise you, said he, you have gone a good Stitch, you may well be weary; sit down. So they sat down.

Great-heart. Then said their Guide, Come, What Chear, good Sirs, I dare say you are Welcome to my Friend.

Manson. I also, said Mr. *Manson*; do bid you welcome; and whatever you want, do but say, and we will do what we can to get it for you. They are glad of Entertainment.

Honest. Our great Want, a while since, was Harbour and good Company, and now I hope we have both.

Manson. For Harbour, you see what it is; but for good Company, that will appear in the Trial.

Great-heart. Well, said Mr. *Great-heart*, will you have the Pilgrims into their Lodging?

Manson. I will, said Mr. *Manson*. So he had them to their respective Places; and also shewed them a very fair Dining-Room, where they may be, and sup together until Time was come to go to Rest.

Now when they were set in their Places, and were a little Cheary after their Journey, Mr. *Honest* ask his Landlord, if there
there

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

there were any Store of good People in the Town?

Mnaſon. We have a few, for indeed they are but a few, when compared with them on the other Side.

Honeſt. But how ſhould we do to ſee ſome of them? For the Sight of good Men to them that are going on Pilgrimage, is like to the Appearing of the Moon and Stars to them that are going a Journey.

The Deſire to ſee ſome of the good People in the Town.

Mnaſon. Then Mr. *Mnaſon* ſtamped with his Foot, and his Daughter *Grace* came up: So he ſaid unto her, *Grace*, go you, tell my Friends, Mr. *Contrite*, Mr. *Holyman*, Mr. *Love-saints*, Mr. *Dare-not-lye*, and Mr. *Penitent*, that I have a Friend or two at my Houſe that have a Mind this Evening to ſee them.

Some ſent for.

So *Grace* went to call them, and they came; and after Salutation made, they ſat down together at the Table.

Then ſaid Mr. *Mnaſon*, their Landlord, My Neighbours, I have, as you ſee, a Company of Strangers come to my Houſe; they are Pilgrims: They come from afar, and are going to Mount *ſion*. But who, quoth he, do you think this is? pointing his Finger at *Cbriftiana*: It is *Cbriftiana*, the Wife of *Cbriftian*, that famous Pilgrim, who with *Faithful* his Brother, were ſo ſhamefully handled in our Town. At that they ſtood amazed, ſaying, We little thought to ſee *Cbriftiana*, when *Grace* came to call us, wherefore this is a very comfortable Surprize. Then they asked her about her Welfare, and if theſe young Men

were

were her Husband's Sons. And when she had told them they were, they said, The King whom you love and serve, make you as your Father, and bring you where he is in Peace.

Hon. Then Mr. *Honest* (when they were all sat down) asked Mr. *Contrite* and the rest, in what Posture their Town was at present. *Some Talk betwixt Mr. Honest and Mr. Contrite.*

Contrite. You may be sure we are full of Hurry in Fair-Time, It is hard keeping our Hearts and Spirits in good Order, when we are in a cumber'd Condition. He that lives in such a Place as this, and that has to do with such as we have, has need of an *Item*, to caution him to take Heed every Moment of the Day. *The Fruit of Watchfulness.*

Honest. But how are your Neighbours now for Quietness?

Contrite. They are much more moderate now than formerly. You know how *Christian* and *Faithful* were used at our Town: But of late, I say, they have been far more moderate. I think the Blood of *Faithful* lieth with Load upon them till now; for since they burned him, they have been ashamed to burn any more; in those Days we were afraid to walk the Streets, but now we can shew our Heads. Then the Name of a Professor was odious; now, especially in some Parts of our Town, (for you know our Town is large) Religion is counted honourable. *Persecution not so hot at Vanity-Fair as formerly.*

Then said Mr. *Contrite* to them, Pray how fareth it with you in your Pilgrimage? How stands the Country affected towards you?

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Hon. It happens to us, as it happeneth to Way-faring Men; sometimes our Way is clean, sometimes foul; sometimes up Hill, sometimes down Hill; we are seldom at a Certainty: The Wind is not always on our Backs, nor is every one a Friend that we meet with in the Way. We have met with some notable Rubs already; and what are yet behind we know not; but for the most Part we find it true, that has been talked of Old: *A good Man must suffer Trouble.*

Contrite. You talk of Rubs, What Rubs have you met withal?

Hon. Nay, ask Mr. *Great-heart*, our Guide, for he can give the best Account of that.

Great-heart. We have been beset three or four times already. First, *Christiana* and her Children were beset with two *Ruffians*, that they feared would take away their Lives. We were beset with *Giant Bloody-man*, *Giant Maul*, and *Giant Slay-good*. Indeed we did rather beset the last, than were beset of him. And thus it was: After we had been some time at the House of *Gaius*, *mine Host*, and of the whole Church, we were minded upon a Time to take our Weapons with us, and so go see if we could light upon any of those that were Enemies to *Pilgrims*; (for we heard that there was a Notable One thereabouts.) Now *Gaius* knew his *Haunt* better than I, because he dwelt thereabout; so we looked and looked, till at last we discerned the Mouth of his Cave; then were we glad, and plucked

plucked up our Spirits. So we approach'd up to his Den, and lo, when we came there, he had dragged, by mere Force, into his Net, this poor Man, Mr. *Feeble-mind*, and was about to bring him to his End. But when he saw us, supposing, as we thought, he had another Prey; he left the poor Man in his House, and came out. So we fell to it full sore, and he lustily laid about him; but, in Conclusion, he was brought down to the Ground, and his Head cut off, and set up by the Way-side, for a Terror to such as should after practise such Ungodliness. That I tell you the Truth, here is the Man himself to affirm it, who was as a Lamb taken out of the Mouth of the Lion.

Feeble-mind. Then said Mr. *Feeble-mind*, I found this true, to my Cost and Comfort; to my Cost, when he threaten'd to pick my Bones every Moment; and to my Comfort, when I saw Mr. *Great-beast* and his Friends, with their Weapons, approach so near for my Deliverance.

Holy-man. Then said Mr. *Holy-man*, there are two Things that they have need to be possessed with that go on Pilgrimage, *Courage*, and an *Unspotted Life*. If they Mr. Holy- have not *Courage*, they can never hold on man's Speech, their Way; and if their Lives be loose, they will make the very Name of a Pilgrim stink.

Love-saint. Then said Mr. *Love-saint*, Mr. Love- I hope this Caution is not needful among saint's Speech, you. But truly there are many that go upon the Road, that rather declare them-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

selves Strangers to Pilgrimage, than Strangers and Pilgrims in the Earth.

Dare-not-lye. Then said Mr. *Dare-not-lye*, It is true, they neither have the Pilgrim's *Weed*, nor the Pilgrim's *Courage*; they go not uprightly, but all *awry* with their Feet; one Shoe goeth *inward*, another *outward*, and their Hosen out behind; here a Rag, and there a Rent, to the Disparagement of their Lord.

Mr. Penitent's Speech. *Penitent.* These Things, said Mr. *Penitent*, they ought to be troubled for; nor are the Pilgrims like to have that Grace upon them and their *Pilgrim's Progress*, as they desire, until the Way is clear'd of such Spots and Blemishes.

Thus they sat talking and spending the Time, until Supper was set upon the Table. Unto which they went, and refreshed their weary Bodies; so they went to Rest. Now they stand in the Fair a great While, at the House of Mr. *Mnason*, who, in Process of Time, gave his Daughter *Grace* unto *Samuel*, *Christiana's* Son, to Wife, and his Daughter *Martha* to *Joseph*.

The Time, as I said, that they lay here, was long, (for it was not now as in former Times.) Wherefore the Pilgrims grew acquainted with many of the good People of the Town, and did them what Service they could. *Mercy*, as she was wont, laboured much for the Poor, wherefore their Bellies and Backs blessed her, and she was there an Ornament to her Profession. And, to say the Truth for *Grace*, *Phebe*, and *Martha*, they were all of a very good Nature, and did much
Good

Good in their Places. They were also all of them very fruitful; so that *Christian's* Name, as was said before, was like to live in the World.

While they lay here, there came a *Monster* out of the *Woods*, and slew many of the People of the Town. It would also carry away their Children, and teach them to suck its Whelps. Now no Man in the Town durst so much as face this *Monster*; but all Men fled when they heard of the Noise of his Coming.

The *Monster* was like unto no one Beast upon the Earth: Its Body was like a Dragon; and it had seven Heads and ten Horns. *It made great Havock of Children,* Rev. 13. 3. and yet it was governed by a Woman. This *Monster* propounded Conditions to Men; and such Men as loved their Lives more than their Souls, accepted of those Conditions. His Shape. His Nature.

Now Mr. *Great-heart*, together with these, who came to visit the Pilgrims at Mr. *Mnason's* House, enter'd into a Covenant to go and engage this Beast, if perhaps they might deliver the People of this Town from the Paws and Mouth of this so devouring a Serpent.

Then did Mr. *Great-heart*, Mr. *Contrite*, Mr. *Holy-man*, Mr. *Dare-not-lye*, and Mr. *Penitent*, with their Weapons, go forth to meet him. Now the *Monster* at first was every Rampant, and looked upon these Enemies with great Disdain; but they so belabour'd him, being sturdy Men at Arms, that they made him make a Re-

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

treat : So they came home to Mr. *Mindson's* House again.

The *Monster*, you must know, had his certain Seasons to come out in, and to make his Attempts upon the Children of the People of the Town : Also these Seasons did these Valiant Worthies watch him in, and did continually assault him ; inſomuch, that in Proceſs of Time he became not only wounded, but lame ; alſo he had not made the Havock of the Towns-Men's Children, as formerly he has done. And it is verily believed by ſome, that this Beast will certainly die of his Wounds.

This therefore made Mr. *Great-heart* and his Fellows of great Fame in this Town ; ſo that many of the People that wanted their Taſte of Things, yet had a Reverend Eſteem and Reſpect for them. Upon this Account therefore it was, that theſe Pilgrims got not much Hurt here. True, there were ſome of the baſer Sort, that could ſee no more than a *Mole*, nor underſtand no more than a *Beaſt* ; theſe had no Reverence for theſe Men, nor took they Notice of their Valour and Adventures.

Well, the Time grew on that the Pilgrims muſt go on their Way, wherefore they prepared for their Journey. They ſent for their Friends, they conferr'd with them, they had ſome Time ſet apart therein to commit each other to the Protection of their Prince. There were again, that brought them of ſuch Things as they had, that were fit for the Weak and the Strong, for the Women and the Men,
and

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

149

and so laded them with such Things as were necessary, *Acts* 18. 10.

Then they set forwards on their Way, and their Friends accompanying them so far as was convenient, they again committed each other to the Protection of their King, and departed.

They therefore that were of the Pilgrims Company, went on, and Mr. *Great-bear* went before them; now the Women and Children being weakly, they were forced to go as they could bear; by this Means Mr. *Ready-to-halt*, and Mr. *Feeble-mind* had more to sympathize with their Condition.

When they were gone from the Townsmen, and when their Friends had bid them farewell, they quickly came to the Place where *Faithful* was put to Death; Therefore they made a Stand, and thanked him that had enabled them to bear his Cross so well; and the rather, because they now found that they had a Benefit by such a Man's Sufferings as his was.

They went on therefore after this, a good Way further, talking of *Christian* and *Faithful*, and how *Hopeful* joined himself to *Christian*, after that *Faithful* was ^{Part I. pag} dead.^{123.}

Now, they were come up with the Hill *Lucre*, where the *Silver-Mine* was, which took *Demas* off from his Pilgrimage, and into which, as some think, *By-Ends* fell and perished; wherefore they considered that. But when they were come to the Old Monument that stood over-against the Hill *Lucre*, to wit, to the Pillar of

Salt, that stood also within View of *Sodom* and its stinking Lake; they marvelled, *Part I. p. 137.* as did *Christian* before, that Men of that Knowledge and Ripeness of Wit as they were, should be so blind as to turn aside here. Only they considered again, that Nature is not affected with the Harms that others have met with, especially if that Thing, upon which they look, has an attracting Virtue upon the foolish Eye.

I saw now that they went on till they came to the River, that was on this Side *Part I. p. 152.* of the Delectable Mountains.

To the River where the fine Trees grow on both Sides; and whose Leaves, if taken inwardly, are good against Surfeits, *Psalms* 23. where the Meadows are green all the Year long, and where they might lie down safely.

By this River Side, in the Meadows, there were Cotes and Folds for Sheep, a House built for the nourishing and bringing up of those Lambs, the Babes of those Women that go on Pilgrimage, *Heb. 5. 2. Isa. 40. 11.* Also there was here one that was entrusted with them, who could have Compassion, and that could gather these Lambs with his Arm, and carry them in his Bosom, and that could gently lead those that were with Young. Now to the Care of *this Man, Christiana* admonished her four Daughters to commit their little Ones, that by these Waters they might be Housed, Harboured, Succoured, and Nourished, and that none of them might be lacking in Time to come. This
Man,

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.* 151

Man, if any of them go astray, or be lost, he will bring them again; he will also bind up that which was broken, and will strengthen them that are sick. Here they will never want Meat, Drink and Cloathing; here they will be kept from Thieves and Robbers; for this Man will die before one of those Committed to his Trust shall be lost. Besides, here they shall be sure to have *Good Nature* and *Admonition*, and shall be taught to walk in right Paths, and that you know is a Favour of no small Account. Also here, as you see, are delicate *Waters*, pleasant *Meadows*, dainty *Flowers*, Variety of *Trees*, and such as bear wholesome Fruit: Fruit not like that which *Matthew* eat of, that fell over the Wall, out of *Beelzebub's* Garden: But Fruit that procureth Health where there is none, and that continueth and increaseth where it is.

So they were content to commit their little Ones to him; and that which was also an Encouragement to them so to do, was, for that all this was to be at the Charge of the King, and so was an Hospital to young Children and Orphans.

Now they went on; and when they were come to *By-Path* Meadow, to the Stile over which *Christian* went with his Fellow *Hopeful*, when they were taken by Giant *Despair*, and put into *Doubting-Castle*; they sat down, and consulted what was best to be done; to wit, now they were so strong, and had got such a Man as Mr. *Great-heart* for their Conductor, whether they had not best to make an Attempt upon

Jer. 24. 4.
Ex. 34. 11,
12, 13, 14,
15, 16.

They being
come to By-
Path Stile,
have a Mind
to have a
Pluck with
Giant De-
spair, Part I.
p. 141.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

upon the Giant, demolish his Castle, and if there were any Pilgrims in it, to set them at Liberty, before they went any farther. So one said one Thing, and another said to the contrary. One questioned, if it was lawful to go upon *unconsecrated* Ground; another said they might, provided their End was good: But Mr. *Great-heart* said, though that Assertion offered last, cannot be universally true, yet I have a Commandment to resist Sin, to overcome Evil, to fight the good Fight of Faith: And I pray, with whom should I fight this good Fight, if not with Giant *Despair*? I will therefore attempt the taking away of his Life, and the demolishing of *Doubting-Castle*. Then, said he, who will go with me? Then, said old *Honest*, I will; and so we will too, said *Christiana's* four SONS, *Martineau*, *Samuel*, *James*, and *Joseph*, for they were young Men and strong.

1 *John* 2.
13, 14.

So they left the Women in the Road, and with them Mr. *Feeble-mind* and Mr. *Ready-to-halt*, with his Crutches to be their Guard, until they came back; for in that Place the Giant *Despair* dwelt so near, they keeping in the Road, a little Child might lead them.

Isa. 11. 6.

So Mr. *Great-heart*, old *Honest*, and the four young Men, went to go up to *Doubting-Castle*, to look for Giant *Despair*. When they came at the Castle-Gate, they knocked for Entrance with an unusual Noise. With that the old Giant comes to the Gate, and *Diffidence* his Wife follows: Then said he, Who and what is he, that

is so hardy, as after this Manner to molest the Giant *Despair*? Mr. *Great-heart* reply'd, It is I, *Great-heart*, one of the King of the *Cœlestiall* Country's Conductor of Pilgrims to their Place: And I demand of thee, that thou open thy Gates for my Entrance; prepare thyself also to fight, for I am come to take away thy Head, and to demolish *Doubting-Castle*.

Now Giant *Despair*, because he was a Giant, thought no Man could overcome him; and again, thought he, since heretofore I have made a Conquest of Angels, shall *Great-heart* make me afraid? So he harnessed himself, and went on: He had a Cap of Steel upon his Head, a Breast-Plate of Fire girded to him, and he came out in Iron-Shoes with a great Club in his Hand. Then these six Men made up to him, and beset him behind and before: Also when *Diffidence*, the Giantess, came up to help him, old Mr. *Honest* cut her down at one Blow. Then they fought for their Lives, and Giant *Despair* was brought down to the Ground, but was very loth to die: He struggled hard, and had, as they say, as many Lives as a Cat, but *Great-heart* was his Death, for he left him not till he had severed his Head from his Shoulders.

Then they fell to demolishing *Doubting-Castle*, and that you know might with Ease be done, since Giant *Despair* was dead. They were seven Days in destroying of that, and in it of Pilgrims they found one Mr. *Despondency*, almost starved to Death, and one *Much-afraid* his Daughter;

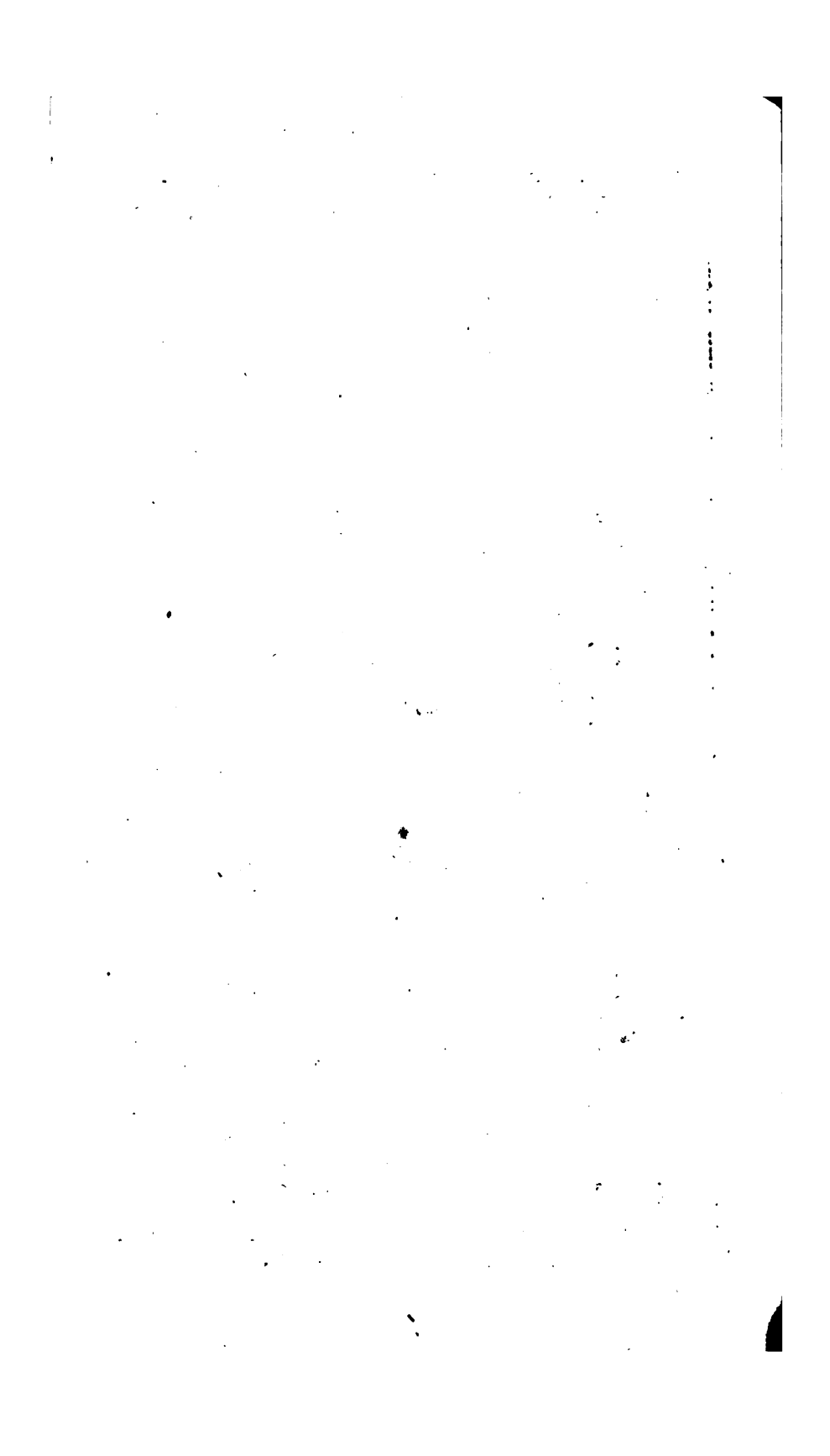
The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

ter; these two they saved alive. But it would have made you have wondered, to have seen the dead Bodies that lay here and there in the Castle-Yard, and how full of dead Men's Bones the Dungeon was.

When Mr. *Great-heart* and his Companions had performed this Exploit, they took Mr. *Despondency*, and his Daughter *Much-afraid*, into their Protection, for they were honest People, though they were Prisoners in *Doubling-Castle* to that Giant *Despair*. They therefore, I say, took with them the Head of the Giant; (for his Body they had buried under a Heap of Stones) and down to the Road, and to their Companions they came, and shewed them what they had done. Now when *Feeble-mind* and *Ready-to-halt* saw that it was the Head of the Giant *Despair* indeed, they were very jocund and merry. Now *Christiana*, if need was, could play upon the *Viol*, and her Daughter *Mercy* upon the *Lute*: So since they were so merry disposed, she played them a Lesson, and *Ready-to-halt* would dance. So he took *Despondency's* Daughter, *Much-afraid*, by the Hand, and to Dancing they went in the Road. True, he could not dance without one Crutch in his Hand; but I promise you, he footed it well; also the Girl was to be commended, for she answered the Musick handsomely.

*They have
Musick and
Dancing for
Jey.*

As for Mr. *Despondency*, the Musick was not so much to him, he was for Feeding rather than Dancing, for that he was almost starved. So *Christiana* gave him some
of





Giant Despair slain, and Doubting Castle Demolished.

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

155

of her Bottle of Spirits, for present Relief, and then prepared him somerhing to eat, and in little Time the old Gentleman came to himself, and began to be finely revived.

Now I saw in my Dream, when all these Things were finished, Mr. *Great-heart* took the Head of Giant *Despair*, and set it upon a Pole by the Highway-side, right over against the Pillar that *Christian* erected for a Caution to Pilgrims that came after, to take heed of entering into his Grounds.

[A Monument of Deliverance.]

Then he writ under it, upon a Marble-Stone, these Verses following :

*This is the Head of him, whose Name only
In former Times did Pilgrims terrify.
His Castle's down, and Diffidence, his Wife,
Brave Master Great-heart has bereft of Life:
Despondency, his Daughter Much-afraid,
Great-heart for them also the Man has play'd.
Who bereof doubts, if he'll but cast his Eye
Up hither, may his Scruples satisfy.
This Head also, when doubting Cripples dance,
Doth shew from Fears they have Deliverance.*

When those Men had thus bravely shewed themselves against *Doubting-Castle*, and had slain Giant *Despair*, they went forward, and went on till they came to the

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

the *Delectable Mountains*, where *Christian* and *Hopeful* refreshed themselves with the Varieties of the Place. They also acquainted themselves with the Shepherds there, who welcomed them, as they had done *Christian* before, unto the *Delectable Mountains*.

Now the Shepherds seeing so great a Train follow Mr. *Great-heart*, (for with him they were well acquainted) they said unto him, Good Sir, you have got a goodly Company here; pray where did you find all these?

[The Guide's Speech to the Shepherds.]

*First, here is Christiana, and her Train,
Her Sons, and her Sons Wives, who, like the
Wain,*

*Keep by the Pole, and do my Compass steer,
From Sin to Grace, else they had not been here.:*

*Next here's old Honest come on Pilgrimage,
Ready-to-halt too, who, I dare engage,
True-bearded is, and so is Feeble-mind,
Who willing was not to be left behind.*

*Despondency, good Man, is coming after,
And so also is Much-afraid his Daughter.*

*May we have Entertainment here, or must
We farther go? Let's know whereon to trust?*

Then

*Though Doubting-Castle be demolished,
And the Giant Despair hath lost his Head,
Sin can rebuild the Castle, make't remain,
And make Despair the Giant live again.*

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.* 157

Then said the Shepherds, this is a com-
fortable Company; you are welcome to
us, for we have for the *Feeble*, as for the
Strong; our Prince has an Eye to what is
done to the least of these. Therefore In-
firmity must not be a Block to our Enter-
tainment. So they had them to the Palace-
Doors, and then said unto them, Come in
Mr. *Feeble-mind*, come in Mr. *Ready-to-halt*,
come in Mr. *Despondency*, and Mrs. *Much-
afraid*, his Daughter. These, Mr. *Great-
heart*, said the Shepherds to the Guide, we
call in by Name, for that they are most
subject to draw back; but as for you,
and the rest that are *strong*, we leave you
to your wonted Liberty. Then said Mr.
Great-heart, This Day I see that Grace
doth shine in your Faces, and that you are
my Lord's Shepherds indeed; for that you
have not pushed these Diseased neither
with Side nor Shoulder, but have rather
strewed their Way into the Palace with
Flowers as you should.

*Their Enter-
tainment.*

Mat. 25. 40.

*A Description
of false
Shepherds.*

Ezek. 34. 21.

So the *Feeble* and *Weak* went in, and
Mr. *Great-heart* and the rest did follow.
When they were also sat down, the Shep-
herds said to those of the weaker Sort,
What is it that you would have? For,
said they, all Things must be managed
here to the Supporting of the *Weak*, as
well as the Warning of the *Unruly*.

So they made them a Feast of Things
easy of Digestion, and that were pleasant
to the Palate, and nourishing: The which
when they had received, they went to
their Rest, each one respectively unto his
proper Place. When Morning was come,
because

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

because the Mountains were high, and the Day clear; and because it was the Custom of the Shepherds to shew the Pilgrims, before their Departure, some Rarities, therefore, after they were ready, and had refreshed themselves, the Shepherds took them out into the Fields, and shewed them first what they had shewed to *Christian* before.

Part I. p. 154 to 158.

Mount Marvel.

Then they had them to some new Places. The first was *Mount Marvel*, where they looked, and behold a Man at a Distance, *that tumbled the Hills about with Words*. Then they asked the Shepherds what that should mean? So they told them, That that Man was the Son of one Mr. *Great-grace*, of whom you read in the First Part of the Records of the *Pilgrim's Progress*. And he is set there to teach Pilgrims how to believe down, or to tumble out of their Ways, what Difficulties they should meet with, by Faith. Then said Mr. *Great-heart*, I know him, he is a Man above many.

Mark 11. 23, 24.

Mount Innocence.

Then they had them to another Place, called *Mount Innocence*; and there they saw a Man cloathed all in White; and two Men, *Prejudice* and *Ill-will*, continually casting Dirt upon him. Now behold the Dirt, whatsoever they cast at him, would in a little Time fall off again, and his Garment would look as clear as if no Dirt had been cast thereat.

Then said the Pilgrims, What means this? The Shepherds answered; This Man is named *Godly-Man*, and the Garment is to shew the Innocency of his Life. Now those that throw Dirt at him, are such as
hate

hate his *Well-doing*; but, as you see the Dirt will not stick upon his Cloaths, so it shall be with him that lives innocently in the World. Whoever they be that would make such Men dirty, they labour all in vain; for God, by that a little Time is spent, will cause that their *Innocence* shall break forth as the Light, and their *Righeousness* as the Noon-day.

Then they took them, and had them to *Mount Charity*, where they shewed them *Mount Charity* a Man that had a Bundle of Cloth lying *Mount Charity* before him, out of which he cuts Coats and Garments for the Poor that stood about him; yet his Bundle or Roll of Cloth, was never the less.

Then said they, What should this be? This is, said the Shepherds, to shew you, That he that has a Heart to give of his Labour to the Poor, shall never want where-withal. He that watereth, shall be watered himself. And the Cake that the Widow gave to the Prophet, did not cause that she had ever the Less in her Barrel.

They had them also to the Place, where *The Work of* they saw one *Fool*, and one *Want-wit*, *one Fool, and* washing of an *Ethiopian*, with an Intention *one Want-wit.* to make him white; but the more they washed him, the blacker he was. Then they asked the Shepherds, what that should mean? So they told them, saying, Thus it is with the vile Person; all Means used to get such a One a good Name, shall in Conclusion tend but to make him more abominable. Thus it was with the *Pharisees*, and so it shall be with all *Hypocrites*.

Part I. p. 156.

*Mercy has a
Mind to see
the Hole in the
Hill.*

Then said *Mercy*, the Wife of *Matthew*, to *Christiana* her Mother, I would, if it might be, see the Hole in the Hill; or that commonly called the *By-way* to Hell. So her Mother brake her Mind to the Shepherds. Then they went to the Door; it was on the Side of an Hill, and they opened it, and bid *Mercy* hearken a While. So she hearkened, and heard one saying, *Cursed be my Father for holding of my Feet back from the Way of Peace and Life*; and another said, *O that I had been torne in Pieces, before I had, to save my Life, lost my Soul*; and another said, *If I were to live again, how would I deny myself rather than come to this Place*. Then there was, as if the very Earth groaned and quaked under the Feet of this young Woman for Fear; so she looked white, and came trembling away, saying, *Blessed be he and she, that is delivered from this Place*.

*Mercy long-
eth, and for
what.*

Now when the Shepherds had shewn them all these Things, then they had them back to the Palace, and entertained them with what the House would afford: But *Mercy* being a young and breeding Woman, longed for something that she saw there, but was ashamed to ask. Her Mother-in-law then asked her what she ailed; for she looked as one not well. Then said *Mercy*, *There is a Looking-glass hangs up in the Dining-room, off which I cannot take my Mind; if therefore I have it not, I think I shall miscarry*. Then said her Mother, I will mention thy Wants to the Shepherds, and they will not deny it thee. But she said, I am ashamed that these Men

Men should know that I longed. Nay, my Daughter, said she, it is no Shame, but a Virtue, to long for such a Thing as that; so *Mercy* said, then Mother; if you please, ask the Shepherds, if they are willing to sell it.

Now the Glas was one of a Thousand. *It was the* It would present a Man, one Way with *Word of God.* his own Features exactly; and turn it but another Way, and it would shew one the very Face and Similitude of the Prince of Pilgrims himself. Yes, I have talked with them that can tell, and they have said, That they have seen the very Crown of Thorns upon his Head, by looking in that Glas; they have therein also seen the Holes in his Hands, in his Feet, and his Side. Yea, such an Excellency is there in that Glas, that it will shew him to one, where they have a Mind to see him; whether Living or Dead, whether in Earth or in Heaven; whether in a State of Humiliation, or in his Exaltation; whether coming to Suffer, or coming to Reign.

James 1. 33.

1 Cor. 13. 12.

2 Cor. 3. 18.

Christiana therefore went to the Shepherds apart, (Now the Names of the Shepherds were *Knowledge, Experience, Watchful, and Sincere.* *Part I. p. 153.*) and said unto them, there is one of my Daughters a Breeding Woman; that, I think; doth long for something that she hath seen in this House, and she thinks she shall miscarry, if she should by you be denied.

Experience. Call her, call her, she shall assuredly have what we can help her to. So they called her, and said to her, *Mercy,* What is that Thing thou wouldst have?

She doth not lose her Longing.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Then she blushed and said, The great Glafs that hangs up in the Dining-Room: So *Sincere* ran and fetched it, and, with a joyful Consent, it was given her. Then she bowed her Head, and gave Thanks, and said, By this I know that I have obtained Favour in your Eyes.

They also gave to the other young Women such Things as they desired, and to their Husbands great Commendations, for that they joined with Mr. *Great-heart*, to the slaying of Giant *Despair*, and the demolishing of *Doubting-Castle*.

*How the
Shepherds
adorned the
Pilgrims.*

About *Christiana's* Neck the Shepherds put a Bracelet, and so they did about the Necks of her four Daughters; also they put Ear-rings in their Ears, and Jewels on their Foreheads.

*Part I. page
157.*

When they were minded to go hence, they let them go in Peace, but gave not to them those certain Cautions which before were given to *Christian* and his Companion. The Reason was, for that these had *Great-heart* to be their Guide, who was one that was well acquainted with Things, and so could give them their Cautions more seasonable; to wit, even then when the Danger was nigh the Approaching.

*Part I. page
157.*

What Cautions *Christian* and his Companion had received of the Shepherds, they had also lost by that the Time was come that they had need to put them in Practice. Wherefore, here was the Advantage that this Company had over the other.

From

PART II. The Pilgrims' Progress.

163

From hence they went on Singing, and they said,

Behold, how fishy are the Stables set!

*For their Relief that Pilgrims are become,
And how they us receive without one Let,*

*That make the other Life the Mark and
Home.*

*What Novelties they have, to us they give,
That we, tho' Pilgrims, joyful Lives may live.
They do upon us too, such Things bestow,
That shew we Pilgrims are, where'er we
go.*

When they were gone from the Shepherds, they quickly came to the Place where *Christian* met with one *Turn-away*, that dwelt in the Town of *Apostasy*. Wherefore of him *Mr. Great-heart*, their *Part I. p. 160.* Guide, did now put them in Mind, saying, This is the Place where *Christian* met with one *Turn-away*, who carried with him the Character of his Rebellion at his Back. And this I have to say concerning this Man, he would hearken to no Counsel, but once a falling, Persuasion could not stop him.

When he came to the Place where the Cross and Sepulchre was, he did meet with one that did bid him *look there*, but he gnashed with his Teeth, and stamped, and said, He was resolved to go back to his own Town. Before he came to the Gate, he met with *Evangelist*, who offered to lay Hands on him, to turn him into

the Way again. But this *Turn-away* resisted him, and having done much Despite unto him, he got away over the Wall, and so escaped his Hand.

Then they went on, and just at the Place where *Little-faith* formerly was robbed, there stood a Man with his Sword drawn, and his Face all bloody. Then said Mr. *Great-heart*, What art thou? The Man made Answer, saying, I am one whose Name is *Valiant-for-truth*. I am a Pilgrim, and am going to the Celestial City. Now, as I was in my Way, there were three Men that did beset me, and propounded unto me these three Things: 1. Whether I would become one of them? 2. Or go back from whence I came? 3. Or die upon the Place: To the first I answer'd, I had been a true Man a long Season, and therefore it could not be expected that I now should cast in my Lot with Thieves. Then they demanded what I would say to the second. So I told them the Place from whence I came, had I not found Incommodity there, I had not forsaken it at all; but finding it altogether unsuitable to me, and very unprofitable for me, I forsook it for this Way. Then they asked me what I said to the third. And I told them, my Life cost more dear far than that I should lightly give it away. Besides, you have nothing to do thus to put Things to my Choice; wherefore at your Peril be it, if you meddle. Then these three, to wit, *Wild-lead*, *Inconsiderate*, and *Pragmatick*, drew

One Valiant-for-truth beset with Thieves.

Prov. 1. 10.
11, 13, 14.

drew upon me, and I also drew upon them.

So we fell to it, One against Three, for the Space of three Hours. They have left upon me, as you see, some of the Marks of their Valour, and have also carried away with them some of mine. They are but just now gone: I suppose they might, as the Saying is, hear your Horse dash, and so they betook themselves to Flight.

Great-heart. But here was great Odds, Three against One.

Valiant. 'Tis true; but Little or More are nothing to him that has the TRUTH on his Side: *Though an Host should encamp against me,* said one, *my Heart shall not fear: Though War shall rise against me, in this will I be confident,* &c. Besides, said he, I have read in some Records, that one Man has fought an Army: And how many did *Sampson* slay with the Jaw-bone of an Ass?

Great-heart. Then said the Guide, Why did you not cry-out, that some might have come in for your Succour.

Valiant. So I did to my King, who I knew could hear me, and afford invisible Help, and that was enough for me.

Great-heart. Then said *Great-heart* to Mr. *Valiant-for-truth*, Thou hast worthily behaved thyself; let me see thy Sword; so he shewed it him.

When he had taken it in his Hand, and looked thereon a While, he said, Ha! It is a right *Jerusalem* Blade,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Valiant. It is so. Let a Man have one of these Blades, with a Hand to wield it, and Skill to use it, and he may venture upon an Angel with it. He need not fear its holding, if he can but tell how to lay on. Its Edge will never blunt. It will cut Flesh and Bones, and Soul and Spirit and all.

Great-heart. But you fought a great While, I wonder you was not weary.

Valiant. I fought till my Sword did cleave to my Hand, and then they were joined together, as if a Sword grew out of my Arm; and when the Blood run through my Fingers, then I fought with most Courage.

Great-heart. Thou hast done well, thou hast resisted unto Blood, striving against Sin; thou shalt abide by us, come in, and go out with us, for we are thy Companions.

Then they took him and washed his Wounds, and gave him of what they had to refresh him; and so they went together. Now as they went on, because Mr. *Great-heart* was delighted in him (for he loved one greatly, that he found to be a Man of his Hands) and because there were in Company them that were feeble and weak: Therefore he question'd with him about many Things; As first, What Country Man he was?

Valiant. I am of *Dark-Land*, for there I was born, and there my Father and Mother are still.

Great-heart. *Dark-Land*, faith the Guide, Doth not that lie on the same Coast with the City of *Destruction*.

Valiant,

Valiant. Yes, it doth. Now that which caused me to come on Pilgrimage, was this; we had Mr. *Tell-true* came in our Parts, and he told it about what *Christian* had done, that went from the City of *Destruction*. Namely, how he had forsaken his Wife and Children, and had betaken himself to a Pilgrim's Life. It was also confidently reported, How he had killed a Serpent, that did come out to resist him in his Journey; and how he got through to whither he intended. It was also told, what Welcome he had to all his Lord's Lodgings, especially when he came to the Gates of the Cœlestial City: For there, said the Man, he was received with Sound of Trumpet, by a Company of Shining Ones. He told it also, How all the Bells in the City did ring for Joy at his Reception, and what Golden Garments he was cloathed with; with many other Things that now I shall forbear to relate. In a Word, That Man so told the Story of *Christian* and his Travels, that my Heart fell into a burning Heat, to be gone after him; nor could Father or Mother stay me! So I got from them, and am come thus far on my Way.

Great-heart. You came in at the Gate, did you not?

Valiant. Yes, yes, for the same Man also told us, that all would be nothing, if we did not begin to enter this Way at the Gate?

Great-heart. Look you, said the Guide to *Christiana*, the Pilgrimage of your Husband

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

band, and what he has gotten thereby, is spread abroad far and near.

Valiant. Why, is this *Christian's Wife*?

Great-heart. Yes, that it is; and these are also his Four Sons.

Valiant. What! and going on Pilgrimage too?

Great-heart. Yes, verily, they are following after.

Valiant. It glads me at Heart! good Man. How joyful will he be, when he shall see them that would not go with him, to enter before him, in at the Gates into the Cœlestial City?

Great-heart. Without Doubt it will be a Comfort to him; for, next to the Joy of seeing himself there, it will be a Joy to meet there his Wife and Children.

Valiant. But now you are upon that, pray let me hear your Opinion about it. Some make a Question, Whether we shall know one another when we are there?

Great-heart. Do they think they shall know themselves then, or that they shall rejoice to see themselves in that Bliss, and if they think they shall know and do these, why not know others, and rejoice in their Welfare also?

Again, Since Relations are our second self, though that State will be dissolved, yet why may it not be rationally concluded, that we shall be more glad to see them there, than to see they are wanting?

Valiant. Well, I perceive whereabouts you are to this. Have you any more Things to ask me about my beginning to come on Pilgrimage?

Great-

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

169

Great-heart. Yes; Was your Father and Mother willing that you should become a Pilgrim?

Valiant. Oh! no, they used all Means imaginable to persuade me to stay at Home.

Great-heart. What could they say against it?

Valiant. They said, it was an idle Life; and if I myself were not inclined to Sloth and Laziness, I would never Countenance a Pilgrim's Condition.

Great-heart. And what did they say else?

Valiant. Why, they told me that it was a dangerous Way, yea, the most dangerous Way in the World, said they, is that which the Pilgrims go.

Great-heart. Did they shew you wherein this Way is dangerous?

Valiant. Yes; and that in many Particulars.

Great-heart. Name some of them.

Valiant. They told me of the *Slough of Despond*, where *Christian* was well-nigh smothered. They told me, That there were Archers standing ready in *Beelzebub-Castle*, to shoot them who should knock at the *Wicket-Gate* for Entrance. They told me also of the Wood and dark Mountments, of the *Hill Difficulty*; of the *Lions*, and also of the three Giants, *Bloody-man*, *Maul*, and *Slay-good*: They said moreover, that there was a foul Fiend haunted the *Valley of Humiliation*; and that *Christian* was by them almost bereft of Life. Besides, said they, you must go
over

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

over the *Valley of the Shadow of Death*, where the *Hobgoblins* are, where the Light is Darknes, where the Way is full of Snares, Pits, Traps, and Gins. They told me of Giant *Despair*, of *Doubling-Castle*, and of the Ruin that the Pilgrims met with there. Farther, they said, I must go over the Enchanted Ground, which was dangerous. And that, after all this, I should find a River, over which I should find no Bridge; and that that River did lie betwixt me and the Coelestial Country.

Great-beart. And was this all?

Valiant. No: They also told me, that this Way was full of Deceivers, and of Persons that lay in Wait there to turn good Men out of their Path.

Great-beart. But how did they make that out?

Valiant. They told me, that Mr. *World-by-wise-man* did lie there in wait to deceive. They also said, that there was *Formality* and *Hypocrisy* continually on the Road. They said also, that *By-Ends*, *Talkative*, or *Demas*, would go near to gather me up: That the *Flatterer* would catch me in his Net; or that, with *Green-beaded Ignorance*, I would presume to go on to the Gate, from whence he was sent back to the Hole that was in the Side of the Hill, and made to go the By-way to Hell.

Great-beart. I promise you, This was enough to discourage thee; but did they make an End here?

Valiant.

Valiant. No, stay. They told me also of many that tried that Way of Old, and that had gone a great Way therein, to see if they could find something of the Glory then, that so many had so much talked of from Time to Time; and how they came back again, and befooled themselves for setting a Foot out of Doors in that Path, to the Satisfaction of the Country. And they named several that did so, as *Obstinate* and *Pliable*, *Mistrust* and *Timorous*, *Turn-away* and *Old Atheist*, with several more; who, they said, had some of them gone far to see what they could find, but not one of them found so much Advantage by going, as amounted to the Weight of a Feather.

Great-heart. Said they, any Thing more to discourage you?

Valiant. Yes, they told me of one Mr. *Fearing*, who was a Pilgrim; and how he found his Way so solitary, that he never had a comfortable Hour therein: Also that Mr. *Despondency* had like to have been starved therein; Yea, and also (which I had almost forgot) *Christian* himself, about whom there has been such a Noise, after all his Ventures for a Cœlestial Crown, was certainly drowned in the *Black River*, and never went a Foot farther, however it was smother'd up.

Great-heart. And did none of these Things discourage you?

Valiant. No, they seem'd as so many Nothings to me.

Great-heart. How came that about?

Valiant.

How he got o-
ver these stum-
bling Blocks.

Valiant. Why I still believed what Mr. *Tell-true* had said, and that carried me beyond them all.

Great-heart. Then this was your Victory, even your Faith?

Valiant. It was so, I believed, and therefore came out, got into the Way, fought all that set themselves against me, and by believing, am come to this Place :

Who would true Valour see,

Let him come hither ;

One here will constant be,

Come Wind, come Weather :

There's no Discouragement

Shall make him once relent,

His first avow'd Intent,

To be a Pilgrim.

Who so beset him round

With dismal Stories,

Do but themselves confound,

His Strength the more is.

No Lion can him fright ;

Hell with a Giant fight,

But he will have a Right

To be a Pilgrim.

Hobgoblin, nor foul Fiend

Can daunt his Spirit;

He knows, he at the End

Shall Life inherit.

Then Fancies fly away,

He'll not fear what Men say,

He'll labour Night and Day

To be a Pilgrim.

By this Time they were got to the *Inchanted Ground*, where the Air naturally tended to make one Drowzy: And that *Part I. p. 275.* Place was all grown over with Briars and Thorns, excepting here and there; where was an *Inchanted Arbour*, upon which if a Man sits, or in which if a Man sleeps, 'tis a Question, say some, Whether ever he shall Rise or Wake again in this World? Over this Forest therefore they went, both one and another, and Mr. *Great-heart* went before, for that he was the Guide, and Mr. *Valiant-for-truth*, he came behind, being Rear-Guard, for fear, least peradventure some *Fiend*, or *Dragon*, or *Giant*, or *Thief* should fall upon their Rear, and so do Mischief. They went on here, each Man with his Sword drawn in his Hand, for they knew it was a dangerous Place. Also they cheered up one another, as well as they could; *Feeble-mind*, Mr. *Great-heart* commanded should come up after him, and Mr. *Dependency* was under the Eye of Mr. *Valiant*.

Now

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Now they had not gone far, but a great Mist and Darkness fell upon them all; so that they could scarce, for a great While, one see the other. Wherefore they were forced for some Time, to feel for one another, by Words; for they walked not by Sight.

But any one must think, that here was but sorry going for the best of them all; but how much worse for the Women and Children, who both of *Feet* and *Heart* were but tender. Yet so it was, that through the encouraging Words of him that led in the Front, and of him that brought them up behind, they made a pretty good Shift to wag along.

The Way was also here very wearisome through Dirt and Slabbiness. Nor was there on all this Ground, so much as one *Inn*, or *Viualling-house*, wherein to refresh the Feebler Sort. Here therefore was *Grunting*, and *Puffing*, and *Sigbing*: While one tumbled over a Bush, another sticks fast in the Dirt; and the Children, some of them, lost their Shoes in the Mire: While one cries out, I am down; and another, Ho, where are you? And a third, The Bushes have got such fast hold on me, I think I cannot get away from them.

Then they came at an *Arbour*, warm, and promising much Refreshing to the Pilgrims: For it was finely wrought above-head, beautify'd with *Greens*, furnish'd with *Benches* and *Settles*. It had in it a soft Couch, where the weary might lean. This, you must think, all Things consider'd

*An Arbour on
the Inchan-
ted
Ground.*

der'd, was tempting; for the Pilgrims already began to be foiled with the Badness of the Way; but there was not one of them that made so much as a Motion to stop there. Yea, for ought I could perceive, they continually gave so good Heed to the Advice of their Guide, and he did so faithfully tell them of Dangers, and of the Nature of Dangers which they were at them, that usually when they were nearest to them, they did most pluck up their Spirits, and hearten one another to deny the Flesh. This *Arbour* was call'd, *The Slothful's Friend*, on purpose to allure, if it might be, some of the Pilgrims there, to take up their Rest, when weary.

I saw then in my Dream, that they went on in this their solitary Ground, till they came to a Place at which a Man is apt to lose his Way. Now, tho' when it was Light, their Guide could well enough tell how to miss those Ways that lead wrong, yet in the Dark he was put to a Stand: But he had in his Pocket a Map of all Ways leading to or from the *Cœlestial City*; wherefore he struck a Light, (for he never goes also without his Tinder-Box) and takes a View of his Book or Map, which bids him be careful in that Place, to turn to the Right-hand. And had he not here been careful to look in his Map, they had in all Probability been smother'd in the Mud; for just a little before them, and that at the End of the cleanest Way too, was a Pit, none knows how deep, full of nothing but

D d Mud,

The Way is difficult to find. The Guide has a Map of all Ways leading to or from the City.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Mud, there made on purpose to destroy the Pilgrims in.

God's Book.

Then thought I with myself, who that goeth on *Pilgrimage*, but would have one of these Maps about him, that he may look when he is at a *Stand*, which is the Way he must take.

An Arbour, and two asleep therein.

They went on then in this *Inhabited Ground*, till they came to where there was another *Arbour*, and it was built by the Highway-Side. And in that *Arbour* there lay two Men, whose Names were *Heedless* and *Too-Bold*. These Two went thus far on *Pilgrimage*; but here, being wearied with their Journey, sat down to rest themselves, and so fell fast asleep. When the Pilgrims saw them, they stood still, and shook their Heads; for they knew that the Sleepers were in a pitiful Case. Then they consulted what to do, whether to go on, and leave them in their Sleep, or step to them, and try to wake them. So they concluded to go to them, and awake them; that is, if they could; but with this Caution, namely to take Heed that themselves did not sit down nor embrace the offered Benefit of that *Arbour*.

The Pilgrims try to wake them.

So they went in, and spake to the Men, and called each by his Name, (for the Guide it seems did know them) but there was no Voice, nor Answer. Then the Guide did shake them, and do what he could to disturb them. Then said one of them, *I will pay you when I take my Money*. At which the Guide shook his Head.

I will

I will fight so long as I can hold my Sword in my Hand, said the other. At that, one of the Children laughed.

Then said *Christiana*, What is the Meaning of this? The Guide said, They talk in their Sleep; if you strike them, beat them, or whatever else you do to them, they will answer you after this Fashion; or as one of them said in old Time, when the Waves of the Sea did beat upon him, and he slept as one upon the Mast of a Ship: When I awake, I will seek it again. You know, when Men talk in their Sleep, they say any Thing, but their Words are not governed either by Faith or Reason. There is an Incoherency in their Words now, as there was before betwixt their going on Pilgrimage, and sitting down here. This then is the Mischief on't, when heedless Ones go on Pilgrimage. Twenty to One but they are served thus. For this *Inchanted Ground* is one of the last Refuges that the Enemy to Pilgrims has; wherefore it is, as you see, placed almost at the End of the Way, and so it standeth against us with the more Advantage. For when, thinks the Enemy, will these Fools be so desirous to sit down, as when they are weary? And when so like to be weary, as when almost at their Journey's End? Therefore it is, I say, that the *Inchanted Ground* is placed so nigh to the Land *Beulah*, and so near the End of their Race. Wherefore, let Pilgrims look to themselves, lest it happen to them, as it has done to these, that, as you see, are fallen asleep, and none can awake them.

*The Light of
the World.*
2 Pet. 1. 19.

Then the Pilgrims desired with Trembling to go forward; only they prayed their Guide to strike a Light, that they might go the rest of their Way by the Help of the Light of a Lanthorn. So he struck a Light, and they went by the Help of that through the rest of this Way, tho' the Darknes was very great.

*The Children
cry for Weariness.*

But the Children began to be sorely weary, and they cried out unto him that loveth Pilgrims, to make their Way more comfortable. So by that they had gone a little farther, a Wind arose, that drove away the Fog, so the Air became more clear.

Yet they were not off (by much) of the *Inchanted Ground*, only now they could see one another better, and the Way wherein they should walk.

Now, when they were almost at the End of this Ground, they perceived that a little before them was a solemn Noise, of one that was much concerned. So they went on, and looked before them: And behold they saw, as they thought, a Man upon his Knees, with Hands and Eyes lift up, and speaking, as they thought, earnestly to one that was above; they drew nigh, but could not tell what he said; so they went softly till he had done. When he had done, he got up, and began to run towards the *Cœlestial City*. Then Mr. *Great-heart* called after him, saying, Soho, Friend, let us have your Company, if you go, as I suppose you do, to the *Cœlestial City*. So the Man stopped, and they came up to him.

*Standfast upon
his Knees on
the Inchanted
Ground.*

But

PART II. *The Pilgrim's Progress.*

179

But so soon as Mr. *Honest* saw him, he said, I know this Man. Then said Mr. *Valiant-for-Truth*, Prithee, who is it? 'Tis one, said he, that comes from whereabouts I dwell, his Name is *Standfast*; he is certainly a right good Pilgrim.

The Story of Standfast.

So they came up to one another, and presently *Standfast* said to old *Honest*, Ho! Father *Honest*, are you there? Ay, said he, that I am, as sure as you are there. Right glad am I, said Mr. *Standfast*, that I have found you on this Road. And as glad am I, said the other, that I espied you upon your Knees. Then Mr. *Standfast* blushed, and said; But why, did you see me? Yes, that I did, quoth the other, and with my Heart was glad at the Sight. Why, what did you think, said *Standfast*? Think, said old *Honest*, What should I think? I thought we had an honest Man upon the Road, therefore should have his Company by and by. If you thought not amiss, how happy am I? But if I be not as I should, 'tis I alone must bear it. That is true, said the other; but your Fear doth farther confirm me, That Things are right betwixt the Prince of Pilgrims and your Soul: For saith he, *Blessed is the Man that feareth always.*

Talk betwixt him and Mr. Honest.

Valiant. Well, but Brother, I pray thee tell us, What was it that was the Cause of thy being upon thy Knees even now? Was it for some Obligations laid by special Mercies upon thee, or how?

They found him at Prayer.

Standfast. Why, we are, as you see, upon the *Inchanted Ground*; and as I was

*What it was
that fetch'd
him upon his
Knees.*

coming along. I was musing with myself of what a dangerous Nature the Road in this Place was, and how many that had come even thus far on Pilgrimage, had here been stopt, and been destroy'd. I thought also of the Manner of Death, with which this Place destroyeth Men. Those that die here, die of no violent Distemper: The Death which such die, is not grievous to them. For he that goeth away in a Sleep, begins that Journey with Desire and Pleasure. Yea, such acquiesce in the Will of that Disease.

Hon. Then Mr. *Honest* interrupting of him, said, Did you see the Two Men asleep in the Arbour?

Prov. 10. 7.

Standfast. Ay, ay, I saw *Heedless* and *Too-bold* there; and for ought I know, there they will lie till they rot: But let me go on with my Tale: As I was thus musing, as I said, there was one in very pleasant Attire, but Old, who presented herself unto me, and offered me Three Things, to wit, Her Body, her Purse, and her Bed. Now the Truth is, I was both weary and sleepy: I am also as poor as a *Howlet*, and that perhaps the *Witch* knew. Well, I repulsed her once and twice, but she put by my Repulses, and smiled. Then I began to be angry, but she mattered that nothing at all. Then she made Offers again, and said, If I would be ruled by her, she would make me Great and Happy. For, said she, I am the Mistress of the World, and Men are made happy by me. Then I asked her Name, and she told me it was Madam *Bubble*. This
set

*Madam Bubble:
Or this
Queen World.*

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

181

set me farther from her; but she still followed me with Inticements. Then I betook me, as you see, to my Knees, and with Hands lifted up, and Cries, I prayed to him that had said he would help. So just as you came up, the Gentlewoman went her Way. Then I continued to give Thanks for this great Deliverance; for I verily believe she intended no Good, but rather sought to make a Stop of me in my Journey.

Hon. Without doubt her Designs were bad. But stay, now you talk of her me-thinks I either have seen her, or have read some Story of her.

Standfast. Perhaps you have done both.

Hon. Madam *Bubble!* is she not a tall, comely Dame, something of a swarthy Complexion?

Standfast. Right, you hit it, she is just such an one.

Hon. Doth she not speak very smoothly, and give you a Smile at the End of every Sentence?

Standfast. You fall right upon it again, for these are her very Actions.

Hon. Doth she not wear a great Purse by her Side, and is not her Hand often in it, fingering her Money, as if that was her Heart's Delight?

Standfast. 'Tis just so; had she stood by all this While, you could not more amply have set her forth before me, and have better described her Features.

Hon. Then he that drew her Picture was a good Limner, and he that wrote of her said true.

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Great-beart. This Woman is a *Witch*, and it is by virtue of her Sorceries, that
The World. this Ground is enchanted: Whoever doth lay their Head down in her Lap, had as good lay it down upon that Block over which the Axe doth hang; and whoever lays their Eyes upon her Beauty, are counted the Enemies of God. This is she that maintaineth in their Splendor, all those that are the Enemies of Pilgrims.

Jam. 4. 4. Yea, this is she that hath brought off
1 John 2. 15. many a Man from a Pilgrim's Life. She is a great Gossipper; she is always, both she and her Daughters, at one Pilgrim's Heels or another, now commending, and then preferring the Excellencies of this Life. She is a bold and impudent Slut; she will talk with any Man. She always laugheth poor Pilgrims to Scorn, but highly commends the Rich. If there be one cunning to get Money in a Place, she will speak well of him from House to House; she loveth Banqueting and Feasting mainly well: She is always at one full Table or another. She has given it out at some Places, That she is a Goddess, and therefore some do worship her. She has her Time, and open Places of Cheating; and she will say, and avow it, That none can shew a Good comparable to hers. She promiseth to dwell with Childrens Children, if they would but love and make much of her. She will cast out of her Purse Gold, like Dust, in some Places, and to some Persons. She loves to be sought after, spoken well of, and to lie in the Bosoms of Men. She
 is

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

183

is never weary of commending her Commodities, and she loves them most that think best of her. She will promise Crowns and Kingdoms, if they will but take her Advice; yet many hath she brought to the Halter, and Ten Thousand Times more to Hell.

Standfast. Oh! said *Standfast*, What a Mercy it is that I did resist her; for whither might she have drawn me?

Great-heart. Whither! nay, none but God knows. But in general, to be sure she would have drawn thee into *many foolish and burlful Lusts, which drown Men in Destruction and Perdition.* 1 Tim. 6. 9.

It was she that set *Absalom* against his Father, and *Jeroboam* against his Master. It was she that persuaded *Judas* to sell his Lord; and that prevailed with *Demas* to forsake the Godly Pilgrim's Life; none can tell of the Mischief that she doth. She makes Variance betwixt Rulers and Subjects, betwixt Parents and Children, betwixt Neighbour and Neighbour, betwixt a Man and his Wife, between a Man and himself, betwixt Flesh and the Spirit.

Wherefore, good Master *Standfast*, be as your Name is, and when you have done all, *Stand*.

At this Discourse there was, among the Pilgrims, a Mixture of Joy and Trembling; but at length they brake out and sang:

What

What Danger is the Pilgrim in?

How many are his Foes?

How many Ways there are to Sin,

No living Mortal knows.

Some in the Ditch spoil'd are, yea can

Lie tumbling on the Mire.

Some, though they shun the Frying-Pan,

To leap into the Fire.

Part I. page
200.

After this, I beheld until they were come unto the Land of *Beulah*, where the Sun shineth Night and Day. Here, because they were weary, they betook themselves a while to Rest. And because this Country was common for Pilgrims, and because the Orchards and Vineyards that were here, belonged to the King of the Coelestial Country, therefore they were licensed to make bold with any of his Things. But a little while soon refreshed them here; for the Bells did so ring, and the Trumpets continually sounded so melodiously, that they could not sleep, and yet they received as much Refreshing, as if they slept their Sleep never so soundly. Here also all the Noise of them that walked in the Streets, was, *More Pilgrims are come to Town*. And another would answer, saying, And so many went over the Water, and were let in at the Golden Gates To-day. They would cry again, There is now a Legion of Shining Ones just come to Town: By which, we know,

PART II. The Pilgrims's Progress.

185

know, that there are more Pilgrims upon the Road; for here they come to wait for them, and comfort them after their Sorrow. Then the Pilgrims got up, and walked to and fro: But how were their Eyes now filled with Coelestial Visions? In this Land they *heard* nothing, *saw* nothing, *felt* nothing, *smelt* nothing, *tasted* nothing, that was *offensive* to their *Stomach* or *Mind*; only when they tasted of the Water of the River, over which they were to go, they thought that tasted a little *Bitterish* to the *Palate*; but it proved *sweet* when it was down.

Death bitter to the Flesh, but sweet to the Soul.

In this Place there was a Record kept of the Names of them that had been Pilgrims of Old, and a History of all the famous Acts that they had done. It was here also much discoursed, How the River to some has its *Flowings*, and what *Ebbings* it has had while others have gone over. It has been in a Manner dry for some, while it has *overflowed* its Banks for others.

Death hath its Ebbings and Flowings like the Tide.

In this Place, the Children of the Town would go into the King's Gardens, and gather Nolegays for the Pilgrims, and bring them to them with Affection. Here also grew *Campfire*, and *Spikenard*, *Saffron*, *Calamus*, and *Cinnamon*, with all its Trees of *Frankincense*, *Myrrh*, and *Aloes*, with all chief *Spices*. With these the Pilgrims Chambers were perfumed while they staid here; and with these were their Bodies anointed, to prepare them to go over the River, when the Time appointed was come.

Now

*A Messenger
of Death sent
to Christiana.*

His Message.

*How welcome
Death is to
those that are
willing to
die?*

*Her Speech to
her Guide.*

Now while they lay here, and waited for the good Hour, there was a Noise in the Town, that there was a Post come from the Cœlestial City, with Matters of great Importance to one *Christiana*, the Wife of *Christian* the Pilgrim. So Enquiry was made for her, and the House was found out where she was, so the Post presented her with a Letter: The Contents were, *Hail good Woman! I bring thee Tidings, That the Master calleth for thee, and expecteth that thou shouldest stand in his Presence, in Cloaths of Immortality, within these Ten Days.*

When he had read this Letter to her, he gave her therewith a true Token that he was a true Messenger, and was come to bid her make Haste to be gone. The Token was, *An Arrow sharpened with Love, let easily into her Heart, which, by Degrees, wrought so effectually with her, that at the Time appointed she must be gone.*

When *Christiana* saw that her Time was come, and that she was the first of this Company that was to go over, she called for Mr. *Great-heart* her Guide, and told him how Matters were. So he told her, he was heartily glad of the News, and could have been glad, had the Post come for him. Then she bid that he should give Advice how all Things should be prepared for her Journey.

So he told her, saying, Thus and thus it must be, and we that survive, will accompany you to the River Side.

Then she called for her Children, and gave them her Blessing, and told them, that

that she had read with Comfort, the Mark ^{To her Children.} that was set in their Foreheads, and was glad to see them with her there, and that they had kept their Garments so white. Lastly, she bequeathed to the Poor that Little she had, and commanded her Sons and Daughters to be ready against the Messenger should come for them.

When she had spoken these Words to her Guide, and to her Children, she called for Mr. *Valiant-for-Truth*, and said unto him, Sir, you have in all Places shewed yourself True-Hearted; be *Faithful unto* ^{To Mr. Va-} *Death*, and my King will give you a *Crown* ^{liant.} *of Glory*. I would also intreat you to have an Eye to my Children; and if at any Time you see them faint, speak comfortably to them. For my Daughters, my Sons Wives, they have been faithful, and a Fulfilling of the Promise upon them will ^{To Mr.} be their End. But she gave Mr. *Standfast* ^{Standfast.} a Ring.

Then she called for old Mr. *Honest*, and ^{To Mr. Ho-} said of him, *Behold an Israelite indeed, in* ^{nest.} *whom is no Guile*. Then said he, I wish you a fair Day, when you set out for Mount *Sion*, and shall be glad to see that you go over the River dry-shod. But she answered, Come *wet*, come *dry*, I long to be gone; for however the Weather is in my Journey, I shall have Time enough when I come there, to sit down and rest me, and dry me.

Then came in that good Man Mr. ^{To Mr. Ready-} *Ready-to-halt*, to see her. So she said to ^{to-halt.} him, Thy Travel hitherto has been with Difficulty; but that will make thy Rest the

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

the sweeter. But watch and be ready; for at an Hour when you think not, the Messenger may come.

To Mr. Despondency, and his Daughter.

After him came Mr. *Despondency*, and his Daughter *Much-afraid*; to whom she said, You ought with Thankfulness, for ever, to remember your Deliverance from the Hand of Giant *Despair*, and out of *Doubting-Castle*. The Effect of that Mercy is, that you are brought with Safety hither. Be yet watchful, and cast away Fear; be sober, and hope to the End.

To Mr. Feeble-mind.

Then she said to Mr. *Feeble-mind*, Thou wast delivered from the Mouth of Giant *Slay-good*, that thou mightest live in the Light of the Living for ever, and see the King with Comfort: Only I advise thee to repent thee of thy Aptness to Fear and Doubt of his Goodness, before he sends for thee; lest thou shouldest, when he comes, be forced to stand before him for that Fault with Blushing.

Her last Day, and Manner of Departure.

Now the Day drew on, that *Christiana* must be gone. So the Road was full of People, to see her take her Journey. But behold, all the Banks beyond the River were full of Horses and Chariots, which were come down from above, to accompany her to the City Gate. So she came forth, and entered the *River*, with a *Beckon* of Farewel, to those that followed her to the *River-side*. The last Words that she was heard to say, were, *I come, Lord, to be with thee, and bless thee.*

So her Children and Friends returned to their Place, for that those that waited for *Christiana* had carried her out of their Sight.

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

189

Sight. So she went and called, and entered in at the Gate with all the Ceremonies of Joy, that her Husband *Christian* had entered with before her.

At her Departure the Children wept. But Mr. *Great-heart* and Mr. *Valiant* play'd upon the well-tuned Cymbal and Harp for Joy. So all departed to their respective Places.

In Process of Time, there came a Post to the Town again, and his Business was with Mr. *Ready-to-halt*. So he enquired him out, and said, I am come to thee in the Name of him whom thou hast loved and followed, tho' upon *Crutches*: And my Message is to tell thee, that he expects thee at this Table to Sup with him in his Kingdom, the next Day after *Easter*: Wherefore prepare thyself for thy Journey.

Mr. Ready-to-halt summoned.

Then he also gave him a Token that he was a true Messenger, saying, *I have broken the Golden Bowl, and loosed the Silver Cord.*

After this, Mr. *Ready-to-halt* called for his Fellow Pilgrims, and told them, saying, I am sent for, and God shall surely visit you also. So he desired Mr. *Valiant* to make his Will. And because he had nothing to bequeathe to them that should survive him, but his *Crutches*, and his *Good Wishes*, therefore thus he said: *These Crutches I bequeath to my Son, that shall tread in my Steps, with an hundred warm Wishes that he may prove better than I have been.*

Then

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

Then he thanked Mr. *Great-Heart* for his Conduct and Kindness, and so addressed himself to his Journey. When he came to the Brink of the River, he said, Now I shall have no more Need of these *Crutches*, since yonder are Chariots and Horses for me to ride on: The last Words he was heard to say, was, *Welcome Life*. So he went his Way.

After this, Mr. *Feeble-mind* had Tidings brought him, that the Post sounded his Horn at his Chamber-Door. Then he came in, and told him, saying, I am come to tell thee that thy Master hath need of thee; and that in a very little Time thou must behold his Face in Brightness. And take this as a Token of the Truth of my Message: *Those that look out at the Windows, shall be darkend.*

He makes no Will.

Then Mr. *Feeble-mind* called for his Friends, and told them what Errand had been brought unto him, and what Token he had received of the Truth of the Message. Then he said, Since I have nothing to bequeathe to any, to what purpose should I make a Will? As for my *Feeble Mind*, that I will leave behind, for that I have no Need of it in the Place whither I go; nor is it worth bestowing upon the poorest Pilgrims: Wherefore, when I am gone, I desire, that you, Mr. *Valiant*, would bury it in a Dunghil. This done, and the Day being come in which he was to depart, he enter'd the River as the rest: His last Words were, *Hold out, Faith and Patience.*

PART II. The Pilgrim's Progress.

191

Patience. So he went over to the other His last Words. Side.

When Days had many of them passed away, Mr. *Despondency* was sent for; for a Post was come, and brought this Message to him; *Trembling Man, these are to sum-* Mr. Despondency's Summary. *mon thee to be ready with the King by the next Lord's Day, to shout for Joy, for the Deliverance from all thy Doubtings.*

And, said the Messenger, that my Message is true, take this for a Proof: So he gave him a Grasshopper to be a Burden upon him. Now Mr. *Despondency's* Daughter, Eccles. 12. 5. His Daughter goes too. whose Name was *Much-afraid*, said, when she heard what was done, that she would go with her Father. Then Mr. *Despondency* said to his Friends, Myself and my Daughter, you know what we have been, and how troublesome we have behaved ourselves in every Company: My Will, and my Daughter's is, That our *Desponds* and slavish Fears be by no Man His Will. ever received, from the Day of our *Departure*, for ever: For, I know, that after my Death, they will offer themselves to others. For, to be plain with you, they are Guests, which we entertained when we first began to be Pilgrims, and could never shake them off after: And they will walk about, and seek Entertainment of the Pilgrims, but for our Sakes, shut the Doors upon them.

When the Time was come for them to depart, they went up to the Brink of the River, The last Words of Mr. *Despondency*, were, *Farewel Night, Welcome Day.* His last Words. His Daughter went through the River

E e singing,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

singing, but none could understand what she said.

Mr. Honest
summoned.

Eccles. 12.

He makes no
Will.

Good-Con-
science helps
Mr. Honest
over the River.

Then it came to pass a while after, that there was a Post in the Town, that enquired for Mr. *Honest*. So he came to his House, where he was, and delivered to his Hands these Lines: *Thou art commanded to be ready against this Day Seven-night, to present thyself before thy Lord, at his Father's House,* And for a Token that my Message is true, *All the Daughters of Musick shall be brought low.* Then Mr. *Honest* called for his Friends, and said unto them, *I die, but shall make no Will.* As for my *Honesty*, it shall go with me; let him that comes after, be told of this. When the Day that he was to be gone was come, he addressed himself to go over the River. Now the River at that Time over-flow'd the Banks in some Places; but Mr. *Honest* in his Life-time had spoken to one *Good-Conscience* to meet him there, the which he also did, and lent him his Hand, and so helped him over. The last Words of Mr. *Honest* were, *Grace reigns:* So he left the World.

Mr. Valiant-
for-Truth
summon'd.
Eccles. 12: 6.

After this, it was noised abroad, that Mr. *Valiant-for-Truth* was taken with a Summons by the same Post as the other; and had this for a Token, that the Summons was true, *That his Pitcher was broken at the Fountain.* When he understood it, he called for his Friends, and told them of it. Then, said he, I am going to my Father's, and tho' with great Difficulty I have

have got hither, yet now I do not repent me of all the Trouble I have been at to arrive where I am. *My Sword* I give to him that shall succeed me in my Pilgrimage, and my *Courage* and *Skill* to him that can get it. My *Marks* and *Scars* I carry with me, to be a Witness for me, that I have fought his Battles, who now will be my Rewarder. When the Day that he must go hence was come, many accompany'd him to the River-Side, into which as he went, he said, *Death, Where His last Words, is thy Sting?* And as he went down deeper, he said, *Grave, Where is thy Victory?* So he passed over, and all the Trumpets sounded for him on the other Side.

Then there came forth a Summons for *Mr. Standfast*. This *Mr. Standfast* was he ^{is summon'd.} that the Pilgrims found upon his Knees in the *Incanted Ground*. And the Post brought it him open in his Hands. The Contents whereof were, *That he must prepare for a Change of Life, for his Master was not willing that he should be so far from him any longer.* At this *Mr. Standfast* was put into a Muse: Nay, saith the Messenger, you need not doubt of the Truth of my Message; for here is a Token of the Truth thereof: *Thy Wheel is broken at the Cistern.* Then he called to him *Mr. Great-heart*, ^{Eccl. 12. 6.} who was their Guide, and said unto him, ^{He calls for} Sir, although it was not my Hap to be ^{Mr. Great-heart.} much in your good Company in the Days of my Pilgrimage, yet, since the Time I knew you, you have been profitable to me. When I came from home, I left be- ^{His Speech to} hind ^{him.}

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

*His Errand to
his Family.*

hind me a Wife, and five small Children; let me intreat you, at your Return, (for I know that you go and return to your Master's House, in Hopes that you may be a Conductor to more of the Holy Pilgrims) that you send to my Family, and let them be acquainted with all that hath, and shall happen unto me. Tell them moreover of my happy Arrival to this Place, and of the present and late blessed Condition that I am in. Tell them also of *Christian* and *Christiana* his Wife, and how she and her Children came after her Husband. Tell them also, of what a happy End she made, and whither she is gone. I have little or nothing to send to my Family, except it be my Prayers and Tears for them; of which it will suffice if you acquaint them, if peradventure they may prevail.

When Mr. *Standfast* had thus set Things in Order, and the Time being come for him to haste him away, he also went down to the River. Now there was a great Calm at that Time in the River; wherefore Mr. *Standfast*, when he was about half-way in, stood a while, and talked to his Companions that had waited upon him thither: And he said,

His last Words.
Jof. 3. 17.

This River has been a Terror to many; yea, the Thoughts of it also have often frightened me; now methinks I stand easy, my Foot is fixed upon that on which the Feet of the Priests that bare the Ark of the Covenant stood, while *Israel* went over this *Jordan*. The Waters indeed are to
the

he Palate bitter, and to the Stomach cold; yet the Thoughts of what I am going to, and of the Conduct that waits for me on the other Side, doth lie as a glowing Coal at my Heart.

I see myself now at the End of my Journey; my *Toilsome Days are ended*. I am going to see that Head that was crowned with Thorns, and that Face that was spit upon for me.

I have formerly lived by Heat-say and Faith; but now I go where I shall live by Sight, and shall be with him in whose Company I delight myself.

I have loved to hear my Lord spoken of; and wherever I have seen the Print of his Shoe in the Earth, there have I coveted to set my Foot too.

His Name has been to me as a *Civet-Box*; yea, sweeter than all Perfumes. His Voice to me has been most sweet; and his Countenance I have more desired than they that have most desired the Light of the Sun. His Words I did use to gather for my Food, and for Antidotes against my Faintings. He has held me, and hath kept me from mine Iniquities; yea, my Steps have been strengthened in his Way.

Now, while he was thus in Discourse, his Countenance changed, his *Strong Man* bowed under him: And after he had said, *Take me, for I come unto Thee*, he ceased to be seen of them.

But Glorious it was to see, how the Open Region was filled with Horses and Chariots, with Trumpeters and Pipers, with Singers and Players on Stringed Instruments,

The Pilgrim's Progress. PART II.

struments, to welcome the PILGRIMS as they went up, and followed one another in at the Beautiful Gate of the City.

As for *Christiana's* Children, the Four Boys that *Christiana* brought, with their Wives and Children, I did not stay where I was till they were gone over. Also since I came away, I heard one say, they were yet alive, and so would be for the Increase of the CHURCH in that Place where they were, for a Time.

Shall it be my Lot to go that Way again, I may give those that desire it, an Account of what I here am silent about; mean time, I bid my *Reader*

FAREWELL.





The following BOOKS, by the same AUTHOR,
are all printed for and sold by W. Johnston at
the Golden Ball in St. Paul's Church-Yard.

1. **T**H-E Holy War, made by *Shaddai* upon
Diabolus, for the regaining the Metropolis
of the World; Or, The Losing and Taking again
the Town of *Mansoul*. The Second Edition, from the
Original; with the Addition of Nine Cuts.

2. The Life and Death of Mr. *Badman*; presented
to the World in a Familiar Dialogue, between Mr.
Wiseman and Mr. *Attentive*. The Third Edition,
with an Addition of Cuts.

3. Grace abounding to the Chief of Sinners; In a
Faithful Account of the LIFE and DEATH of *John*
Bunyan: Or, A Brief Relation of the Exceeding
Mercy of GOD in CHRIST to him; namely, His
taking him out of the Dunghill, and converting him
to the Faith of his Blessed Son JESUS CHRIST. Cor-
rected and much Enlarged, for the Benefit of the
Tempted and Dejected *Christian*. The Eighth Edi-
tion, with his Character.

4. The Doctrine of the Law and Grace unfolded:
Or, A Discourse touching the Law and Grace; the
Nature of both; shewing what they are, as to the Two
Covenants, and likewise who they be, and what their
Conditions are that be under either of the Two Cove-
nants. The Third Edition, Corrected and Amended.

Just

Just Published,

(With His MAJESTY'S Royal Privilege and Licence)

The Fourth Edition, with great Improvements, &c.

In One Large Volume, Octavo, Price bound Six Shillings,
In which the Country in Dispute between *Great-Britain* and *France*
in *North-America*, is particularly described,

A NEW

Geographical and Historical
G R A M M A R:
WHEREIN THE
G E O G R A P H I C A L P A R T
IS TRULY
M O D E R N;
AND THE
P R E S E N T S T A T E
OF THE SEVERAL
K I N G D O M S of the **W O R L D**

Is so interspersed,

As to render the Study of **G E O G R A P H Y** both
ENTERTAINING and **INSTRUCTIVE**

C O N T A I N I N G

I. A Description of the Figure and
Motion of the Earth.

II. Geographical Definitions and
Problems, being a necessary Intro-
duction to this Study.

III. A general Division of the Globe
into Land and Water.

IV. The Situation and Extent of the
several Countries contained in each
Quarter of the World; their Cities,
Chief Towns, History, Present State,
respective Forms of Government,
Forces, Revenues, Taxes, Revolu-
tions, and memorable Events.

T O G E T H E R W I T H

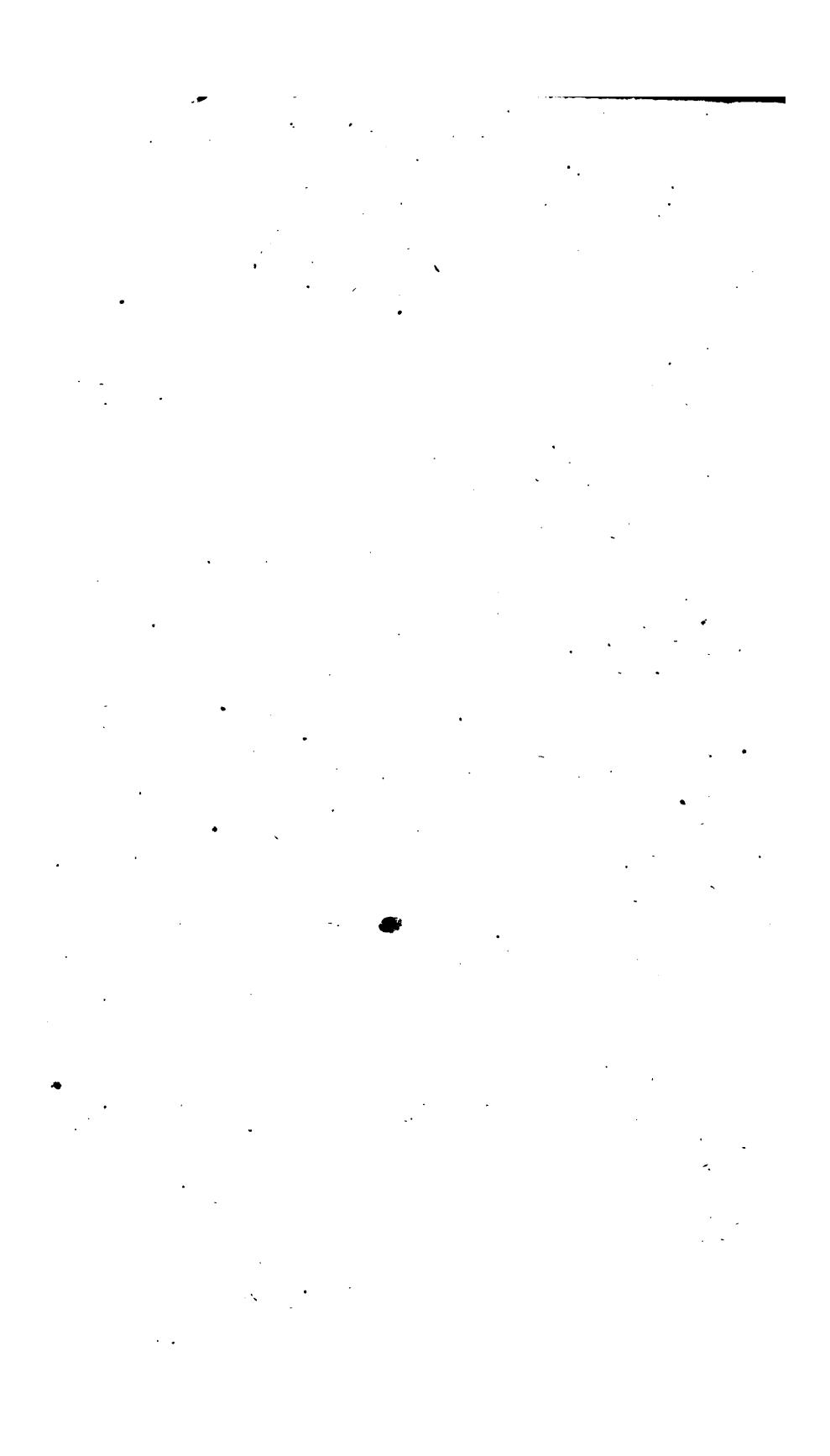
An Account of the Air, Soil, Produce, Traffic, Curiosities,
Arms, Religion, Language, Universities, Bishopsrics, Manners,
Customs, Habits, and Coins, in Use in the several
Kingdoms and States described.

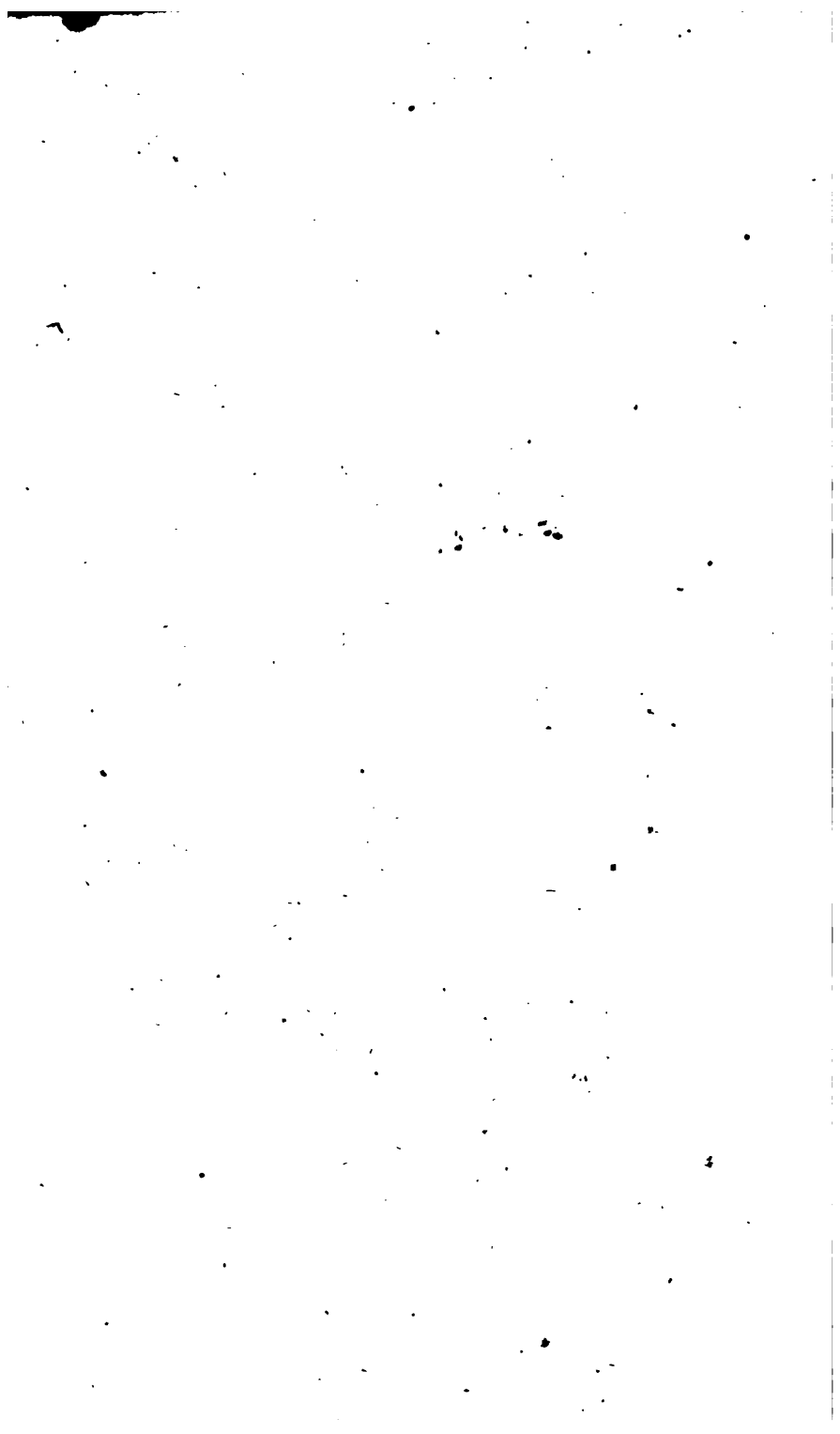
By **Mr. S A L M O N.**

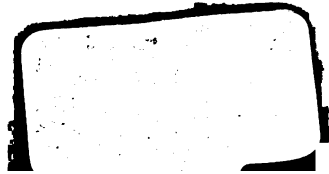
I L L U S T R A T E D

With a Set of Twenty-Three New **M A P S** of the several Countries;
drawn by the Direction of **Mr. SALMON**, and engraved by **Mr. JEFFERYS**,
Geographer to his Royal Highness the Prince of **WALES**, *viz.*

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. The World. | 12. Sweden, Denmark, Norway, and
Finland. |
| 2. The Sphere. | 13. England and Wales. |
| 3. Europe. | 14. Scotland. |
| 4. Spain and Portugal. | 15. Ireland. |
| 5. France. | 16. Asia. |
| 6. Italy. | 17. China. |
| 7. The Seven United Provinces, with
the Austrian, French, and Dutch
Netherlands. | 18. Turkey in Asia. |
| 8. Germany. | 19. East-Indies. |
| 9. Hungary, with Turkey in Europe. | 20. Africa. |
| 10. Poland, Lithuania, and Prussia. | 21. North America. |
| 11. Russia, or Muscovy in Europe. | 22. South America. |
| | 23. West-Indies. |







PUB

PRO

REV